

BISHOP BURNET'S
HISTORY OF HIS OWN TIME:

WITH NOTES

BY THE EARLS OF DARTMOUTH AND HARDWICKE,
SPEAKER ONSLOW, AND DEAN SWIFT.

TO WHICH ARE ADDED

OTHER ANNOTATIONS.

IN SIX VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

SECOND EDITION ENLARGED.

OXFORD,
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS.

MDCCCXXXIII.



HISTORY

OF

MY OWN TIMES.

BOOK III.

Of the rest of king Charles the second's reign, from the year 1673 to the year 1685, in which he died.

HITHERTO the reign of king Charles was 1673.
 pretty serene and calm at home. A nation weary of a long civil war was not easily brought into jealousies and fears, which were the seeds of distraction, and might end in new confusions and troubles. But the court had now given such broad intimations of an ill design, both on our religion and the civil constitution, that it was no more a jealousy: all was now open and barefaced. In the king's presence the court flatterers were always magnifying absolute government, and reflecting on the insolence of a house of commons. The king said once to the earl of Essex, as he told me, that he did not wish to be like a grand signior, with some mutes about him, and bags of bow-strings to strangle men as he had a mind to it: but he did not think he was a

Great jealousies of the king.

345

1673. king, as long as a company of fellows were looking into all his actions, and examining his ministers, as well as his accounts. He reckoned, now he had set the church party at such a distance from the dissenters, that it was impossible to make them join in opposition to his designs. He hoped, the church party would be always submissive: and he had the dissenters at mercy.

Schomberg
brought to
command
the army.

The proceedings of the former year had opened all men's eyes. The king's own religion was suspected, as his brother's was declared: and the whole conduct shewed a design to govern by the French model. A French general was brought over to command our armies. Count Schomberg, who was a German by birth, (but his mother was an English woman,) was sent over. He was a firm protestant, and served at first in Holland. But upon the prince of Orange's death he went into France, where he grew into so high a reputation, that he was kept under, and not raised to be a marshal, only on the account of his religion. He was a calm man, of great application and conduct, [beyond what was expected by those who knew him on other occasions: for he was too much a German in the liberties he allowed himself in entertainments; but when he commanded armies, he kept himself to better rules.] He thought much better than he spoke. He was a man of true judgment, of great probity, and of an humble and obliging temper: and at any other time of his life he would have been very acceptable to the English. But now he was looked on as one sent over from France to bring our army under a French discipline: and so he was hated by the nation, and not much loved by the court. He

was always pressing the king to declare himself the head of the protestant party. He pressed him likewise to bring his brother over from popery: but the king said to him, you know my brother long ago, that he is as stiff as a mule. He liked the way of Charenton so well, that he went once a week to London to the French church there, that was according to that form: so the duke and lord Clifford looked on him as a presbyterian, and an unfit man for their purpose. The duke of Buckingham hated him; for he hoped to have commanded the army. And as an army is a very unacceptable thing to the English nation, so it came to be the more odious, when commanded by a general sent over from France. Schomberg told me, he saw it was impossible that the king could bring any great design to a good effect: he loved his ease so much, that he never minded business: and every thing that was said to him of affairs was heard with so little attention, that it made no impression. 1673.

The ministry was all broke to pieces. The duke of Buckingham was alone, hated by all, as he hated all the rest. But he went so entirely into all their ill designs, that the king considered him, and either loved or feared him so much, that he had a deep root with him. Lord Clifford stuck firm to the duke, and was heated with the design of bringing in popery, even to enthusiasm. It was believed, if the design had succeeded, he had agreed with his wife to take orders^a, and to aspire to a cardinal's hat. He grew violent; and could scarce speak with patience of the church of England and of the clergy. The earl of Arlington thought that the design was

The court
was much
divided.

^a Was he or she to take orders? S.

1673. now lost, and that it was necessary for the king to make up with his people in the best manner he could. The earl of Shaftsbury was resolved to save himself on any terms^b.

A session of parliament.

The money was exhausted: so it was necessary to have a session of parliament. And one was called in the beginning of the year. At the opening it, the king excused the issuing out the writs, as done to save time, and to have a full house at the first opening: but he left that matter wholly to them: he spoke of the declaration for liberty of conscience in another style: he said he had seen the good effects of it; and that he would stick to it, and maintain it: he said, he was engaged in a war for the honour of the nation, and therefore he demanded the supplies that were necessary to carry it on. On these heads lord Shaftsbury enlarged. But no part of his speech was more amazing than that, speaking of the war with the Dutch; he said, *Delenda est Carthago*. Yet, while he made a base complying speech in favour of the court and of the war, he was in a secret management with another party.

The declaration was voted illegal.

The house of commons was upon this all in a flame. They saw popery and slavery lay at the bottom. Yet, that they might not grasp at too much at once, they resolved effectually to break the

^b I heard the first duke of Bolton say, that at this time the duke of Buckingham, lord Shaftsbury, and a great deal of company, dined at his house, and after they had drank very freely, the duke of Buckingham began to tell some of their secrets, which Shaftsbury had no way to prevent but by giving him the lie, which turned the discourse into a quarrel, that was made up before they parted. D. (The secrets were those of a ministry composed of whigs, romanists, and atheists, who were the advisers of the worst measures of this reign.)

whole design of popery. They argued the matter of the declaration; whether it was according to law, or not. It was plainly an annulling of the penal law, made both against papists and dissenters. It was said, that though the king had a power of pardoning, yet he had not a power to authorize men to break laws. This must infer a power to alter the whole government. The strength of every law was the penalty laid upon offenders: and, if the king could secure offenders by indemnifying them beforehand, it was a vain thing to make laws; since by that maxim they had no force, but at the king's discretion. Those who pleaded for the declaration pretended to put a difference between penal laws in spiritual matters and all others: and said that the king's supremacy seemed to give him a peculiar authority over these: by virtue of this it was, that the synagogue of the Jews and the Walloon churches had been so long tolerated. But to this it was answered, that the intent of the law in asserting the supremacy was only to exclude all foreign jurisdiction, and to lodge the whole authority with the king: but that was still to be bounded and regulated by law: and a difference was to be made between a connivance, such as that the Jews lived under, by which they were still at mercy, and a legal authority: the parliament had never disputed the legality of the patent for the Walloon congregations, which was granted to encourage strangers, professing the same religion, to come among us, when they were persecuted for it in their own country: it was at first granted only to strangers: but afterwards in the days of their children, who were natives, it had been made void: and now they were

1673.

1673. excepted by a special clause out of the act of uniformity. The house came quickly to a very unanimous resolution, that the declaration was against law^c. And they set that forth in an address to the king, in which they prayed that it might be called in. Some were studying to divert this, by setting them on to inquire into the issuing out the writs. And the court seemed willing that the storm should break on lord Shaftsbury, and would have gladly compounded the matter by making him the sacrifice. He saw into that; and so was resolved to change sides with the first opportunity^d.

A bill for
a new test.

The house was not content with this: but they brought in a bill disabling all papists from holding any employment or place at court; requiring all persons in public trust to receive the sacrament in a parish church, and to carry an attested certificate of that, with witnesses to prove it, into chancery, or the county sessions; and there to make a declaration renouncing transubstantiation in full and positive words. Great pains was taken by the court to divert this. They proposed that some regard might be had to protestant dissenters, and that their meetings might be allowed. By this means they hoped to have set them and the church party into new heats; for now all were united against popery. Love, who served for the city of London, and was himself a dissenter, saw what ill effects any such quarrels

The prudence of
the dissenters.

^c ("After a long and adjourned debate it was resolved by a majority of one hundred and sixty eight, to one hundred and sixteen, that penal statutes in matters ecclesiastical cannot be suspended but by act of parlia-

ment, and this resolution was embodied in an address to the king." Lingard's *History of England*, vol. VII. chap. 8. p. 545.)

^d An excuse prepared for Shaftsbury's tergiversations. *Cole's MS. note.*

might have: so he moved, that an effectual security 1673.
 might be found against popery, and that nothing
 might interpose till that was done. When that was
 over, then they would try to deserve some favour:
 but at present they were willing to lie under the se-
 verity of the laws, rather than clog a more necessary
 work with their concerns. The chief friends of the 348
 sects agreed to this. So a vote passed to bring in a
 bill in favour of protestant dissenters, though there
 was not time enough, nor unanimity enough, to finish
 one this session: for it went no farther than a se-
 cond reading, but was dropt in the committee. But
 this prudent behaviour of theirs did so soften the
 church party, that there was no more votes nor
 bills offered at against them, even in that angry
 parliament, that had been formerly so severe upon
 them.

The court was now in great perplexity. If they Debates in
the house
of lords. gave way to proceedings in the house of commons,
 there was a full stop put to the design for popery:
 and if they gave not way to it, there was an end of
 the war. The French could not furnish us with so
 much money as was necessary: and the shutting up
 the exchequer had put an end to all credit. The
 court tried what could be done in the house of lords.
 Lord Clifford resolved to assert the declaration with
 all the force and all the arguments he could bring
 for it. He shewed the heads he intended to speak
 on to the king, who approved of them, and sug-
 gested some other hints to him. He began the de-
 bate with rough words: he called the vote of the
 commons *monstrum horrendum ingens*, and run on
 in a very high strain. He said all that could be
 said, with great heat, and many indecent expres-

1673. sions. When he had done, the earl of Shaftsbury, to the amazement of the whole house, said, he must differ from the lord that spoke last *toto cælo*. He said, while those matters were debated out of doors, he might think with others, that the supremacy, asserted as it was by law, did warrant the declaration: but now that such a house of commons, so loyal and affectionate to the king, were of another mind, he submitted his reasons to theirs: they were the king's great council: they must both advise and support him: they had done it; and would do it still, if their laws and their religion were once secure to them. The king was all in fury to be thus forsaken by his chancellor: and told lord Clifford, how well he was pleased with his speech, and how highly he was offended with the other. The debate went on, and upon a division the court had the majority. But against that vote about thirty of the most considerable of the house protested. So the court saw they had gained nothing in carrying a vote, that drew after it such a protestation^e.

This matter took soon after that a quick turn. It had been much debated in the cabinet, what the king should do. Lord Clifford and duke Lauder-

^e (There is no notice in the Journals of the House of Lords of any protest having been entered against a decision of that house respecting the king's declaration for liberty of conscience. Neither does Chandler in his History and Proceedings of the House of Lords state, that there was any division or protest on this occasion. This information was obligingly communicated by the

reverend Dr. Bandinel, head keeper of the Bodleian library. Dr. Lingard, in a note to his History of England, vol. VII. c. 8. p. 547, observes, that there is, in Burnet's narrative, so much unquestionably false, that it is difficult to judge what may be probably true; but that his account of Shaftsbury's speech is confirmed by the lord keeper Guildford. See *Dalrymple*, vol. II. p. 90.)

dale were for the king's standing his ground. Sir 1673.
 Ellis Leightoun assured me, that the duke of Buck-
 ingham and lord Berkeley offered to the king, if he
 would bring the army to town, that they would take
 out of both houses the members that made the op- 349
 position^f. He fancied, the thing might have been The variety
of opinions
in the
king's
council.
 easily brought about, and that, if the king would
 have acted with the spirit that he sometimes put on,
 they might have carried their business. Duke Lau-
 derdale talked of bringing an army out of Scotland,
 and seizing on Newcastle; and pressed this with as
 much vehemence, as if he had been able to have ex-
 ecuted it. Lord Clifford said to the king, his people
 did now see through all his designs: and therefore
 he must resolve to make himself master at once, or
 be for ever subject to much jealousy and contempt.
 The earls of Shaftsbury and Arlington pressed the
 king, on the other hand, to give the parliament full
 content: and they undertook to procure him money
 for carrying on the war: and, if he was successful
 in that, he might easily recover what he must in
 this extremity part with. This suited the king's
 own temper. Yet the duke held him in suspense.

Colbert's brother, Croissy, was then the French The French
advise the
king to
yield to
the parlia-
ment.
 ambassador here. Lord Arlington possessed him
 with such an apprehension of the madness of violent
 counsels, and that the least of the ill effects they
 might have would be the leaving the war wholly on
 the French king, and that it would be impossible to
 carry it on, if the king should run to such extremi-

^f (This sir Ellis Leighton, of a dependant on the duke of
 whom the author above, at Buckingham, and secretary to
 p. 136, folio edit. as well as the lord Berkeley, when lord
 North in his Examen, gives so lieutenant of Ireland.)
 unfavourable a character, was

1673. ties, as some were driving him to at home; that he gained him both to press the king and his brother to comply with the parliament, and to send an express to his own master, representing the whole matter in the light in which lord Arlington had set it before him.

In the afternoon of the day in which the matter had been argued in the house of lords, the earls of Shaftsbury and Arlington got all those members of the house of commons on whom they had any influence, (and who had money from the king, and were his spies, but had leave to vote with the party against the court, for procuring them the more credit,) to go privately to him, and to tell him that upon lord Clifford's speech the house was in such fury, that probably they would have gone to some high votes and impeachments: but the lord Shaftsbury speaking on the other side restrained them: they believed he spoke the king's sense, as the other did the duke's; this calmed them. So they made the king apprehend, that the lord chancellor's speech, with which he had been so much offended, was really a great service done him: and they persuaded him farther, that he might now save himself, and obtain an indemnity for his ministers, if he would part with the declaration, and pass the bill. This was so dexterously managed by lord Arlington, who got a great number of the members to go one after another to the king, who by concert spoke all the same language, that before night the king was quite
 350 changed, and said to his brother, that lord Clifford had undone himself, and had spoiled their business by his mad speech; and that, though lord Shaftsbury had spoke like a rogue, yet that had stopt a

The king
went into
that sud-
denly.

fury which the indiscretion of the other had kindled to such a degree, that he could serve him no longer. He gave him leave to let him know all this. The duke was struck with this ; and imputed it wholly to lord Arlington's management. In the evening he told lord Clifford what the king had said. The lord Clifford, who was naturally a vehement man, went upon that to the king, who scarce knew how to look him in the face. Lord Clifford said, he knew how many enemies he must needs make to himself by his speech in the house of lords : but he hoped that in it he both served and pleased the king, and was therefore the less concerned in every thing else : but he was surprised to find by the duke, that the king was now of another mind. The king was in some confusion : he owned, that all he had said was right in it self : but he said, that he, who sat long in the house of commons, should have considered better what they could bear, and what the necessity of his affairs required. Lord Clifford in his first heat was inclined to have laid down his white staff, and to have expostulated roundly with the king. But a cooler thought stopped him. He reckoned he must now retire : and therefore he had a mind to take some care of his family in the way of doing it : so he restrained himself ; and said, he was sorry that his best meant services were so ill understood. Soon after this, letters came from the French king, pressing the king to do all that was necessary to procure money of his parliament, since he could not bear the charge of the war alone. He also writ to the duke, and excused the advice he gave upon the necessity of affairs ; but promised faithfully to espouse his concerns, as soon

1673.

Clifford
disgraced.

1673. as he got out of the war, and that he would never
 ————— be easy, till he recovered that which he was now
 forced to let go. Some parts of these transac-
 tions I had from the duke and from duke Lauder-
 dale: the rest, that related to the lord Clifford, Ti-
 tus told me, he had from his own mouth.

Osborn
 made lord
 treasurer.

As soon as lord Clifford saw he must lose the
 white staff, he went to the duke of Buckingham,
 who had contributed much to the procuring it to
 him; and told him, he brought him the first notice
 that he was to lose that place to which he had
 helped him, and that he would assist him to procure
 it to some of his friends. After they had talked
 round all that were in any sort capable of it, and
 had found great objections to every one of them,
 they at last pitched on sir Thomas Osborn, a gentle-
 man of Yorkshire, whose estate was much sunk.
 He was a very plausible speaker, but too copious,
 351 and could not easily make an end of his discourse^g.
 He had been always among the high cavaliers: and
 missing preferment, he had opposed the court much^h,
 and was one of lord Clarendon's bitterest enemies.
 He gave himself great liberties in discourse, and did
 not seem to have any regard to truth, or so much as
 to the appearances of it; and was an implacable
 enemy: but he had a peculiar way to make his
 friends depend on him, and to believe he was true

^g I never knew a man that
 could express himself so clear-
 ly, or that seemed to carry his
 point so much by force of a
 superior understanding. In pri-
 vate conversation he had a par-
 ticular art in making the com-
 pany tell their opinions without
 discovering of his own; which

he would afterwards make use
 of very much to his advantage,
 by undertaking that people
 should be of an opinion, that
 he knew was theirs before. D.

^h He had been with the
 court now for some time, and
 was treasurer of the navy. O.

to them. He was a positive and undertaking man : 1673.
so he gave the king great ease, by assuring him all
things would go according to his mind in the next
session of parliament. And when his hopes failed
him, he had always some excuse ready to put the
miscarriage upon. And by this means he got into
the highest degree of confidence with the king, and
maintained it the longest of all that ever served him.

The king now went into new measures. He ^{A great supply was given.} called for the declaration, and ordered the seal put to it to be broken. So the act for the taking the sacrament, and the test against transubstantiation, went on : and together with it an act of grace passed, which was desired chiefly to cover the ministry, who were all very obnoxious by their late actings. The court desired at least 1,200,000*l.*; for that sum was necessary to the carrying on the war. The great body of those who opposed the court had resolved to give only 600,000*l.* which was enough to procure a peace, but not to continue the war. Garroway and Lee had led the opposition to the court all this session in the house of commons : so they were thought the properest to name the sum. Above eighty of the chief of the party had met over night, and had agreed to name 600,000*l.* But Garroway named 1,200,000*l.* and was seconded in it by Lee. So this surprise gained that great sum, which enabled the court to carry on the war. When their party reproached these persons for it, they said, they had tried some of the court as to the sum intended to be named, who had assured them, the whole agreement would be broke, if they offered so small a sum : and this made them venture on the double of it. They

1673. had good rewards from the court: and yet they continued still voting on the other side. They said, they had got good pennyworths for their money: a sure law against popery, which had clauses in it never used before; for all that continued in office after the time lapsed, they not taking the sacrament, and not renouncing transubstantiation, (which came to be called the test, and the act from it the test act,) were rendered incapable of holding any office: all the acts they did in it were declared invalid and illegal, besides a fine of five hundred pounds to the discoverer. Yet upon that lord Cavendish, now duke of Devonshire, said, that when much money was given to buy a law against popery, the force of the money would be stronger in order to the bringing it in, than the law could be for keeping it out. I never knew a thing of this nature carried so suddenly and so artificially in the house of commons, as this was, to the great amazement of the Dutch, who relied on the parliament, and did not doubt but that a peace with England would be procured by their interposition.

The duke
laid down
all his com-
missions.

Thus this memorable session ended. It was indeed much the best session of that long parliament. The church party shewed a noble zeal for their religion: and the dissenters got great reputation by their silent deportment. After the session was over, the duke carried all his commissions to the king, and wept as he delivered them up: but the king shewed no concern at all. Yet he put the admiralty in a commission composed wholly of the duke's creatures: so that the power of the navy was still in his hands. Lord Clifford left the treasury, and was succeeded by Osborn, who was soon after made

earl of Danby. The earl of Shaftsbury had lost the king's favour quite. But it was not thought fit to lay him aside, till it should appear what service he could do them in another session of parliament. Lord Arlington had lost the duke more than any other. He looked on him as a pitiful coward, who would forsake and betray any thing, rather than run any danger himself. Prince Rupert was sent to command the fleet. But the captains were the duke's creatures: so they crossed him all they could, and complained of every thing he did. In a word, they said he had neither sense nor conduct left. Little could be expected from a fleet so commanded and so divided. He had two or three engagements with the Dutch, that were well fought on both sides, but were of no great consequence, and were drawn battles. None of the French ships engaged, except one, who charged their admiral for his ill conduct: but, instead of reward, he was clapt in the Bastille upon his return to France. This opened the eyes and mouths of the whole nation. All men cried out, and said, we were engaged in a war by the French, that they might have the pleasure to see the Dutch and us destroy one another, while they knew our seas and ports, and learned all our methods, but took care to preserve themselves. Count Schomberg told me, he pressed the French ambassador to have the matter examined. Otherwise, if satisfaction was not given to the nation, he was sure the next parliament would break the alliance. But by the ambassador's coldness he saw the French admiral had acted according to his instructions. So Schomberg made haste to get out of England, to prevent an address

1673. to send him away: and he was by that time as
 weary of the court, as the court was of him ⁱ.

The duke
 treats for
 a second
 marriage.

353

The duke was now looking for another wife. He made addresses to the lady Bellasis, the widow of the lord Bellasis's son. She was a zealous protestant, though she was married into a popish family. She was a woman of much life and great vivacity, but of a very small proportion of beauty; as the duke was often observed to be led by his amours to objects that had no extraordinary charms. Lady Bellasis gained so much on the duke, that he gave her a promise under his hand to marry her. And he sent Coleman to her to draw her over to popery: but in that she could not be moved. When some of her friends reproached her for admitting the duke so freely to see her, she could not bear it, but said, she could shew that his addresses to her were honourable. When this came to the lord Bellasis's ears, who was her father-in-law, and was a zealous papist, and knew how intractable the lady was in those matters, he gave the whole design of bringing in their religion for gone, if that was not quickly broke: so he, pretending a zeal for the king and the duke's honour, went and told the king all he had heard. The king sent for the duke, and told him, it was too much that he had played the fool once: that was not to be done a second time, and at such an age. The lady was also so threatened, that she gave up the promise, but kept an attested copy of it, as she herself told me. There was an arch-

ⁱ The king put him in expectation of a garter; but (by the intrigues of the ladies) had given it to the earl of Mulgrave, a man little esteemed at that

time; which aggravated the affront, as he thought. D. (He returned to England with the prince of Orange in 1688.)

duchess of Inspruck, to whom marriage was solemnly proposed: but the empress happening to die at that time, the emperor himself married her. After that a match was proposed to the duke of Modena's daughter, which took effect. But because those at Rome were not willing to consent to it, unless she might have a public chapel, which the court would not hearken to, another marriage was proposed for a daughter of the duke of Crequi's. I saw a long letter of the duke's writ to sir William Lockhart upon this subject with great anxiety. He apprehended, if he was not married before the session of parliament, that they would fall on that matter, and limit him so, that he should never be able to marry to his content: he was vexed at the stiffness of the court of Rome, who were demanding terms that could not be granted: he had sent a positive order to the earl of Peterborough, who was negotiating the business at Modena, to come away by such a day, if all was not consented to: in the mean while he hoped, the king of France would not put that mortification on him, as to expose him to the violence of the parliament, (I use his own words;) but that he would give order for despatching that matter with all possible haste. But, while he was thus perplexed, the court of Rome yielded: and so the duke married that lady by proxy: and the earl of Peterborough brought her over through France.

The Swedes offered at this time a mediation in order to a peace: and Cologne was proposed to be the place of treaty. The king ordered the earl of Sunderland, sir Leolin Jenkins, and sir Joseph Williamson thither, to be his plenipotentiaries. Lord

A treaty
opened at
Cologne.

354

1673. Sunderland was a man of a clear and ready apprehension, and a quick decision in business. He had too much heat both of imagination and passion, and was apt to speak very freely both of persons and things^k. His own notions were always good: but he was a man of great expense. And, in order to the supporting himself, he went into the prevailing counsels at court: and he changed sides often, with little regard either to religion or the interest of his country. He raised many enemies to himself by the contempt with which he treated those who differed from him. He had indeed the superior genius to all the men of business that I have yet known. And he had the dexterity of insinuating himself so entirely into the greatest degree of confidence with three succeeding princes, who set up on very different interests, that he came by this to lose himself so much, that even those who esteemed his parts, depended little on his firmness.

Lord Sunderland's character.

The treaty broke off.

The treaty of Cologne was of a short continuance: for the emperor, looking on Furstenberg, the dean of Cologne, and bishop of Strasbourg, afterwards advanced to be cardinal, who was the elector's plenipotentiary at that treaty, as a subject of the empire, who had betrayed it, ordered him to be seized on. The French looked on this as such a violation of

^k He was remarkable for never speaking in public, nor at the cabinet, more than he was of such a lord's opinion, or he wondered how any body could be of that opinion. When he was secretary, Mr. Bridgman always attended to take the minutes for him, and whilst he was president, the lord chan-

cellor always acted for him at the council. Mr. War, who was one of his commis, told me, he never came to the secretary's office, but they carried the papers to him at his house, where he was usually at cards, and he would sign them without reading, and seldom asked what they were about. D.

the passports, that they set it up for a preliminary, before they would enter upon a treaty, to have him set at liberty. 1673.

Maestricht was taken this summer; in which the duke of Monmouth distinguished himself so eminently, that he was much considered upon it. The king of France was there; [but it was thought he took much more care of his person than became a great¹ prince.] After the taking of Maestricht he went to Nancy in Lorraine, and left the prince of Condé with the army in Flanders, Turenne having the command of that on the Upper Rhine against the Germans; for the emperor and the whole empire were now engaged.

But I return now to the intrigues of our court. I came up this summer, in order to the publishing the Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton. I had left Scotland under an universal discontent. The whole administration there was both violent and corrupt, and seemed to be formed on a French model. The parliament had in the year 1663, in order to the bringing our trade to a balance with England, given the king in trust a power to lay impositions on foreign commodities. So upon that a great duty was lately laid upon French salt, in order to the better vending the salt made at home: upon which it was sold very dear. And that raised great complaints: for, as the salt was excessive dear, so it did not serve all purposes. All people looked on this as the beginning of a gabel. An imposition was also laid on tobacco: and all brandy was prohibited to be imported, but not to be retailed: so those who had the grant of the seizures sold them, and raised the price

The affairs
of Scotland.

¹ *brave*, Bowyer's Transcript, and the word *much* omitted.

1673. very much. These occasioned monopolies : and the price of those things that were of great consumption among the commons was much raised : so that a trust lodged with the crown was now abused in the highest degree. As these things provoked the body of the people, so duke Lauderdale's insolence, and his engrossing every thing to himself, and to a few of his friends, and his wife and his brother setting all things to sale, raised a very high discontent all over the nation. The affairs of the church were altogether neglected : so that in all respects we were quite out of joint.

I went up with a full resolution to do my country all the service I could, and to deal very plainly with the duke of Lauderdale, resolving, if I could do no good, to retire from all affairs, and to meddle no more in public business. I lost indeed my best friend at court. Sir Robert Murray died suddenly at that time. He was the wisest and worthiest man of the age, and was as another father to me. I was sensible how much I lost in so critical a conjuncture, being bereft of the truest and faithfullest friend I had ever known : and so I saw I was in danger of committing great errors for want of so kind a monitor.

Lauderdale's design.

At my coming to court, duke Lauderdale took me into his closet, and asked me the state of Scotland. I upon that gave him a very punctual and true account of it. He seemed to think that I aggravated matters ; and asked me, if the king should need an army from Scotland to tame those in England, whether that might be depended on ? I told him, certainly not : the commons in the southern parts were all presbyterians : and the nobility thought

they had been ill used, and were generally discontented, and only waited for an occasion to shew it. 1673.

He said, he was of another mind : the hope of the spoil of England would fetch them all in. I answered, the king was ruined, if ever he trusted to that : and I added, that with relation to other more indifferent persons, who might be otherwise ready enough to push their fortunes without any anxious inquiries into the grounds they went on, yet even these would not trust the king, since he had so lately said, he would stick to his declaration, and yet had so soon after given it up. He said, *Hinc illæ lacrymæ* : but the king was forsaken in that matter, for none stuck to him but lord Clifford and himself : and then he set himself into a fit of railing at lord Shaftsbury. I was struck with this conversation ; and by it I clearly saw into the desperate designs of the court, which were as foolish as they were wicked : for I knew, that upon the least disorder in 356 England they were ready in Scotland to have broke out into a rebellion : so far were they from any inclination to have assisted the king in the mastering of England. I was much perplexed in my self what I ought to do, whether I ought not to have tried to give the king a truer view of our affairs : but I resolved to stay for a fit opportunity. I tried the duchess of Lauderdale, and set before her the injustice and oppression that Scotland was groaning under : but I saw she got too much by it to be any way concerned at it^m.

^m (“ The only apprehension “ more narrowly into certain “ was of my lord Lauderdale’s “ methods she had lately found “ being influenced by his lady “ out of getting money for her- “ to oppose it, (*viz.* holding a “ self.” *Life of King James II.* “ parliament in Scotland in “ lately published by Dr. Clarke, “ 1681,) for fear lest a parlia- “ from the Stuart papers, vol. I. “ ment should look a little pag. 683.)

1673. They talked of going down to hold a session of parliament in Scotland: I warned them of their danger. But they despised all I could say: only great offers were made to my self, to make me wholly theirs, which made no impression on me.

The king
liked my
Memoirs.

He carried me to the king, and proposed the licensing my Memoirs to him. The king bid me bring them to him; and said, he would read them himself. He did read some parts of them, particularly the account I gave of the ill conduct of the bishops, that occasioned the beginning of the wars: and told me, that he was well pleased with it. He was at that time so much offended with the English bishops for opposing the toleration, that he seemed much sharpened against them. He gave me back my book to carry it to secretary Coventry, in order to the licensing it. The secretary said, he would read it all himself: so this obliged me to a longer stay than I intended. Sir Ellis Leightoun carried me to the duke of Buckingham, with whom I passed almost a whole night; and happened so far to please him, that he, who was apt to be fired with a new acquaintance, gave such a character of me to the king, that ever after that he took much notice of me, and said, he would hear me preach. He seemed well pleased with my sermon; and spoke of it in a strain that drew much envy on me.

And shew-
ed me great
favour.

He ordered me to be sworn a chaplain, and admitted me to a long private audience, that lasted above an hour, in which I took all the freedom with him that I thought became my profession. He run me into a long discourse about the authority of the church, which he thought we made much of in our

disputes with the dissenters, and then took it all away when we dealt with the papists. I saw plainly what he aimed at in this: and I quickly convinced him, that there was a great difference between an authority of government in things indifferent, and a pretence to infallibility. He complained heavily of the bishops for neglecting the true concerns of the church, and following courts so much, and being so engaged in parties. I went through some other things with relation to his course of life, and entered into many particulars with much freedom. He bore it all very well; and thanked me for it: some things 1673. 357 he freely condemned, such as living with another man's wife: other things he excused, and thought God would not damn a man for a little irregular pleasure. He seemed to take all I had said very kindly: and during my stay at court he used me in so particular a manner, that I was considered as a man growing into a high degree of favour.

At the same time lord Ancram, a Scotch earl, but of a small fortune, and of no principles, either as to religion or virtue, whose wife was a papist, and himself a member of the house of commons, told the duke that I had a great interest in Scotland, and might do him service in that kingdom. He depended on duke Lauderdale; but hated him, because he did nothing for him. We were acquainted there: and, he having studied the most divinity of any man of quality I ever knew, we found many subjects of discourse. He saw I did not flatter duke Lauderdale; and he fancied he might make a tool of me. So he seemed to wonder that I had not been carried to wait on the duke; and brought me a message from him, that he would be glad to see

My conversation with the duke.

1673. me: and upon that he carried me to him. The duke
received me very graciously. Lord Ancram had a
mind to engage me to give him an account of the
affairs of Scotland; but I avoided that, and very
bluntly entered into much discourse with him about
matters of religion. He said some of the common
things, of the necessity of having but one church,
otherwise we saw what swarms of sects did rise up
on our revolt from Rome, and these had raised
many rebellions, and the shedding much blood: and
he named both his father's death and his great grand-
mother's, Mary queen of Scots: he also turned to
some passages in Heylin's History of the Reforma-
tion, which he had lying by him: and the passages
were marked, to shew upon what motives and prin-
ciples men were led into the changes that were then
made. I enlarged upon all these particulars; and
shewed him the progress that ignorance and super-
stition had made in many dark ages, and how much
bloodshed was occasioned by the papal pretensions,
for all which the opinion of infallibility was a source
never to be exhausted. And I spoke long to such
things as were best suited to his temper and his ca-
pacity. I saw lord Ancram helped him all he could,
by which I perceived how he made his court; for
which when I reproached him afterwards, he said, it
was ill breeding in me to press so hard on a prince.
The duke upon this conversation expressed such a
liking to me, that he ordered me to come oft to
him: and afterwards he allowed me to come to him
in a private way, as oft as I pleased. He desired
to know the state of affairs in Scotland. I told
him how little that kingdom could be depended
on. [I saw he was firm to duke Lauderdale: there-

fore I laid the fault on others, and excused him the best I could. But] I turned the discourse often to matters of religion. He broke it very gently; for he was not at all rough in private conversation. He wished I would let those matters alone: I might be too hard for him, and silence him, but I could never convince himⁿ. I told him, it was a thing he could never answer to God nor the world, that, being born and baptized in our church, and having his father's last orders to continue steadfast in it, he had suffered himself to be seduced, and as it were stolen out of it, hearing only one side, without offering his scruples to our divines, or hearing what they had to say in answer to them; and that he was now so fixed in his popery, that he would not so much as examine the matter. He said to me, he had often picqueered out (that was his word) on Sheldon, and some other bishops; by whose answers he could not but conclude, that they were much nearer the church of Rome, than some of us young men were.

Stillington had a little before this time published a book of the idolatry and fanaticism of the church of Rome. Upon that the duke said, he asked Sheldon, if it was the doctrine of the church of England, that Roman catholics were idolaters: who answered him, it was not; but that young men of parts would

ⁿ In one of the duke's letters, (to the first lord Dartmouth,) he writes, " Pray, once for all, never say any thing to me again of turning protestant; do not expect it, or flatter yourself I shall ever be it. I never shall, and if occasion were, I hope God would give

" me his grace to suffer death
 " for the true catholic religion
 " as well as banishment. What
 " I have done was not hastily,
 " but upon mature considera-
 " tion, and foreseeing all and
 " worse than has yet happened
 " to me." D.

1673. be popular ; and such a charge was the way to it.

I carried
doctor Stil-
lingfleet to
him.

He at that time shewed me the duchess's paper, that has been since printed : it was all writ with her own hand. He gave me leave to read it twice over : but would not suffer me to copy it. And upon the mention made in it of her having spoke to bishops concerning some of her scruples, and that she had such answers from them, as confirmed and heightened them, I went from him to Morley, as was said formerly, and had from him the answer there set down^o. I asked the duke's leave to bring doctor Stillingfleet to him. He was averse to it ; and said, it would make much noise, and could do no good. I told him, even the noise would have a good effect : it would shew he was not so obstinate, but that he was willing to hear our divines. I pressed it much ; for it became necessary to me, on my own account, to clear my self from the suspicion of popery, which this extraordinary favour had drawn upon me. I at last prevailed with the duke to consent to it : and he assigned an hour of audience. Stillingfleet went very readily, though he had no hopes of success. We were about two hours with him, and went over most of the points of controversy. Stillingfleet thought, the point that would go the easiest, and be the best understood by him, was the papal pretensions to a power over princes, in deposing them, and giving their dominions to others^p : and upon that, he shewed him, that popery was calculated to make the pope the sovereign of all Christendom. The

^o (Page 309.)

^p The kingdom of Navare has been held by the crown of Spain ever since the year 1512, by no other title than pope Julius the

second's excommunication of king John, for being in confederacy with Lewis the XIIth of France, upon which Ferdinand the catholic took possession. D.

duke shifted the discourse from one point to another; and did not seem to believe the matters of fact, and history alleged by us. So we desired, he would call for some priests, and hear us discourse of those matters with them in his presence. He declined this; and said, it would make a noise. He assured us, he desired nothing, but to follow his own conscience, which he imposed on no body else, and that he would never attempt to alter the established religion. He loved to repeat this often. But when I was alone with him, I warned him of the great difficulties his religion was like to cast him into. This was no good argument to make him change: but it was certainly a very good argument to make him consider the matter so well, that he might be sure he was in the right. He objected to me the doctrine of the church of England in the point of submission, and of passive obedience. I told him, there was no trusting to a disputable opinion: there were also distinctions and reserves, even in those who had asserted these points the most: and it was very certain, that when men saw a visible danger of being first undone, and then burnt, they would be inclined to the shortest way of arguing, and to save themselves the best way they could: interest and self-preservation were powerful motives. He did very often assure me, he was against all violent methods, and all persecution for conscience sake, and was better furnished to speak well on that head, than on any other. I told him, all he could say that way would do him little service: for the words of princes were looked on as arts to lay men asleep: and they had generally regarded them so little themselves, that they ought not to expect that others

1673.

359

1673. should have great regard to them. I added, he was now of a religion, in which others had the keeping of his conscience, who would now hide from him this point of their religion, since it was not safe to own it, till they had it in their power to put it in practice: and whenever that time should come, I was sure, that the principles of their church must carry him to all the extremities of extirpation. I carried a volume of judge Crook's to him, in which it is reported, that king James had once in council complained of a slander cast on him, as if he was inclined to change his religion; and had solemnly vindicated himself from the imputation; and prayed, that if any should ever spring out of his loins that should maintain any other religion than that which he truly maintained and professed, that God would take him out of the world. He read it: but it made no impression. And when I urged him with some things in his father's book, he gave me the account of it that was formerly mentioned^q. He entered into great freedom with me about all his affairs: and he shewed me the journals he took of business every
630 day with his own hand: a method, he said, that the earl of Clarendon had set him on. The duchess had begun to write his life. He shewed me a part of it in a thin volume in folio. I read some of it, and found it writ with a great deal of spirit. He told me, he intended to trust me with his journals, that I might draw a history out of them. And thus, in a few weeks' time, I had got far into his confidence. He did also allow me to speak to him of the irregularities of his life, some of which he very freely confessed: and when I urged him, how such a course

^q (Page 51.)

of life did agree with the zeal he shewed in his religion; he answered, Must a man be of no religion, unless he is a saint? Yet he bore my freedom very gently, and seemed to like me the better for it. My favour with him grew to be the observation of the whole court. Lord Ancram said, I might be what I pleased, if I would be a little softer in the points of religion. Sir Ellis Leightoun brought me a message from F. Sheldon, and some of his priests, assuring me, they heard so well of me, that they offered me their service. He pressed me to improve my present advantages to the making my fortune: the see of Durham was then vacant: and he was confident it would be no hard matter for me to compass it. But I had none of those views, and so was not moved by them. The duke of Buckingham asked me, what I meant in being so much about the duke? If I fancied I could change him in point of religion, I knew him and the world very little: if I had a mind to raise my self, a sure method for that was, to talk to him of the reformation, as a thing done in heat and haste, and that in a calmer time it might be fit to review it all. He said, I needed go no farther; for such an intimation would certainly raise me. And when I was positive not to enter into such a compliance, he told me, he knew courts better than I did: princes thought their favours were no ordinary things: they expected great submissions in return: otherwise they thought they were despised: and I would feel the ill effects of the favour I then had, if I did not strike into some compliances: and, since I was resolved against these, he advised me to withdraw from the court; the sooner the better. I imputed this to his hatred of the

1673.

1673. duke: but I found afterwards the advice was sound and good. I likewise saw those things in the duke's temper, from which I concluded, I could not maintain an interest in him long. He was for subjects submitting in all things to the king's notions; and thought, that all who opposed him or his ministers in parliament, were rebels in their hearts; and he hated all popular things, as below the dignity of a king. He was much sharpened at that time by the proceedings of the house of commons.

The duke's
marriage
opposed by
the com-
mons.

In the former session, it was known that he was treating a marriage with the archduchess: and yet no address was made to the king to hinder his marrying a papist. His honour was not then engaged: so it had been seasonable, and to good purpose, to have moved in it then. But now he was married by proxy, and lord Peterborough had brought the lady to Paris^r. Yet the house of commons resolved to follow the pattern the king of France had lately set. He treated with the elector palatine for a marriage between his brother and the elector's daughter; in which one of the conditions agreed to was, that she should enjoy the freedom of her religion, and have a private oratory for the exercise of it. When she came on her way as far as Metz, an order was sent to stop her, till she was better instructed: upon which she changed, at least as to outward appearance. It is true, the court of France gave it out that the elector had consented to this method, for the saving his own honour. And he had given the

^r He went first to see a ridiculous description he sent of her person, which concluded, daughter of the duke of New- that there was nothing white bourg, (who was afterwards married to the emperor Leopold,) but that dropt upon a about her but her eyes. D.

world cause to believe he was capable of that, though he continued openly to deny it. The house of commons resolved to follow this precedent, and to make an address to the king, to stop the princess of Modena's coming to England, till she should change her religion. Upon this the duke moved the king to prorogue the parliament for a week: and a commission was ordered for it. The duke went to the house on that day, to press the calling up the commons before they could have time to go on to business. Some peers were to be brought in. The duke pressed lord Shaftsbury to put that off, and to prorogue the parliament. He said coldly to him, there was no haste. But the commons made more haste: for they quickly came to a vote for stopping the marriage. And by this means they were engaged (having put such an affront on the duke) to proceed farther. He presently told me how the matter went, and how the lord chancellor had used him: he was confident the king would take the seals from him, if he could not manage the sessions so as to procure him money, of which there was indeed small appearance. I told him, I looked on that as a fatal thing, if the commons began once to affront him: that would have a sad train of consequences, as soon as they thought it necessary for their own preservation to secure themselves from falling under his revenges. He said, he was resolved to stand his ground, and to submit to the king in every thing: he would never take off an enemy: but he would let all the world see, that he was ready to forgive every one that should come off from his opposition, and make applications to him. When the week of the prorogation was ended, the session was opened by a

1673. speech of the king's, which had such various strains
 ——— in it, that it was plain it was made by different per-
 362 sons. The duke told me, that lord Clarendon, dur-
 ing his favour, had penned all the king's speeches;
 but that now they were composed in the cabinet,
 one minister putting in one period, while another
 made another; so that all was not of a piece. He
 told me, lord Arlington was almost dead with fear:
 but lord Shaftsbury reckoned himself gone at court,
 and acted more roundly^s. In his speech he studied
 to correct his *Delenda est Carthago*, applying it to
 the Loevestein party, whom he called the Carthagin-
 ians: but this made him as ridiculous, as the other
 had made him odious^t. The house of commons
 took up again the matter of the duke's marriage,
 and moved for an address about it. But it was
 said, the king's honour was engaged. Yet they ad-
 dressed to him against it. But the king made them
 no answer. By that time I had obtained a license
 of secretary Coventry for my book, which the king
 said should be printed at his charge.

A parlia-
 ment in
 Scotland.

But now I must give an account of a storm raised
 against my self, the effects of which were very sen-
 sible to me for many years. The duke of Lauder-
 dale had kept the Scottish nation in such a depend-
 ance on himself, that he was not pleased with any
 of them that made any acquaintance in England,
 and least of all in the court: nor could he endure

^s (Some evidence has been
 produced, that the king after-
 wards endeavoured without suc-
 cess to detach lord Shaftsbury
 from the party, which he finally
 espoused. See *Collins's Peerage*,
 vol. III. p. 568.)

^t He always denied these to

be his own words, and said
 they were proposed by some
 other persons of the king's
 council, and he obliged by or-
 der to put them into the
 speech he made to the parlia-
 ment, in the former sessions. O.

that any of them should apply themselves to the king or the duke, but through him. So he looked on the favour I had got into with a very jealous eye. His duchess questioned me about it. Those who know what court jealousies are will easily believe, that I must have said somewhat to satisfy them, or break with them. I told her, what was very true as to the duke, that my conversation with him was about religion; and that with the king I had talked of the course of life he led. I observed a deep jealousy of me in them both; especially because I could not go with them to Scotland. I said, I would follow, as soon as the secretary would despatch me. And as soon as that was done I took post, and by a great fall of snow was stopped by the way. But I unhappily got to Edenburgh the night before the parliament met. Duke Hamilton, and many others, told me how strangely duke Lauderdale talked of my interest at court; as if I was ready to turn papist. Duke Hamilton also told me, they were resolved next day to attack duke Lauderdale, and his whole administration in parliament. I was troubled at this; and argued with him against the fitness of it all I could. But he said he was engaged: the earls of Rothes, Argile, and Tweeddale, and all the cavalier party, had promised to stick by him. I told him, what afterwards happened, that most of these would make their own terms, and leave him in the lurch^u: and the load would lie on him. When I saw the thing was past remedy, I resolved to go home, and follow my studies; since I could not keep duke Lauderdale and him any longer in a good understanding.

^u True sublime. S.

1673. Next day, when the parliament was opened, the king's letter was read, desiring their assistance in carrying on the war with Holland, and assuring them of his affection to them in very kind words. This was seconded by duke Lauderdale in a long speech. And immediately it was moved to appoint a committee to prepare an answer to the king's letter, as was usual. Duke Hamilton moved, that the state of the nation might be first considered, that so they might see what grievances they had: and he hinted at some. And then, as it had been laid, about twenty men, one after another, spoke to several particulars. Some mentioned the salt, others the tobacco and the brandy: some complained of the administration of justice, and others of the coin. With this the duke of Lauderdale was struck, as one dead; for he had raised his credit at court by the opinion of his having all Scotland in his hand, and in a dependance on him: so a discovery of this want of credit with us he saw must sink him there. He had not looked for this; though I had warned him of a great deal of it. But he reflecting on that, and on the credit I had got at court, and on the haste I made in my journey, and my coming critically the night before the session opened: he laid all this together, and fancied I was sent upon design, as the agent of the party, and that the licensing my book was only a blind: he believed sir Robert Murray had laid it, and that the earl of Shaftsbury had managed it. And because it was a common artifice of king Charles's ministers, to put the miscarriage of affairs upon some accident that had not been foreseen by them, but should be provided against for the future; he assured the king, that I had been

A party
formed
against
Lauderdale.

the incendiary, that I had my uncle's temper in me, 1673.
 and that I must be subdued, otherwise I would em-
 broil all his affairs. The king took all things of
 that kind easily from his ministers, without hearing
 any thing to the contrary: for he was wont to say,
 all apologies were lies: upon which one said to him
 once, then he would always believe the first lie.
 But all this was much increased, when duke Lau-
 derdale upon his coming up told the king, that I
 had boasted to his wife of the freedom that I had
 used with him upon his course of life. With this
 the king was highly offended: or at least he made
 much use of it, to justify many hard things that
 he said of me: and for many years he allowed him-
 self a very free scope in talking of me. I was cer-
 tainly to blame for the freedom I had used with
 the duchess of Lauderdale: but I was surprised by
 her question: and I could not bring my self to tell
 a lie: so I had no other shift ready to satisfy her.
 But the duke [of York] kept up still a very good
 opinion of me. I went home to Glasgow, where I 364
 prosecuted my studies till the June following, when
 I went again to London.

Duke Lauderdale put off the session of parliament He offers
to redress
grievances
in council.
 for some time; and called a council, in which he
 said, great complaints had been made in parliament
 of grievances: he had full authority to redress them
 all in the king's name: therefore he charged the
 privy counsellors to lay all things of that kind before
 that board, and not to carry them before any other
 assembly, till they saw what redress was to be had
 there. Duke Hamilton said, the regular way of
 complaints was to make them in parliament, which
 only could redress them effectually; since the put-

1673. ting them down by the authority of council was only laying them aside for a while, till a fitter opportunity was found to take them up again. Upon this, duke Lauderdale protested that he was ready in the king's name to give the subject ease and freedom, and that those who would not assist and concur with him in this were wanting in duty and respect to the king; and since he saw the matter of the salt, the tobacco, and the brandy, had raised much clamour, he would quash these. But the party had a mind to have the instruments of their oppression punished, as well as the oppression it self removed; and were resolved to have these things condemned by some exemplary punishments, and to pursue duke Lauderdale and his party with this clamour.

1674. Next session of parliament new complaints were offered. Duke Lauderdale said, these ought to be made first to the lords of the articles, to whom all petitions and motions ought to be made first; and that they were the only judges, what matters were fit to be brought into parliament. The other side said, they were only a committee of parliament, to put motions into the form of acts; but that the parliament had still an entire authority to examine into the state of the nation. In this debate, they had the reason of things on their side: but the words of the act favoured duke Lauderdale. So he lodged it now where he wished it might be, in a point of prerogative. He valued himself to the king on this, that he had drawn the act that settled the power of the lords of the articles; who being all upon the matter named by the king, it was of great concern

A dispute raised about the lords of the articles.

to him to maintain that, as the check upon factious spirits there; which would be no sooner let go, than the parliament of Scotland would grow as unquiet, as a house of commons was in England: that was a consideration which at this time had great weight with the king. I now return to give an account of this year's session in England. 1674.

In the beginning of it, the duke of Ormond, the earls of Shaftsbury and Arlington, and secretary Coventry, offered an advice to the king, for sending the duke for some time from the court, as a good expedient both for himself and the duke. The king hearkened so far to it, that he sent them to move it to the duke. He was highly incensed at it: he said, he would obey all the king's orders, but would look on those as his enemies who offered him such advices. And he never forgave this to any of them; no, not to Coventry, for all his good opinion of him. He pressed the king vehemently to take the seals from the earl of Shaftsbury. So it was done: and they were given to Finch, then attorney-general, made afterwards earl of Nottingham. He was a man of probity, and well versed in the laws: [but very ill bred, and both vain and haughty.] He was long much admired for his eloquence: but it was laboured and affected: and he saw it as much despised before he died. He had no sort of knowledge in foreign affairs: and yet he loved to talk of them perpetually: by which he exposed himself to those who understood them. He thought he was bound to justify the court in all debates in the house of lords, which he did with the vehemence of a pleader, rather than with the solemnity of a senator. He was an incorrupt judge: and in his court he

The proceedings in the parliament of England.

365

Finch's character.

1674. could resist the strongest applications even from the king himself, though he did it no where else. He was too eloquent on the bench, in the house of lords, and [even^x] in common conversation [that eloquence became in him ridiculous.] One thing deserves to be remembered of him: he took great care of filling the church livings that belonged to the seal with worthy men: and he obliged them all to residence^y. Lord Shaftsbury was now at liberty to open himself against the court; which he did with as little reserve as decency.

The house of commons were resolved to fall on all the ministry. They began with duke Lauderdale, and voted an address to remove him from the king's councils and presence for ever. They went next upon the duke of Buckingham: and it being moved, in his name, that the house would hear him, he was suffered to come to the house. The first day of his being before them, he fell into such a disorder, that he pretended he was taken ill, and desired to be admitted again. Next day he was more composed. He justified his own designs, laying all the ill counsels upon others, chiefly on lord Arlington, intimating plainly that the root of all errors was in the king and the duke. He said, hunting was a good diversion, but if a man would hunt with a brace of lobsters, he would have but ill sport. He had used that figure to my self; but had then applied it to prince Rupert and lord Arlington: but it

^x indeed, Bowyer's Transcript of the suppressed passages.

^y See a character of this great man by duke Wharton, in the True Briton, No. 69.

He is called by Burnet himself, in his letter on Hen. Wharton's *Specimen of Errors, in the Hist. of the Reformation*, page 25, a great and good man.

was now understood to go higher. His speech signified nothing towards the saving of himself: but it lost him the king's favour so entirely, that he never recovered it afterwards. Lord Arlington was next attacked: he appeared also before the commons, and spoke much better than was expected: he excused himself, but without blaming the king: and this had so good an effect, that though he, as secretary of state, was more exposed than any other, by the many warrants and orders he had signed, yet he was acquitted, though by a small majority. But the care he took to preserve himself, and his success in it, lost him his high favour with the king, as the duke was out of measure offended at him: so he quitted his post, and was made lord chamberlain.

The house of commons was resolved to force the king to a peace with the Dutch. The court of France recalled Croissy, finding that the duke was offended at his being led by lord Arlington. Ruvigny was sent over: a man of great practice in business and in all intrigues. He was still a firm protestant, but in all other respects a very dexterous courtier, and one of the greatest statesmen in Europe^z. He had the appointments of an ambassador, but would not take the character, that he might not have a chapel, and mass said in it. Upon his coming over, as he himself told me, he found all the ministers of the allies were perpetually plying the members of the house of commons with their memorials. He knew he could gain nothing on them: so

^z Madame de Maintenon in a letter to the countess de St. Geran 24 Aug. 1681, speaks thus of Ruvigni in a letter that shews her sincerity. M.de Ru-

vigni veut que je sois encore Calviniste dans le fond du cœur, il est aussi entêté de sa religion qu'un ministre. *Cole.*

1674. he never left the king. The king was in great perplexity: he would have done any thing, and parted with any persons, if that would have procured him money for carrying on the war. But he saw little appearance of that. He found he was indeed at the mercy of the States. So lord Arlington pressed the Spanish ministers to prevail with the States, and the prince of Orange, to get a proposition for a peace to be set on foot. And that it might have some shew of a peace both begged and bought, he proposed that a sum of money should be offered the king by the States, which should be made over by him, to the prince for the payment of the debt he owed him. Rouvigny pressed the king much to give his parliament all satisfaction in points of religion. The king answered him, if it was not for his brother's folly, (*la sottise de mon frère,*) he would get out of all his difficulties. Rouvigny drew a memorial for informing the house of commons of the modesty of his master's pretensions: for now the French king was sensible of his errors, in making such high demands as he had made at Utrecht; and was endeavouring to get out of the war on easier terms. The States committed a great error in desiring a peace with England, without desiring at the same time that the king should enter into the alliance, for reducing the French to the terms of the triple alliance. But the prince of Orange thought, that if he could once separate the king from his alliance with France, the other point would be soon brought about. And the States were much set on the having a peace with

367 England, hoping then both to be freed of the great trouble of securing the coast at a vast charge, and also by the advantage of their fleet to ruin the trade,

A peace
concluded
with the
States.

and to insult the coast of France. The States did 1674.
this winter confer a new and extraordinary dignity
on the prince of Orange. They made him heredit-
ary stadtholder. So that this was entailed on him
and his issue male. He had in a year and a half's
time changed the whole face of their affairs. He
had not only taken Naerden, which made Amster-
dam easy: but by a very bold undertaking he had
gone up the Rhine to Bon, and had taken it in a
very few days: and in it had cut off the supplies
that the French sent down to their garrisons on the
Rhine and the Isel. So that the French finding
they could not subsist longer there, were now re-
solved to evacuate all those places, and the three
provinces of which they were possessed; which they
did a few months after. An alliance was also made
with the emperor. And by this means both the
elector of Cologne and the bishop of Munster were
brought to a peace with the States. The elector of
Brandenburgh was likewise returning to the alliance
with the States: for in the treaty, to which he was
forced to submit, with Turenne for a truce of a
year, he had put an article, reserving to himself a
liberty to act in concurrence with the empire, ac-
cording to such resolutions as should be taken in the
diet. This change of the affairs of the States had
got the prince of Orange the affections of the people
to such a degree, that he could have obtained every
thing of them that he would have desired: and even
the loss of so important a place as Maestricht was
not at all charged on him. So he brought the
States to make applications to the king in the style
of those who begged a peace, though it was visible
they could have forced it. In conclusion, a project

1674. of a peace with England was formed, or rather the peace of Breda was writ over again, with the offer of 2 or 300,000*l.* for the expense of the war. And the king signed it at lord Arlington's office.

The king
became the
mediator of
the peace.

He came up immediately into the drawing room; where seeing Rouvigny, he took him aside, and told him, he had been doing a thing that went more against his heart than the losing of his right hand: he had signed a peace with the Dutch, the project being brought him by the Spanish ambassador: he saw nothing could content the house of commons, or draw money from them: and lord Arlington had pressed him so hard, that he had stood out till he was weary of his life: he saw it was impossible for him to carry on the war without supplies, of which it was plain he could have no hopes. Rouvigny told him, what was done could not be helped: but he would let him see how faithfully he would serve him on this occasion: he did not doubt but his master would submit all his pretensions to him, and make him the arbiter and mediator of the peace.

368 This the king received with great joy; and said, it would be the most acceptable service that could be done him. The French resolved upon this to accept of the king's mediation. And so the king got out of the war, very little to his honour, having both engaged in it upon unjust grounds, and managed it all along with ill conduct and bad success: and now he got out of it in so poor and so dishonourable a manner, that with it he lost his credit both at home and abroad. Yet he felt little of all this. He and his brother were now at their ease. Upon this, the parliament was quickly prorogued: and the court delivered itself up again to its ordi-

nary course of sloth and luxury. But lord Arling- 1674.
ton, who had brought all this about, was so entirely
lost by it, that though he knew too much of the
secret to be ill used^a, yet he could never recover
the ground he had lost.

The duchess of York came over that winter. She The duch-
ess's cha-
racter.
was then very young, about sixteen, but of a full
growth. She was a graceful person, with a good
measure of beauty, and so much wit and cunning,
that during all this reign she behaved herself in so
obliging a manner, and seemed so innocent and
good, that she gained upon all that came near her,
and possessed them with such impressions of her,
that it was long before her behaviour after she was
a queen could make them change their thoughts of
her. So artificially did this young Italian behave
herself, that she deceived even the eldest and most
jealous persons, both in the court and country.
Only sometimes a satirical temper broke out too
much, which was imputed to youth and wit not
enough practised to the world. She avoided the
appearances of a zealot, or a meddler in business;
and gave herself up to innocent cheerfulness; and
was universally esteemed and beloved as long as she
was duchess.

She had one put about her to be her secretary, Coleman's
character.
Coleman; who became so active in the affairs of the
party, and ended his life so unfortunately, that since
I had much conversation with him, his circum-
stances may deserve that his character should be
given, though his person did not. I was told he
was a clergyman's son: but he was early caught
by the Jesuits, and bred many years among them.

^a He was in that of the king's conversion to popery. O.

1674. He understood the art of managing controversies, chiefly that great one of the authority of the church, better than any of their priests. He was a bold man, resolved to raise himself, which he did by dedicating himself wholly to the Jesuits: and so he was raised by them. He had a great easiness in writing in several languages; and writ many long letters, and was the chief correspondent the party had in England. He lived at a vast expense. And talked in so positive a manner, that it looked like one who knew he was well supported. I soon saw into his temper; and I warned the duke of it^b: for I looked on him, as a man much liker to spoil business, than to carry it on dexterously. He got into the confidence of P. Ferrier the king of France's confessor; and tried to get into the same pitch of confidence with P. de la Chaise, who succeeded him in that post. He went about every where, even to the jails among the criminals, to make proselytes. He dealt much both in the giving and taking of bribes. But now the affairs of England were calmed, I look again to Scotland, which was yet in a storm.

The affairs
of Scotland.

The king writ to duke Hamilton to come up. And when he and lord Tweeddale arrived, they were so well received, that they hoped to carry their point. But the king's design in this was, that, if he could have brought the house of commons to have given money, he was resolved to have parted with duke Lauderdale, and have employed them. And his kind usage of them was on design to persuade the commons to use himself better, by shewing that he was ready to comply with them. He

^b Was it for the good of the shop gave the duke this warning? D.
protestant religion, that the bi-

gave them so good a hearing, that they thought 1674.
 they had fully convinced him : and he blamed them
 only for not complaining to himself of those griev-
 ances. But, as soon as he saw it was to no purpose
 to look for money from the house of commons, and
 had signed the peace, he sent them down with full
 assurances that all things should be left to the judg-
 ment of the parliament. They came down through
 the greatest fall of snow that has been in all my
 life-time. When they got home, instead of a ses-
 sion, there was an order for a prorogation ; which
 gave such an universal discontent, that many of-
 fered at very extravagant propositions, for destroy-
 ing duke Lauderdale and all his party. Duke Ha-
 milton, who told me this some years after, when an
 act of grace was published, was neither so bad nor
 so bold as to hearken to these. The king writ him
 a cajoling letter, desiring him to come up once more,
 and to refer all matters to him : and he assured him,
 he would make up all differences.

The parlia-
 ment was
 prorogued.

In the mean while duke Lauderdale took all pos-
 sible methods to become more popular. He con-
 nived at the insolence of the presbyterians, who
 took possession of one of the vacant churches of
 Edinburgh, and preached in it for some months.
 The earl of Argile and sir James Dalrimple were
 the men on whom the presbyterians depended most.
 Duke Lauderdale returned to his old kindness with
 the former : and lord Argile was very ready to for-
 get his late unkindness. So matters were made up
 between them. Dalrimple was the president of the
 session, a man of great temper, and of a very mild
 deportment, but [a false and cunning man^c, and a

Dalrimple's
 character.

^c (The printed copy has, in- these words, *a cunning man*. He
 stead of this long passage, only was, &c. Sinclair, in his Answer

1674. great perverter of justice: in which he had a particular dexterity of giving some plausible colours to the greatest injustice. This family has risen the fastest, and yet has had the greatest misfortunes of any in Scotland. His eldest son, the viscount of Stairs, rode over a child, and dashed out his brains; and he had two sons, who, in their play, found and charged a pistol^d, with which the one shot the other dead. Another of the president's sons, being in a fever, snatched at somewhat that lay by him, and swallowed it down, which proved to be cantharides, intended for a viscatory plaister; with which he was ulcerated all within, and died in extreme misery: another of his sons, in a fit, fell into the fire, which burnt out half his face. His daughters have had extraordinary fits, in which they have jumped over high walls: and one of them died in an odd manner. These things occasioned much censure and many strange discourses. This man] was now taken into the chief confidence. He told the presbyterians, if they would now support duke Lauderdale, this would remove the prejudice the king had against them, as enemies to his service. This wrought on many of them. What influence soever

The clergy
was much
provoked.

370 this might have on the presbyterians, the strange conduct with relation to them provoked the clergy out of measure. Some hot men, that were not pre-

to Beach's first Letter to the younger Burnet, p. 10, asserts, that the bishop, on reviewing his History, struck the whole paragraph out of the first draught of his work. Beach, in his reply, says, that this, which is the only passage affirmed by Sinclair to have been thus deleted by the bishop, was like

the others taken not from the first draught of the bishop's work, but from a transcript, that very probably was the third or fourth draught. Second Letter, p. 13.)

^d *found a charged pistol.* Beach and Bowyer's Transcripts: and *his* family instead of *this* family.

ferred as they thought they deserved, grew very 1674.
 mutinous, and complained that things were let fall
 into much confusion. And they raised a grievous
 outcry for the want of a national synod to regulate
 our worship and government: and so moved in the
 diocesan synods, that a petition should be offered to
 the privy council, setting forth the necessity of hav-
 ing a national synod. I liked no part of this. I
 knew the temper of our clergy too well to depend
 much on them. Therefore I went out of the way
 on purpose when our synod was to meet. Petitions
 were offered for a national synod, which was thought
 an innocent thing. Yet, it being done on design to
 heighten the fermentation the kingdom was in, great
 exceptions were taken to it. One bishop, and four
 of the clergy, were turned out by an order from the
 king, pursuant to the act asserting the supremacy.
 After a year, upon their submission, they were re-
 stored. Though I was not at all concerned in this,
 (for I was ever of Nazianzen's opinion, who never
 wished to see any more synods of the clergy^e;) yet
 the king was made believe, that I had laid the whole
 matter, even though I did not appear in any part
 of it.

Another disorder broke out, which had greater
 effects. A cause being judged in the supreme court
 of session, the party appealed to the parliament.
 This was looked on as a high contempt, done on
 design to make the parliament a court of judicature,
 that so there might be a necessity of frequent par-

A great dis-
 traction in
 Scotland.

^e Dog. S. (The times, which Swift supposes the bishop to reflect on, were times of virtuous zeal against the unceasing attacks of heresy and infidelity; a zeal which ill suited the then prevailing politics, and which occasioned a discontinuance of the synodical meetings of the church of England)

1674. liaments. So the judges required all the lawyers to condemn this, as contrary to law. And they had the words of a law on their side: for there lay no such appeal as stopped process, nor was there a writ of error in their law: but upon petitions, parliaments had, though but seldom, reviewed and reversed the judgments of the courts. So the debate lay about the sense of the word *appeal*. Sir George Lockhart, brother to the ambassador, was the most learned lawyer and the best pleader I have ever yet known in any nation; [he was a covetous, a passionate, and an ambitious man;] and he had all the lawyers almost in a dependance on him. He was engaged with the party, and resolved to stand it out. The king sent down an order to put all men from the bar that did not condemn appeals. And, when that wrought not on them, they were by proclamation banished Edinburgh, and twelve miles about it: and a new day was assigned them for making their submission; the king in a very unusual style declaring, on the word of a prince, that, if they submitted not by that day, they should never be again admitted to their practice. They stood it out: and the day lapsed without their submitting. Yet afterwards they renounced appeals in the sense of the Roman law: and, notwithstanding the unusual threatening in the proclamation, they were
 371 again restored to practice. But this made a stop for a whole year in all legal proceedings.

Lauderdale's proceedings there.

The government of the city of Edinburgh was not so compliant as was expected. So duke Lauderdale procured a letter from the king to turn out twelve of the chief magistrates, and to declare them for ever incapable of all public trusts: so entirely

had he forgot his complaints formerly made against incapacity, even when passed in an act of parliament: [but he kept to the same number of twelve.] 1674.

The boroughs of Scotland have by law a privilege of meeting once a year in a body, to consider of trade, and of bye-laws relating to it. At a convention held this year, a petition was agreed on, and sent to the king, complaining of some late acts that hindered trade, for the repeal of which there was great need of a session of parliament: they therefore prayed, that when the king sent down a commissioner to hold a session, he might be instructed in order to that repeal. This was judged a legal thing by the lawyers there; for this was a lawful assembly: they did not petition for a parliament, but only for instructions to the session. Yet it was condemned as seditious: and those who promoted it were fined and imprisoned for it. Thus duke Lauderdale was lifted up out of measure, and resolved to crush all that stood in his way. He was made earl of Guildford in England^f, and had a pension of three thousand pounds: and he let himself loose into a very ungoverned fury. When duke Hamilton and some other lords came up, the king desired they would put their complaints in writing. They said, the laws were so oddly worded, and more oddly executed, in Scotland, that the modestest paper they could offer might be condemned as

^f In the former session of parliament it was often mentioned in the house of commons to treat him as a commoner of England, and against him as such (they) could do more, than against the other ministers, who were peers of England. Gray's manuscript Debates in the House of Commons, for somewhat of this, in 1673, and 1675. They are now printed. See Dugdale's Baronage, for the time of duke Lauderdale's being made an English peer. O.

1674. leasing-making, and misrepresenting the king's proceedings: so they would not venture on it. The king promised them, that no ill use should be made of it to their prejudice. But they did not think it safe to trust him; for he seemed to be entirely delivered up to all duke Lauderdale's passions ^g.

I was disgraced.

It is no wonder then that I could not stand before him; though at my coming up, the duke of York received me with great kindness, and told me, how he had got out of great difficulties, and added, that the king was very firm to him: he commended likewise his new duchess much: he was troubled at our disorders: he was firm to duke Lauderdale: but he would have endeavoured to reconcile matters, if there had been room for it. He told me, the king was highly incensed against me; and was made believe, that I was the chief spring of all that had happened: he himself believed me more innocent; and said, he would endeavour to set me right with him: and he carried me to the king, who received me coldly. Some days after, when the duke was a hunting, the lord chamberlain told me, he had orders to strike my name out of the list of the chaplains; and that the king forbade me the court, and
372 expected I should go back to Scotland. The duke seemed troubled at this, and spoke to the king about it: but he was positive. Yet he admitted me to say to him what I had to offer in my own justification. I said all that I thought necessary; and appealed to duke Hamilton, who did me justice in it. But the

^g (Laing, in his History of Scotland, vol. IV. p. 71. relates, that their grievances were communicated to Charles by an anonymous letter. The letter

is to be found in a contemporary pamphlet, entitled, *An Account of Scotland's Grievances, by Reason of the Duke of Lauderdale's Ministrie*, p. 33—37.)

king said, he was afraid I had been too busy^h; and wished me to go home to Scotland, and be more quiet. The duke upon this told me, that, if I went home without reconciling my self to duke Lauderdale, I should be certainly shut up in a close prison, where I might perhaps lie too long. This I looked on as a very high obligation: so I resigned my employment, and resolved to stay in England. I preached in many of the churches of London; and was so well received, that it was probable I might be accepted of in any that was to be disposed of by a popular electionⁱ. So a church falling to be given in that way, the electors had a mind to choose me: but yet they were not willing to offend the court. The duke spoke to duke Lauderdale, and told him that he had a mind I should be settled in London, and desired he would not oppose it. Duke Lauderdale said, all this was a trick of the party in Scotland, to settle me, that I might be a correspondent between the factions in both kingdoms. Yet, upon the duke's undertaking that I should not meddle in those matters, he was contented that the king should let the electors know he was not against their choosing me. Upon this duke Lauderdale, seeing what a root I had with the duke, sent a message to me, that, if I would promise to keep no farther correspondence with duke Hamilton, I should again be restored to his favour. I said, I had promised the duke to meddle no more in Scottish affairs: but I could not forsake my friends, nor turn against them. By this he judged I was inflexible. So he carried a story to the king the very night before the election, that upon inquiry was

^h The king knew him right. S. ⁱ Much to his honour. S.

1674. found to be false, when it was too late to help what
— was done. Upon that, the king sent a severe mes-
sage to the electors. So I missed that. And some
time after a new story was invented, of which Sharp
was indeed the author, by which the king was made
believe that I was possessing both lords and com-
mons against duke Lauderdale. Upon that, the
king ordered Coventry to command me to leave
London, and not to come within twenty miles of it.
The duke told me what the particulars were, which
were all false: for lord Falconbridge and lord Car-
lisle were the lords into whom it was said I was
infusing those prejudices. Now I was known to
neither of them; for, though they had desired my
acquaintance, I had declined it. So I told all this
to secretary Coventry, who made report of it to the
king in the duke's presence: and those lords justi-
fied me in the matter. I hoped the king would
upon all this recall his order. But he would not do
373 it. So I asked to have it in writing. The secretary
knew it was against law: so he would not do it.
But I was forbid the court. The duke brought
duke Lauderdale and me once together, to have
made us friends. But nothing would do, unless I
would forsake all my friends, and discover secrets.
I said, I knew no wicked ones: and I could not
break with persons with whom I had lived long in
great friendship. The duke spoke to the lord trea-
surer, to soften duke Lauderdale with relation to
me; and sent me to him. He undertook to do it;
but said afterwards, duke Lauderdale was intract-
able.

This violent and groundless prosecution lasted
some months. And during that time I said to

some, that duke Lauderdale had gone so far in 1674.
 opening some wicked designs to me, that I perceived he could not be satisfied unless I was undone. So I told what was mentioned before of the discourses that passed between him and me^k. This I ought not to have done, since they were the effects of confidence and friendship. But such a course of provocation might have heated a cooler and elder man than I was, being then but thirty, to forget the caution that I ought to have used. The persons who had this from me, resolved to make use of it against him, in the next session of parliament: for which the earl of Danby and he were preparing, by turning to new methods.

Lord Danby set up to be the patron of the church party and of the old cavaliers: and duke Lauderdale joined himself to him. It was said, the king had all along neglected his best and surest friends: so a new measure was taken up, of doing all possible honours to the memory of king Charles I. and to all that had been in his interests. A statue of brass on horseback, that had been long neglected, was bought, and set up at Charing Cross: and a magnificent funeral was designed for him. The building of St. Paul's in London was now set on foot with great zeal. Morley and some of the bishops were sent for: and the new ministry settled a scheme with them, by which it was offered to crush all the designs of popery. The ministers expressed a great zeal in this; and openly accused all the former ministers for neglecting it so long. But, to excuse this to the duke, they told him, it was a

The ministers turned to the church party.

^k Scotch dog. S.

1674. great misfortune, that the church party and the dissenters were now run into one; that the church party must have some content given them; and then a test was to be set on foot, that should for ever shut out all dissenters, who were an implacable sort of people. A declaration renouncing the lawfulness of resistance in any case whatsoever, and an engagement to endeavour no alteration in church or state, was designed to be a necessary qualification of all that might choose or be chosen members of parliament. If this could be carried, the king's party would be for ever separated from the dissenters, and be so much the more united to him.

374 In order to this, it was necessary to put out severe orders of council against all convicted or suspected papists. The duke acquainted me with this scheme. He disliked it much. He thought this would raise the church party too high. He looked on them as intractable in the point of popery. Therefore he thought, it was better to keep them under by supporting the papists. He looked on the whole project, as both knavish and foolish. And upon this he spoke severely of duke Lauderdale, who he saw would do any thing to save himself: he (Lauderdale) had been all along in ill terms both with Sheldon and Morley: but now he reconciled himself to them: he brought Sharp out of Scotland, who went about assuring all people, that the party set against him was likewise set against the church. This, though notoriously false, passed for true among strangers. And, Leightoun coming up at the year's end to quit his archbishopric of Glasgow, Burnet had made such submissions that he was restored to it. So that wound, which had been given to epi-

scopacy in his person, was now healed¹. And Leigh- 1674.
toun retired to a private house in Sussex, where he
lived ten years in a most heavenly manner, and
with a shining conversation. So now duke Lau-
derdale was at the head of the church party.

The court was somewhat disturbed with discove-
ries that were made at this time. When sir Joseph
Williamson came back from Cologne, he secretly met
with Wicquefort, who has published a work about
ambassadors. He was the Dutch secretary, that
translated the intelligence that came from England.
And sometimes the originals were left in his hands.
Williamson prevailed with him to deliver these to
him. Most of them were writ by the lord Howard's
brother, who upon his brother's death was after-
wards lord Howard. He was a man of wit and
learning, bold and poor, who had run through many
parties in religion. In Cromwell's time he was re-
baptized, and had preached in London. He set up
in opposition to Cromwell, as a great common-
wealth's man, and did some service in the restora-
tion. But he was always poor, and ready to engage
in any thing that was bold. He went over in the
beginning of the war, and offered to serve De Wit.
But he told me, he found him a dry man^m. As soon
as the prince was raised, he waited on him and on
Fagel; and undertook not only to send them good
intelligence, but to make a great party for them.
He pressed the prince to make a descent on Eng-
land, only to force the king to call a parliament,
and to be advised by it. And he drew such a *ma-*

Corre-
spondence
with Hol-
land disco-
vered.

¹ (He succeeded archbishop
Sharp in the primacy of Scot-
land, and died in 1684.)

^m Who told who? I guess
Howard told Burnet. S.

1674. *nifesto*, as he believed would be acceptable to the nation. He, and one of the Du Moulins, that was in lord Arlington's office, joined together, and gave the States very good intelligence. Du Moulin, fearing that he was discovered, took the alarm in time, and got beyond sea. Most of the papers that Wicquefort delivered were of Howard's writing. So
 375 upon his examination in the Tower, it appeared they had his letters against him. And, when notice was sent of this to Holland, Wicquefort was called on to bring before them all the original letters that were trusted to him. And upon his not doing it, he was clapt up. And the States sent word to the king, that, if any person suffered in England on the account of the letters betrayed by him, his head should go for it. Halewyn told me, when it was put to the judges to know what sort of crime this could be made, since the papers were given up after the peace was concluded, (otherwise the betraying the secrets of the state to enemies was a manifest crime,) they came to this resolution, that as by the Roman law every thing was made capital that was *contra salutem populi Romani*, so the delivering up such papers was a capital crime. This threatening saved Howard. But yet Wicquefort was kept very long in prison, and ruined by it. He had a sort of a character from one of the princes of Germany, upon which he insisted. But the States thought, that his coming into their service was the throwing up of that character. Upon this occasion Carstairs, mentioned in the year 1672, was sent over from Holland to Englandⁿ. And he was seized on

Jealousies
 of the
 prince of
 Orange.

ⁿ At page 340. folio edit. He was afterwards private secre-

with a paper of instructions, that were drawn so 1674.

darkly, that no wonder if they gave a jealousy of some ill designs then on foot. The prince said, when asked about it, that it was only meant for a direction for carrying on the levies of some regiments that the king had allowed the Dutch to make in Scotland, which the king did the better to excuse his letting so many continue in the French service. Howsoever, mention being made of money to be paid, and of men to be raised, and a compliment being ordered to be made to duke Hamilton, this looked suspicious. Howard had confessed all he knew upon promise of pardon. So that and this laid together gave the court some apprehensions. Duke Lauderdale made use of it to heighten the king's ill opinion of the party against him. And, because lieutenant-general Drummond was of all the military men he that had the best capacity and the greatest reputation, he moved that he might be secured. The method he took in doing it shewed that he neither suspected him nor regarded the law.

The ancient method was to require men to render themselves prisoners by such a day. This was a snare to many, who, though innocent, yet hating restraint, went out of the way, and were proceeded against in an outlawry: but an act of parliament had been made, condemning that method for the future. Yet duke Lauderdale resolved to follow it. And Drummond, knowing his innocence, rendered himself as required; and was kept a year in a very cold and inconvenient prison at Dunbarton, on the top of a high rock. This, coming after a whole life of loyal-

Drummond
was ordered
to prison.

tary to king William for Scotland. The author mentions him again at pp. 584. and 636.

1674. ty and zeal, was thought a very extraordinary reward to such high pretensions.

376 One thing on this occasion may be fit to be told. Lord Kincardin had served duke Lauderdale faithfully, even longer than he could do with a good conscience: for he had stuck to him, and was left by him with the king, when he went to Scotland, who knew well with how much zeal he had supported his interest, and excused his faults. When duke Lauderdale was hotly pushed at, he then promised to all his friends, that he would avoid all former errors, if he got out of his trouble: and that made lord Kincardin so earnest to serve him. But, when he saw into how much fury he was running, he tried to have persuaded him to more temper; but found it was in vain. Then he confessed to me, that I had judged truer than he had done; for I believed he would grow worse than ever. When lord Kincardin found he could not hinder things in private, he opposed them at council: and so they broke with him. He came up to justify himself to the king, who minded those matters very little; but thought it was necessary to give a full scope to duke Lauderdale's motions, who had told the king there was a spirit of rebellion that run through all sorts of people, and that was to be subdued by acts of power, though perhaps neither legal nor just: and when that evil spirit was once broken, then it would be fit to return to more legal and moderate councils. So lord Kincardin found there was no arguing with the king upon particulars. Therefore he begged leave to stay some time at court, that he might not be obliged to oppose that, which the king was made believe his service required. The king consented to

this ; and upon all occasions used him very well. 1674.

Duke Lauderdale could not bear that, and pressed the king often to command him home ; which he refused to do. Once he urged it with much vehemence : and the king answered as positively, that he saw no reason for it, and he would not do it. Upon this he came home as in a fit of distraction, and was gathering together all his commissions to deliver them up to the king. Upon that the marquis of Athol, who was then in high favour with him, went to the king, and told him that he had sent duke Lauderdale home half dead and half mad ; and begged the king to take pity on him. So the king sent a message to lord Kincardin, ordering him to go home. This lord Athol himself told me afterwards.

Towards the end of summer the battle of Seneff The battle of Seneff. was fought : in the beginning of which the French had a great advantage : but the prince of Condé pushed it too far : and the prince of Orange engaged the whole army with so much bravery, that it appeared that the Dutch army was now brought to another state than he had found it in. He charged himself in many places, with too great a neglect of his person, considering how much depended upon it. He once was engaged among a body of French, 377 thinking they were his own men, and bid them charge : they told him they had no more powder : he, perceiving they were none of his men, with great presence of mind got out of their hands, and brought up a body of his army to charge them ; who quickly routed them. The action in the afternoon recovered the loss that was made in the morning ; and possessed all the world, the prince of Condé in

1674. particular, with a great esteem of the prince's conduct and courage. I will say little of foreign affairs; because there are many copious accounts of them in print; and I can add little to them. With relation to the battle of Seneff, the prince himself told me that the day before he saw a capuchin, that came over from the French army, and had a long conversation with Zouch, the emperor's general; who behaved himself so ill on the day of battle, that the prince said to his son at night, that his father had acted so basely, that, if it had not been for the respect he bore the emperor, he would have shot him through the head. He was disgraced on this. But the success of the campaign was lost by it. They had a noble army; and might have done much more than they did. Grave was retaken in the end of the campaign. So the provinces were now safe on that side. And the prince had gained so much credit with the States, that he was now more than even the master of their counsels.

Arlington
went to
Holland.

The alarm that those discoveries from Holland gave our court, made lord Arlington offer at one trial more for recovering the king's confidence. He offered to go over to Holland with the earl of Ossory, for they fancied they had a great interest in the prince, by their having married two of Bevervardt's daughters: and the prince had always a particular affection to lord Ossory. Lord Arlington said, he would go to the bottom of every thing with the prince; and did not doubt, but he would bring him into an entire dependence on his uncle, and particularly dispose him to a general peace; on which the king was much set, it being earnestly desired by the French. It was likewise believed, that

he had leave to give the prince the hope of marrying her whom he afterwards married^o. The duke told me he knew nothing of the matter: he had heard, lord Arlington had talked as if the managing that was his chief errand: and upon that he had asked the king, who assured him that he had a positive order not so much as to speak of that matter. Yet, whether notwithstanding this he had a secret

1674.

^o (Compare Ralph's History of England, vol. I. p. 264. In Cartes' Life of the Duke of Ormond, vol. II. p. 448, a letter from his son the earl of Ossory to his father on this subject is inserted, of which the following is a part. "The king told me his nephew and his niece's marriage was the only thing capable of helping the duke (of York), and that for that, as well as other reasons, he had spoke to the duke of it, who consented that upon the prince of Orange's desiring it, I should undertake the proposition would be accepted. This commission I had from both, and upon its being moved to me by the prince of Orange, I declared to him so much, and shewed him the account I gave of it to the duke; from which letter, by my making a comma instead of a full stop, the critics would infer that I had made the offer first. Upon this the duke expressed all the anger imaginable; but the prince's letter by me fully justified the contrary. The duke will have the whole letter to be a civil denial; to which I have nothing to say,

" but that I am sure the prince
 " thought it otherwise; for I
 " shewed it him, who approved
 " thereof. During our absence
 " the king's mind hath been
 " wrought upon in this affair
 " so much, as I believe those
 " who wish not a good understanding between him and
 " his nephew, will have their
 " aim. I almost forgot to tell
 " you, that the duke before our
 " going said, he would not have
 " his daughter marry before
 " a peace were made. But
 " this the king opposed, believing that when we had nothing to say on that account,
 " it would give a jealousy, that
 " other ends were sought under
 " this negotiation, which he
 " would not have any ways
 " clogged. The duke's exposition was mingled with
 " much kindness, but avowing
 " that he liked not the thing
 " from the first, and accusing
 " me of too much haste. His
 " carriage since to me is very
 " fair and open. I find the
 " duke of Monmouth much of
 " the same mind, there being
 " besides crossness of interests,
 " some private piques between
 " the prince and him.")

1674. order, or whether he did it without order, he certainly talked a great deal of it to the prince, as a thing which he might depend on, if he would in all other things be governed by the king.

Temple
sent am-
bassador
to Holland.

378

Sir William Temple had been sent over the summer before, as ambassador: and his chief instructions were, to dispose all people's minds, chiefly the prince's, to a peace. But the prince had avoided the seeing him till the end of the campaign. Lord Arlington had thrown him off, when he went into the French interest: and Temple was too proud to bear contempt, or forget such an injury soon. He was a vain man, much blown up in his own conceit, which he shewed too indecently on all occasions. He had a true judgment in affairs, and very good principles with relation to government; but [good] in nothing else: [for he was an Epicurean both in principle and practice.] He seemed to think that things were as they are from all eternity. At least he thought religion was fit only for the mob^P. He was a great admirer of the sect of Confucius in China, who were atheists themselves, but left religion to the rabble. He was a corrupter of all that came near him. And he delivered himself up wholly to study, ease, and pleasure^Q. He entered

^P A word of dignity for an historian. S.

^Q The author should have done more justice to the character of this truly great man; one of the ablest, most sincere, generous, and virtuous ministers, that any age has produced; and who will always be deemed one of the honours of this nation, as a statesman, a writer, and as a lover and

example of the finest sorts of learning. They who knew sir William Temple best, have had a disdain at the misrepresentation here of his principles with regard to religion; his whole life was a continued course of probity, disinterestedness, and every other amiable virtue, with every elegance of it. Great in business, and happy out of it. See, and contemplate his writ-

into a close friendship with lord Danby, who de- 1674.
 pended much on him: and was directed in all his
 notions as to foreign affairs by him; for no man
 ever came into the ministry, that understood the
 affairs of Europe so little as he did.

I will henceforth leave the account of our affairs
 beyond sea wholly to Temple's letters, in which
 they are very truly and fully set forth. And in
 them it appears, that the prince of Orange, even
 while so young, and so little practised in affairs, had
 so clear and so just a view of them, that nothing
 could misguide him; and that the bad prospect he
 had from the ill condition of affairs did not frighten
 him to accept of any mean or base conditions of
 peace. His fidelity to his country and the public
 interest was so firm, that no private considerations
 of his own could bias him, or indeed be much con-
 sidered by him. These letters give him a character
 that is so sublime, as well as so genuine, that it
 raises him much above all the performances of rhe-
 toric or panegyric. I will mention very little that
 is to be found in them. Holland was in great ex-
 pectation, when they saw two such men as the earls
 of Ossory and Arlington come over, together with
 the earl of Danby's eldest son, though the last only
 made the shew a little greater. Lord Arlington for
 some days insisted vehemently on the prince's dis-
 missing Du Moulin, who had discovered the secrets
 of his office to him. In this the prince complied:
 and Du Moulin was sent to one of their plantations.
 As to all other things, lord Arlington talked to him

ings; but pass gently over his to which Burnet was a stran-
 few errors. O. Sir William ger. S.
 Temple was a man of virtue,

1674. in the strain of a governor; and seemed to presume too much on his youth, and on his want of experience. But, instead of prevailing on the prince, he lost him so entirely, that all his endeavours afterwards could never beget any confidence in him. So he came back, and reckoned this was his last essay; which succeeding so ill, he ever after that withdrew from all business. He made himself easy to the king, who continued to be still very kind to him.

1675. At Easter, a piece of private news came from
Affairs in France, which the duke was much delighted with,
England.
379 because it did an honour to the order of the Jesuits, to whom he had devoted himself. The new confessor had so pressed the king of France in Lent to send away his mistress, Montespan, that he prevailed at last. She was sent to a nunnery. And so the king received the sacrament, as was said, in a state of contrition. This was writ to the duke, and set out with such circumstances, as the French usually do every thing that relates to their king. The duke was much pleased with it. He told me, he had related it with all its circumstances to the king in the duchess of Portsmouth's hearing; and said, they both heard it with great uneasiness, and were much out of countenance at it. The duke himself was then in the best temper I had ever known him in. He was reading Nurembergius of the difference of things temporal and things eternal: and we had much good discourse on that subject. Lord Arlington ran so much in his mind, that he once said to me, if lord Arlington would read that book, he would not meddle in so many affairs as he did. I saw he was very jealous of him, and of his

interest in the king. Thus I have given a full ac- 1675.
count of my acquaintance with the duke.

I lost his favour soon after this. For in April 1675 a session of parliament was held, as preparatory to one that was designed next winter, in which money was to be asked: but none was now asked; it being only called to heal all breaches, and to beget a good understanding between the king and his people. The house of commons fell upon duke Lauderdale^r. And those who knew what had passed between him and me^s, moved that I should be examined before a committee. I was brought before them. I told them how I had been commanded out of town. But though that was illegal, yet, since it had been let fall, it was not insisted on. I was next examined concerning his design of arming the Irish papists. I said, I, as well as others, had heard him say, he wished the presbyterians in Scotland would rebel, that he might bring over the Irish papists to cut their throats. I was next examined concerning the design of bringing a Scottish army into England. I desired to be excused, as to

I was examined by the house of commons.

^r The king sent for sir Thomas Mears, and told him he heard they intended to impeach lord Danby, which he said would be very prejudicial to his affairs. Sir Thomas said, the only expedient he knew was to impeach somebody else, which would spend their fury, and waste their time. The king said, that was right, but who should it be? Sir Thomas said, duke Lauderdale was very odious; would there be any harm in falling upon him? The king answered, that will do: upon

which, as he told me, he impeached him with great applause. D. (This note of lord Dartmouth was accidentally omitted by the bishop of Oxford in his transcript. Sir Thomas Mears was one of the leaders of the opposition to the court. Of the king and the duke his minister, whom he was at this time disposed to abandon, see more in the year 1679, p. 470. fol. edit. and in the year 1682, in a note at p. 514.)

^s See before, p. 373. O.

1675. what had passed in private discourse; to which I
 ——— thought I was not bound to answer, unless it were
 high treason. They pressed me long: and I would
 give them no other answer. So they all concluded,
 that I knew great matters; and reported this spe-
 cially to the house^t. Upon that I was sent for, and
 brought before the house. I stood upon it, as I had
 done at the committee, that I was not bound to an-
 swer; that nothing had passed that was high trea-
 son; and as to all other things, I did not think my
 self bound to discover them. I said farther, I knew
 duke Lauderdale was apt to say things in a heat,
 which he did not intend to do. And since he had
 380 used my self so ill, I thought my self the more
 obliged not to say any thing that looked like revenge
 for what I had met with from him. I was brought
 four times to the bar. At last I was told, the
 house thought they had a right to examine into
 every thing that concerned the safety of the nation,
 as well as into matters of treason: and they looked
 on me as bound to satisfy them: otherwise they
 would make me feel the weight of their heavy dis-
 pleasure, as one that concealed what they thought
 was necessary to be known. Upon this I yielded,
 and gave an account of the discourse formerly men-
 tioned^u. They laid great weight on this^x, and re-
 newed their address against duke Lauderdale.

^t See a very different ac-
 count of this examination in
 North's Examen. *Cole*.

^u P. 355. O. Treacherous
 villain. S.

^x They made no use of it;
 and the majority of the house
 did not seem to like its com-
 ing from him. See Journal of

the House of Commons, 21, 23,
 29. April 5.—May 6, 1675. O.
 (In Ralph's History of England,
 vol. I. p. 275, where the pro-
 ceedings against the duke of
 Lauderdale are mentioned, the
 alleged conversation between
 him and Burnet is detailed.)

I was much blamed for what I had done. Some, 1675.
 to make it look the worse, added, that I had been
 his chaplain, which was false ; and that I had been
 much obliged to him, though I had never received
 any real obligation from him, but had done him
 great services, for which I had been very unworthily
 requited. Yet the thing had an ill appearance, as
 the disclosing of what had passed in confidence ;
 though I make it a great question, how far even
 that ought to bind a man, when the designs are
 very wicked, and the person continued still in the
 same post and capacity of executing them. I have
 told the matter as it was, and must leave my self to
 the censure of the reader. My love to my country,
 and my private friendships, carried me perhaps too
 far^y; especially since I had declared much against
 clergymen's meddling in secular affairs, and yet had
 run my self so deep in them. [The truth is, I had
 been, for above a year, in a perpetual agitation, and
 was not calm or cool enough to reflect on my con-
 duct, as I ought to have done. I had lost much of
 a spirit of devotion and recollection, and so it was
 no wonder, if I even^z committed great errors.]

This broke me quite with the court, and in that
 respect proved a great blessing to me. It brought
 me out of many temptations ; the greatest of all be-
 ing the kindness that was growing upon me from
 the duke, which might have involved me into great
 difficulties, as it did expose me to much censure ; all
 which went off upon this occasion. And I applied
 my self to my studies, and my function, being then
 settled preacher at the rolls, and soon after lecturer
 of St. Clement's. I lived many years under the pro-

^y Right. S.

^z The word *even* omitted in Bowyer's Transcript.

1675. tecton of sir Harbottle Grimstone, master of the rolls, who continued steady in his favour to me, though the king sent secretary Williamson to desire him to dismiss me. He said he was an old man, fitting himself for another world, and he found my ministry useful to him ; so he prayed that he might be excused in that. He was a long and very kind patron to me. I continued ten years in that post, free from all necessities : and, I thank God, that was all I desired. But, since I was so long happy in so quiet a retreat, it seems but a just piece of gratitude, that I should give some account of that venerable old man.

Sir Har-
bottle
Grim-
stone's
character.

381 He was descended from a long-lived family ; for his great grandfather lived till he was ninety-eight, his grandfather to eighty-six, and his father to seventy-eight, and himself to eighty-two. He had to the last a great soundness of health, of memory, and of judgment. He was bred to the study of the law, being a younger brother. Upon his elder brother's death he threw it up. But falling in love with judge Crook's daughter, the father would not bestow her on him, unless he would return to his studies ; which he did with great success. That judge was one of those who delivered his judgment in the chequer-chamber against the ship-money, which he did with a long and learned argument. And sir Harbottle's father, who served in parliament for Essex, lay long in prison, because he would not pay the loan-money. Thus both his family and his wife's were zealous for the interest of their country. In the beginning of the long parliament he was a great asserter of the laws ; and inveighed severely against all that had been concerned in the former

1675.

illegal oppression. His principle was, that allegiance and protection were mutual obligations; and that the one went for the other. He thought the law was the measure of both; and that when a legal protection was denied to one that paid a legal allegiance, the subject had a right to defend himself. He was much troubled, when preachers asserted a divine right of regal government. He thought it had no other effect, but to give an ill impression of them as aspiring men: nobody was convinced by it: it inclined their hearers rather to suspect all they said besides: it looked like the sacrificing their country to their own preferment; and an encouraging of princes to turn tyrants. Yet when the long parliament engaged into the league with Scotland, he would not swear the covenant. And he discontinued sitting in the house till it was laid aside. Then he came back, and joined with Hollis, and the other presbyterians, in a high opposition to the independents, and to Cromwell in particular, as was told in the first book. And he was one of the secluded members that were forced out of the house. He followed afterwards the practice of the law, but was always looked at as one who wished well to the ancient government of England. So he was chosen speaker of that house that called home the king; and had so great a merit in that whole affair, that he was soon after, without any application of his own, made master of the rolls: in which post he continued to his death with a high reputation, as he well deserved it. For he was a just judge; very slow, and ready to hear every thing that was offered, without passion or partiality. I thought his only fault was, that he was too rich: and yet he

1675. gave yearly great sums in charity, discharging many prisoners by paying their debts. He was a very pious and devout man, and spent every day at least an hour in the morning, and as much at night, in prayer and meditation. And even in winter, when he was obliged to be very early on the bench, he took care to rise so soon, that he had always the command of that time which he gave to those exercises. He was much sharpened against popery; but

382 had always a tenderness to the dissenters^a, though he himself continued still in the communion of the church. His second wife, whom I knew, was niece to the great sir Francis Bacon: and was the last heir of that family. She had all the high notions for the church and the crown, in which she had been bred; but was the humblest, the devoutest, and best tempered person I ever knew of that sort^b. It was really a pleasure to hear her talk of religion: she did it with so much elevation and force. She was always very plain in her clothes: and went oft to gaols, to consider the wants of the prisoners, and relieve or discharge them; and by the meanness of her dress she passed but for a servant trusted with the charities of others. When she was travelling in the country, as she drew near a village, she often ordered her coach to stay behind till she had walked about it, giving orders for the instruction of the children, and leaving liberally for that end. With two such persons I spent several of my years very happily. But I now return to the session of parliament^c.

^a Burnet's test of all virtues. S.

^b Rogue. S.

^c Lord treasurer Oxford told

me, his father, sir Edward Harley, was very intimately acquainted with the master of the rolls; and when the bill of ex-

In the house of commons the business against duke Lauderdale was taken up warmly at three several times : and three several addresses were made to the king against him. The king's answer was, that he would protect no man against law and justice ; but would condemn none without special matter well made out. There was no money offered : so addresses were feeble things. The next attempt was against the earl of Danby, who had begun to invert the usual methods of the exchequer. But the majority were for him : so that charge came to nothing. Only those who begun it formed a party against him, that grew in conclusion to be too hard for him. He took a different method from those who were in the ministry before him. They had taken off the great and leading men : and left the herd as a despised company, who could do nothing, because they had none to head them. But lord Danby reckoned that the major number was the surer game : so he neglected the great men, who he thought raised their price too high ; and reckoned, that he could gain ten ordinary men, cheaper than one of those. This might have succeeded with him, if they that did lead his party had been wise and skilful men. But he seemed to be jealous of all such, as if they might gain too much credit with the king. The chief men that he made use of were of so low a size, that they were baffled in every debate. So that

1675.
Danby attacked, but
in vain.

clusion was depending, had communicated a secret of very great importance to him, which he trusted to Burnet, and by that means was soon known at court. Sir Harbottle knew he had spoke of it to nobody else, and

charged Burnet with having revealed it. He began to make some very awkward excuses ; which the master stopt, by telling him, that he himself was most to be blamed, for having mentioned it to any body. D.

1675. many, who were inclined enough to vote in all obedience, yet were ashamed to be in the vote on the side that was manifestly run down in the debate.

Seimour's
character.

The ablest man of his party was Seimour, who was the first speaker of the house of commons that was not bred to the law. He was a man of great birth, being the elder branch of the Seimour family; and was a graceful man, bold and quick. But [was the most immoral and impious man of his age;] he had a sort of a pride so peculiar to himself, that I
383 never saw any thing like it. He had neither shame nor decency with it^d. [And in all private dealings^e he was the unjustest and blackest man that has lived in our times.] He was violent against the court, till he forced himself into good posts. He was the most assuming speaker that ever sate in the chair. He knew the house and every man in it so well, that by looking about he could tell the fate of any question. So, if any thing was put, when the court party was not well gathered together, he would have held the house from doing any thing, by a wilful mistaking or mistating the question. By that he gave time to those who were appointed for that mercenary work, to go about and gather in all their party. And he would discern when they had got the majority. And then he would very fairly state

^d When he was speaker, his coach broke at Charing Cross, and he ordered the beadles to stop the next gentleman's they met, and bring it to him. The gentleman in it was much surprised to be turned out of his own coach, but sir Edward told him it was more proper for him

to walk in the streets, than the speaker of the house of commons; and left him so to do, without any further apology. D.

^e The words, *and public*, added in Beach's Extracts; *as well as in public*, added in Bowyer's Transcript.

the question, when he saw he was sure to carry 1675.
it.

A great many of the court grew to be so uneasy, especially when they saw the king was under the influence of French and popish counsels, that they were glad to be out of the way at critical times. On some occasions they would venture to vote against the court: of which the memorable answer of Harvey's^f, who was treasurer to the queen, was a noted instance. He was one whom the king loved personally: and yet upon a great occasion he voted against that which the king desired. So the king chid him severely for it. Next day, another important question falling in, he voted as the king would have him. So the king took notice of it at night; and said, You were not against me to day. He answered, No, sir, I was against my conscience to day. This was so gravely delivered, that the king seemed pleased with it: and it was much talked of. While things went thus in the house of commons, there was the greatest and longest debate in the house of lords that has been in all my time. They sat upon it often till midnight.

It was about the test that lord Danby had contrived, as was formerly mentioned. Lord Danby,^{Debates concerning a test.} and lord Finch, and some of the bishops, were the chief arguers for it. They said, it was necessary that a method should be found out, to discriminate the good subjects from the bad: we had been lately involved in a long civil war, occasioned by the ill principles that some had taken up with relation to government: it was fit to prevent the return of such

^f He was either father or uncle of the present earl of Bristol.
—He was uncle. O.

1675. miseries: the king had granted a very full indemnity,
— and had observed it religiously: but there was no reason, while so much of the old leaven still remained, to leave the nation exposed to men of such principles: it was not fit to make a parliament perpetual: yet that was a less evil, than to run the hazard of a bad election; especially when jealousies and fears had been blowed about the nation: a good constitution was to be preserved by all prudent methods: no man was to be pressed to take this test: but, as they, who were not willing to come into such an engagement, ought to have the modesty to be contented with the favour and connivance of the government, so, if that did not teach
384 them good manners, it might be fit to use severer tools. To all this, great opposition was made. It was plain, the duke did not like it: but the king was so set on it, that he did not declare himself against it. But all the papists were against it: they thought the bringing any test in practice would certainly bring on one that would turn them out of the house. The lord Shaftsbury, Buckingham, Hollis, Hallifax, and all those who were thought the country party, opposed this extremely. They thought there ought to be no tests, beyond the oath of allegiance, upon the elections to parliament: that it being the great privilege of Englishmen, that they were not to be taxed but by their representatives; it was therefore thought a disinheriting men of the main part of their birthright, to do any thing that should shut them out from their votes in electing: all tests in public assemblies were thought dangerous, and contrary to public liberty: for if a parliament thought any law inconvenient for the good of the

whole, they must be supposed still free to alter it: 1675.
and no previous limitation could bind up their legislature^g: a great deal was said, to shew that the peace of the world was best secured by good laws and good government; and that oaths or tests were no security: the scrupulous might be fettered by them: yet the bulk of the world would boldly take any test, and as boldly break through it; of which the late times had given large proofs: the matter of this test was very doubtful: for though, generally speaking, the king's person and his power were not to be distinguished, yet that was not universally true: an infant king, or a lunatic, were exceptions: as also a king in his enemies' hands; which was the case of Henry VI. for whose power his own party fought even against his person: so an exception was to be understood; otherwise the proposition, that affirmed it was a traitorous position to separate them, was not true: nor could it be reasonable to bind up men against alterations: every new law was an alteration: it was not easy to define how far the power of making alterations might go, and where it must stop: these things were best left at large: upon the whole matter, as they were against any parliamentary tests, so they were more particularly against this. Lord Shaftsbury distinguished himself more in this session than ever he had done before. He spoke once a whole hour, to shew the inconvenience of condemning all resistance upon any pretence whatsoever. He said, it might be proper to lay such ties upon those who served in the militia, and in corporations, because there was still a superior power in parliament to declare the extent

^g Wrong arguing. S.

1675. of the oath : but it might be of very ill consequence
 ————— to lay it on a parliament : since there might be cases,
 though so far out of view that it was hard to suppose
 them, in which he believed no man would say, it was
 not lawful to resist. If a king would make us a province,
 and tributary to France, and subdue
 385 the nation by a French army, or to the papal authority,
 must we be bound in that case tamely to submit? Upon
 which he said many things that did cut to the quick.
 And yet, though his words were watched, so that it was
 resolved to have sent him to the tower if any one word
 had fallen from him that had made him liable to such a
 censure, he spoke both with so much boldness and so much
 caution, that, though he provoked the court extremely,
 no advantage could be taken against him. The court carried
 every question in favour of the test, though with great
 opposition, and a protestation made upon every step that
 was carried. So that the bill was in a fair way to have
 passed : and very probably it would have passed in the
 house of commons, when, by an unlooked-for emergent,
 the session was broke.

A dispute
 about ap-
 peals and
 privileges.

Ever since the end of king James I.'s reign, petitions
 of appeal were brought to the house of lords from
 decrees in chancery. This rose from a parity of reason,
 because writs of error lay from the courts of law to
 the house of lords. And since the business of the
 chancery grew to be so extended and comprehensive,
 it was not thought safe to leave it to the lord
 chancellor's conscience. So this practice, though so
 lately begun, grew on by degrees to be the main
 business of the house of lords. A petition of appeal
 was brought against a member of the house of com-

mons. The lords received it, and made an order upon it. The member being served with it, brought it into the house of commons. And they voted it a breach of privilege, for the lords to meddle with one of their house. The lords, on the other hand, said, they were bound to do justice to all: and no privilege could lie against that: and, since they never sate but when the commons sate likewise, if a privilege from that house could stop their proceedings, there must be a failure in justice: and since no privilege was ever pretended in the case of a writ of error, it could not lie against an appeal. So they resolved to proceed in the cause. The commons passed a vote against any lawyers that should plead at the lords' bar in this cause. But the lords commanded the council to go on; with which they complied. And as they went from the lords' bar, they were by an order from the house of commons sent to the tower. But they were by another order from the lords set at liberty. So the two houses being as it were at war, it was necessary to put an end to the session. 1675.

This was very uneasy to the court: for they saw it was a very sure method to break a session of parliament, every time that it was taken up. I am not sure, if this was laid, or if it happened by accident. Lord Shaftsbury said, it was laid by himself. But others assured me, it happened in course, though it produced great effects: for there never was a strength in the court to raise this debate of the test in any subsequent session. And as this made the court apprehend they might by the prosecution of the same appeal lose the next session, since the prorogation did only discontinue parliamentary pro-

The session broke up on it.

386

1675. ceedings, but not judiciary ones ; so they feared this might go so far as to force a dissolution of the present parliament : to which the court would be very hardly brought, after they had practised so long upon the members, and knew them all so well.

In this session, on a day that grievances were to be gone upon, Grimstone said, that considering the extent of privilege, he looked on a standing parliament as the greatest grievance of the nation ; so many men being exempted from justice, and from the demands of their creditors, for so long and so indefinite a time. This motion was let fall at that time. But it was not forgot^h. And it was likely to be taken up, when new opportunities should be offered. The summer went over without any considerable accidents at home.

A session of
parliament.

A new session met next winter. And at the first opening it, the king laid before the commons the great difficulties he was in by the anticipations of his revenues. It was then generally thought, that the king was in such straits, that, if money could not be obtained, he must turn to other counsels and to other ministers. The debate went high in the committee of the whole house. It was offered on the one side to shew, that the king had not enough in his hands to maintain the government and to secure the nation : though our neutrality at that time made trade flow in upon us, so that the customs rose higher than ever. On the other hand it was said, that if anticipations were once admitted as a reason for a supply, the court would never want that reason. It was fit-

^h Old sir Christopher Musgrave used to say, that a good motion in parliament never died ; or a bad one ever do good to the man that made it. D.

ter to examine by whose means or on what design those anticipations were made. At last, the question was put. And the vote being then stated, and the previous question being then put, whether the main question should be then put or not, the votes were equal. So sir Charles Harbord, who was in the chair, gave it for putting the main question. But, some of the country side coming in between the two questions, the main question was lost by two or three. So near was the court to the carrying so great a point. Harbord was much blamed for his rashness. He said, the duty of the chair was always to set matters forward: and so he ought to have given it for putting the main question: and, if the same equality had continued, he said, he would have given it for the court. He was a very rich and covetous man, who knew England well: and his parts were very quick about him in that great age, being past eighty. A lively repartee was made by his own son to him in the debate. He had said, the right way of dealing with the king, and of gaining him to them, was, to lay their hands on their purses, and to deal roundly with him. So his son said, he seconded his motion: but he meant, that they should lay their hands on their purses, as he himself did, and hold them well shut, that no money should go out of them. The earl of Danby was much disappointed 387 at this. Yet he took heart, since it was brought so near, that he reckoned he would make the next session sure. The petition of appeal, that had broke the former session, was now brought on again before the lords. The court tried their whole strength to keep it off, till they saw what might be expected from the commons. So, upon the miscarriage of the

1675.

1675. great vote in the house of commons, the lords went on upon the petition: and, the commons opposing them vigorously, as before, it was visible that the parliament must be prorogued.

The characters of some parliament men.

Upon this it was proposed in the house of lords to address the king for dissolving the present parliament. It was manifest the two houses could no longer maintain the correspondence that was necessary. In a new parliament this must fall to the ground: but it could not while this lasted. It was said, a standing parliament changed the constitution of Englandⁱ. The king did no more consult with his people, nor know them: but he had now a cabal of single persons to deal with. The people were now cut off from their liberty of electing; and so had no more a true representative. It was said, that a parliament of a long continuance would be either an engine to sell the liberties of their country, or would, by rendering themselves popular, join with the people against the crown. In either case it was like to be destructive to the constitution. So it was moved, that an address should be made to the king for dissolving the parliament^k. And, to the wonder of all men, the duke joined in it. The majority of the temporal lords were for it. But the bench of bishops was against it: and so it was not carried. The thing became the universal subject of discourse. It was infused into the members of the house of commons, that, if they would not be more tractable, and help the king out of his necessities, he was sure a new parliament would give him money, and make

ⁱ The present case under thing now will do but septennial parliaments. S.
K. G(eorge). S.

^k *Tempora mutantur*; for no-

him easy; and that the rather for having dissolved 1675.
 them. This wrought on many of them, who had
 been chosen while the nation was in a fit, or rather
 a fury, of loyalty. They knew, they could never
 hope to be chosen again. Many of them were
 ruined in their fortunes, and lived upon their privi-
 leges and upon their pensions. They had got it
 among them for a maxim, which contributed not a
 little to our preservation while we were in such
 hands, that, as they must not give the king too
 much at a time, lest there should be no more use of
 them, so they were to take care not to starve the
 court, lest they themselves should be starved by that
 means. They were indeed generally both against
 popery and France. And, to redeem their credit
 for the money that they were ready to give some-
 what too lavishly, they said, when they went into
 their countries, that it was on design to fix the king
 to an English interest and the protestant religion. 388
 And they had talked so high on those heads, that the
 court itself could not manage them, when any thing
 relating to these came before them. Some of them
 were high for the prerogative: others high for the
 church: and all the mercenary men were careful of
 themselves. In opposition to these a great party was
 formed, who declared more heartily for the protestant
 religion, and for the interest of England¹. The duke
 of Buckingham and the earl of Shaftsbury opened
 many of their eyes, and let them know the designs
 of the court. And indeed they were then so visible,
 that there was enough seen, without such secret in-
 telligence, to convince the most incredulous. Sir

¹ So it seems the church and the protestant religion are quite different. *Cole.*

1675. William Coventry had the greatest credit of any man in the house. He never meddled personally with any minister. He had a perfect understanding of affairs. So he laid open the errors of the government with the more authority, because he mixed no passion nor private resentments with it. His brother usually answered him with much life in a repartee, but not with the weight and force with which he spoke. Colonel Birch was a man of a peculiar character. He had been a carrier at first, and retained still, even to an affectation, the clownishness of his education^m. He got up in the progress of the war to be a colonel, and to be concerned in the excise. And at the restoration he was found to be so useful in managing the excise, that he was put in a good post. He was the roughest and boldest speaker in the house; and talked in the language and phrases of a carrier, but with a beauty and eloquence that was always acceptable. I heard

^m Sir Edward Seimour reflected upon him very grossly once in a debate, for his former profession; to which he answered very calmly, that it was true he had been a carrier, and believed if that worthy gentleman had ever been so, he would have been so still. King Charles the second told him, upon something he had moved in the house of commons, that he remembered forty-one, to which he replied, that he remembered forty-eight. For which the duke of Monmouth would have had him sent to the Porter's Lodge, but the king would not suffer it. D. There was a saying of his to this Mr. Coventry, which was

then and has since been much talked of, and should not be forgotten. Coventry had, in some debate in the house of commons, in which Birch had spoken of the other side, reflected on Birch's having been a carrier; upon which Birch got up and said, "It is very true, what that gentleman says, I was a carrier *once*; and let me tell that gentleman it is very fortunate for him he never was a carrier, for if *he* had been a carrier, he would have been a carrier *still*." Birch, as I have heard from a member of his time, that was then a young man, though old, was at the head of their club in Cannon Row. O.

Coventry say, he was the best speaker to carry a popular assembly before him that he had ever known. He spoke always with much life and heat. But judgment was not his talent. Waller was the delight of the house: and even at eighty he said the liveliest things of any among them: he was only concerned to say that which should make him be applauded. But he never laid the business of the house to heart, being a vain and empty, though a witty, man. He deserves the character of being one of the great refiners of our language and poetry. He was for near sixty years one of the best of all our writers that way. The two men of quality that were the most considered were the lord Russell and the lord Cavendish. Lord Russell was a man of great candour, and of a general reputation; universally beloved and trusted; of a generous and obliging temper. He had given such proofs of an undaunted courage and of an unshaken firmness, that I never knew any man have so entire a credit in the nation as he had. He quickly got out of some of the disorders into which the court had drawn him. And ever after that, his life was unblemished in all respects. He had, from his first education, an inclination to favour the non-conformistsⁿ; and wished the laws could have been made easier to them, or they more pliant to the law. He was a slow man, and of little discourse: but he had a true judgment, when he considered things at his own leisure. His understanding was not defective: but his virtues were so eminent, that they would have more than balanced real defects, if any had been found in the other. Lord Cavendish, after-

1675.

ⁿ So have all the author's favourites. S.

1675. wards earl, and then duke, of Devonshire, was too much a libertine both in principle and practice. He went off from the court at first upon resentments for some disappointments there. He was [an ambitious and revengeful man; but he had the courage of an hero, with a much greater proportion of wit and knowledge than is usual in men of his birth. He had a softness in his exterior deportment to which there was nothing within that was answerable °.] Littleton and Powle were the men that laid the matters of the house with the greatest dexterity and care. Powle was very learned in precedents, and parliament journals, which goes a great way in their debates: and, when he had time to prepare himself^P, he was a clear and strong speaker. Littleton was the ablest and the vehementest arguer of them all. He commonly lay quiet till the end of a debate: and he often ended it, speaking with a strain of conviction and authority that was not easily resisted. I lived the very next door to him for several years: and we spent a great deal of our time every day together. He told me all their management: and commonly, when he was to put his whole strength to argue any point, he used to talk it over with me, and to set me to object all that I could against him. He lived wholly in London. So matters were most in his hands during the intervals of parliament. And by his means it was, that I arrived at such knowledge of their intrigues.

° In the printed book was substituted, *He was ambitious, and had the courage of a hero, with an unusual proportion both of wit and knowledge. He had a great softness in his exterior*

deportment.

^P I have seen many of his occasional speeches, and they are all very good, and do not deserve this distinction upon them. O.

He was a wise and worthy man, had studied much modern history, and the present state and interest of Europe. Sir Thomas Lee was a man that valued himself upon artifice and cunning, in which he was a great master, without being out of countenance when it was discovered^q. Vaughan, the chief justice's son, was a man of great integrity, had much pride, but did great service. These were the chief men that preserved the nation from a very deceitful and practising court, and from a corrupt house of commons. And by their skill and firmness they, from a small number, who began the opposition, grew at last to be the majority^r. 1675.

All this I thought fit to lay together, and to fill as it were an empty place in my history: for, as our main business lay in preparing for, or managing a session of parliament, so we had now a long interval, of above a year, between this session in winter 1675, and the next session of parliament, which was not till the spring in 1677. The French were 1676.

A long interval between the sessions of parliament.

^q He agreed to second the motion for 1,200,000*l.* for six thousand pounds, which one of the clerks of the treasury was to bring in a hackney coach to Fleet Ditch, where Lee was to meet him in another, and upon a sign given, they were to change coaches: which was executed accordingly; but, unluckily, the coachman knew them both, and told what he had seen. D.

^r He should have mentioned Sacheverel here, who was very eminent among them, and inferior to few in his abilities. I

have had this from one who knew him in parliament, and I have seen many of his speeches, which manifest this to have been his character. He may be seen in the conference between the two houses about the abdication. The same person used to talk very highly of Garway also, and thought them the ablest parliament men of their time; and so they have been generally deemed, and were much spoken of as such, long after their deaths, which happened not a great while after the revolution. O.

1676. much set on procuring a peace. And they, seeing
 ————— how much the parliament was set on engaging the
 king in the alliance, prevailed with him to discon-
 tinue the session ; for which, no doubt, he had round
 sums of money sent to him ^s.

An account
 of some
 passages of
 Lockhart's
 courage in
 France.

390

About this time Lockhart the ambassador in
 France died. The farther he saw into the designs
 of the court, he grew the more uneasy in the post
 he was in, though he acted in it with great spirit
 and resolution, both with relation to his own master
 and to the French king : of which I will set down
 two passages, that may be very instructive to am-
 bassadors. In this time of neutrality the French
 privateers took many English ships, pretending they
 were Dutch, only with English passes. One of these
 was taken by a privateer, that, as was believed, Pe-
 pys, then secretary to the English admiralty, and
 in great favour with the duke, had built ; and, as
 was said, out of the king's stores. The merchants
 proved in council, that the ship was English. So
 Lockhart had an order to demand her : and he
 pressed it so effectually, that an order was sent from
 the court of France to discharge her. But before
 that was executed, the king was prevailed on by
 Pepys, to tell the French ambassador, that he did
 not concern himself in that ship : he believed mer-
 chants were rogues, and could bring witnesses to
 prove whatsoever they had a mind to : so the court

^s “ (Rouvigny (the French
 “ ambassador) writes, 2d Sep-
 “ tember, 1674, that Charles
 “ had agreed either to prorogue
 “ his parliament till April 1675,
 “ in consideration of 500,000
 “ crowns, or if he convened it
 “ in November, to dissolve it
 “ in case it should refuse to
 “ give him money ; in consi-
 “ deration of which he was to
 “ have a pension of 100,000*l*.
 “ from France.” *Appendix to*
Dalrymple's Memoirs of Great
Britain and Ireland, p. 99.)

of France might do what they pleased in that matter. This was writ to Versailles a day or two after the former order was sent. But upon it a new one went to Dunkirk, where the ship lay, to stop her. This came before she could get out. So Lockhart, being informed of that, went to court, and complained heavily. He was told what the king himself had said about it. He answered resolutely, that the king spoke to them only by him. Yet he wrote upon this to the court of England, desiring to be recalled, since he could serve no longer with honour, after he had been so disowned. Upon this the king wrote him a letter with his own pen, excusing the matter the best he could; and justified him in what he had done. And upon that secret orders were sent, and the ship was discharged. The other was a higher point, considering the bigotry of the king of France. Lockhart had a French popish servant, who was dying, and sent for the sacrament. Upon which it was brought with the procession ordinary in such cases. Lockhart, hearing of this, ordered his gates to be shut. And upon that many were inflamed, and were running to force his gates: but he ordered all his family to stand to their arms, and, if any force was offered, to fire. There was a great noise made of this. But no force was offered. He resolved to complain first; and so went to court, and expostulated upon it. He said, his house was his master's house: and here a public triumph was attempted on his master's religion, and affronts were offered him: he said, if a priest had brought the sacrament privately, he would have connived at it: but he asked reparation for so public an injury. The king of France seemed

1676.

1676. to be highly displeased at this, calling it the greatest
 ——— indignity that had ever been done to his God during
 his reign. Yet the point did not bear arguing: so
 Lockhart said nothing to that. When Lockhart
 went from him, Pompone followed him, sent after
 391 him by the king; and told him, he would force the
 king to suffer none of his subjects to serve him. He
 answered, he would order his coachman to drive the
 quicker to Paris, to prevent that; and left Pompone
 to guess the meaning. As soon as he came to his
 house, he ordered all his French servants to be im-
 mediately paid off, and dismissed. The court of
 England was forced to justify him in all this matter.
 A public letter of thanks was writ to him upon it.
 And the court of France thought it fit to digest it.
 But the French king looked on him ever after with
 great coldness, if not with aversion^t. Soon after
 that, he fell into a languishing, which, after some
 months, carried him off. I have ever looked on
 him as the greatest man that his country produced
 in this age, next to sir Robert Murray.

Manage-
 ment in
 France.

The earl of Danby began now to talk against the
 French interest with open mouth. Rouvigny stayed
 but two years in England: for though he served his
 master's interests but too well, yet the popish party
 could not bear the want of a chapel in the French
 ambassador's house. So he was recalled: and Cour-
 tin was sent in his room. Before he parted, he
 talked roundly with lord Danby: he said, he was
 going into popular interests against those of his mas-
 ter's honour, who having engaged the king of France
 in the war, and being forced to leave him to fight
 it out alone, ought not to turn against him; espe-

^t No wonder. *Cole.*

cially, since the king of France referred every thing 1676.

to him as the arbiter and mediator of the peace: he remembered him of the old duke of Buckingham's fate, who thought to become popular by breaking the Spanish match; and it was his ruin: he said, the king of France was the king's best friend and truest ally: and if he made the king forsake him, and depend on his parliament, being so tempered as they were then, both the king and he might come to repent it, when it was too late. I had all this from himself. To this lord Danby replied, that he spoke as a faithful servant to his own master, and that he himself would act as a faithful servant to his master. Courtin spoke a great deal to the same purpose, in the prince of Condé's presence, when I had the honour to wait on him. He told me, there was a strange reverse in things: lord Danby was at that time suffering for being in the French interest: and lord Montague^u was popular as being against it: whereas, to his knowledge, during his employment in England, lord Danby was an enemy to their interest, as much as lord Montague was for it. I can say nothing as to one point, whether any great sums came over from France all this while, or not. Some watched the rising and falling of the exchange, by which men skilful in those matters can judge, when any great sum passes from one kingdom to another, either in specie or by bill: but they could never find out any thing to make them conclude it was done. Lord Montague told me, he tried often to get into that secret, but in vain: he often said to the king, that, 392 if he would trust him, he could make better bargains for him than others had made: but the king

^u Not then a lord. O.

1676. never answered him a word on that head: and he believed, that what sums soever came over, they were only to the duchess of Portsmouth, or to the king's privy purse; and that the French ambassador had the sole managing of that matter, the king perhaps not being willing to trust any of his own subjects with so important and so dangerous a secret. In all companies the earl of Danby was declaring openly against France and popery. And the see of London falling then void by Henchman's death, he brought Compton, brother to the earl of Northampton, to succeed him. He was made bishop of Oxford, upon Crew's being promoted to Duresme, [who, bating the dignity of being born of a noble, though puritan family, had not any one quality to recommend him to so great a post, unless obedience and compliance could supply all other defects. He has neither learning nor good sense, and is no preacher. He was a fawning abject slave to the court. And thus was raised, and has been now for above thirty years possessed of the greatest income in the church ^x.]

The character of some bishops.

Compton [was a man of a much better form; he] carried arms for some years. When he was past thirty, he took orders. He was an humble and modest man. He applied himself more to his function than bishops had commonly done. He went much about his diocese; and preached, and confirmed in many places. His preaching was without much life or learning: for he had not gone through his studies with the exactness that was fitting. [And he was not ready in his expressions ^y.] He was a great patron of the converts from popery, and of those protestants,

^x (See below, p. 822, folio edit.)

^y Bowyer's Transcript.

whom the bad usage they were beginning to meet with in France drove over to us: and by these means he came to have a great reputation. He was making many complaints to the king, and often in council, of the insolence of the papists, and of Coleman's in particular^z. So that the king ordered the duke to dismiss Coleman out of his service. Yet he continued still in his confidence. But with these good qualities Compton was a weak man, wilful, and strangely wedded to a party^a. He was a property to lord Danby, and was turned by him as he pleased. The duke hated him. But lord Danby persuaded both the king and him, that, as his heat did no great hurt to any person, so the giving way to it helped to lay the jealousies of the church party. About a year after that, Sheldon dying, Compton was persuaded that lord Danby had tried with all his strength to promote him to Canterbury; though that was never once intended. There were none of the order, that were in any sort fitted to fill that see, whom the court could trust.

Sancroft, dean of St. Paul's, was raised to it. He was a man of solemn deportment, had a sullen gravity in his looks, and was considerably learned. He had put on a monastic strictness, and lived abstracted from company. These things, together with his living unmarried, and his being fixed in the old

^z Mrs. Cornwallis, a Roman catholic, was in great favour with the princess Ann, and had introduced her friend Mrs. Churchill, since duchess of Marlborough, who soon found, if she could get rid of her introductress, she should have the entire confidence to herself:

and bishop Compton was made use of, to take notice at the council of the dangerous consequence such a woman's being about the princess might have; upon which Mrs. Cornwallis was ordered never to come into her presence more. D.

^a He means, to the church. S.

1676. maxims of high loyalty, and a superstitious valuing
 of little things, made the court conclude, that he
 was a man who might be entirely gained to serve
 all their ends : or, at least, that he would be an un-
 active speculative man, and give them little opposi-
 tion in any thing that they might attempt, when
 they had more promising opportunities. [And in
 this their hope did not fail them^b.] He was a dry,
 393 cold man, reserved and peevish ; so that none loved
 him, and few esteemed him^c : yet the high church
 party were well pleased with his promotion.

As lord Danby thus raised his creatures in the
 church, so he got all men turned out of their places,
 that did not entirely depend on him : and went on
 in his credit with the king, still assuring him, that,
 if he would leave things to his conduct, he would
 certainly bring about the whole cavalier party again
 to him. And such was the corruption and poverty
 of that party, that, had it not been that French
 and popish counsels were so visible in the whole

^b Bowyer's Transcript of the suppressed passages.

^c False and detracting. S. But compare this with the character of this archbishop, in the author's second volume of the History of the Reformation, p. 379. O. See a different account of this archbishop in Mr. Nelson's Life of Bishop Bull, Bishop of St. David's. Vide notes, p. 1. *Cole*. (Dr. D'Oyley, in his life of the archbishop lately published, well observes, " that the government of the
 " church could not have been
 " entrusted to one more firm
 " and temperate in the exer-
 " cise of his authority, more

" watchful over its general in-
 " terests, or more intrepid in
 " the defence of its rights and
 " privileges at the hour of pe-
 " ril." Vol. I. p. 153. Antho-
 ny Wood, who, in his *Athenæ*
 Oxon, praises Sancroft for his
 unexceptionable conduct, pru-
 dence, and moderation, whilst
 he sat in the chair of Canter-
 bury, yet in his Diary, p. 273,
 calls him " a clownish odd fel-
 " low ;" pretty much his own
 character. But see more con-
 cerning this learned and con-
 scientious prelate at page 676
 and pages 802. 810. of this
 History, folio edition.)

course of our affairs, he had very probably gained 1676.
 them to have raised the king's power, and to have
 extirpated the dissenters, and to have brought
 things very near to the state they were in, in king
 Charles I.'s time, before the war.

All this while the papists were not idle. They The pro-
 jects of the
 papists. tried their strength with the king to get the parlia-
 ment dissolved: in which their hopes carried them
 so far, that Coleman drew a declaration for justify-
 ing it. Their design in this was, once to divide the
 king and his people: for they reckoned the new
 parliament would not be so easy to him as this was.
 For how angry soever this was at him, and he some-
 times at them, yet they saw that a severe act against
 popery, or some steps made against France, would
 dispose them to forget all former quarrels, and to
 give money. And as the king always wanted that,
 and loved to be easy, so the prospect of it was ever
 in his view. They feared, that at some time or
 other this might make him both sacrifice popery, and
 forsake France. So they took all possible methods
 to engage the king to a more entire dependence
 on France, and to a distrust of his own people.
 They were labouring for a general peace in all
 courts where they had any interest. The prince of
 Orange's obstinacy was the common subject of their
 complaints. Lord Shaftsbury tried, upon the duke's
 concurring in the vote for an address to have the
 parliament dissolved, if he could separate him from
 the earl of Danby. And he sent a message to him
 by the lord Stafford, that his voting as he did in
 that matter had gained much on many who were for-
 merly his enemies: he wished he would use his in-
 terest with the king to get that brought about:

1676. and he durst undertake, that a new parliament
 ————— should be more inclinable to grant the papists a toleration, than they would ever find this would prove.

Coleman's
 intrigues.

But the duke and lord Danby were too firmly united to be easily divided : for whatever lord Danby gave out, he made the duke believe, that all that he intended would really turn to his service. Coleman was very busy in writing many letters to all places, but chiefly to the court of France. He was in all his despatches setting forth the good state of the
 394 duke's affairs, and the great strength he was daily gaining. He was either very sanguine, if he believed this himself, or very bold in offering to impose it so positively on others. He was always full of assurances, that, if a peace could be brought about, so that the king of France was set at liberty to assist them with his purse and his force, they were never in such hopes of succeeding in the great design of rooting out this pestilent heresy, that had so long overrun these northern kingdoms, as now. He had a friend, one sir William Throgmorton, of whom he intended to make great use. He and his wife had prevailed with him and his lady to change their religion. And so he sent them over to France, recommending him to the king's confessor, F. Ferrier, as a man that might do them great service, if he could be made one of theirs. So Ferrier, looking on him as a man of importance, applied himself to turn him, which was soon done. And the confessor, to raise the value of his convert, spoke of him to the king in such a strain, that he was much considered. When his lady abjured, the duke of Orleans led her up to the altar. He took great state on

him, and soon spent all he had. He was a busy man between the two courts. But before he got into any considerable post, Ferrier died: and the new confessor did not take such care of him as his predecessor had done. So he was forced to quit his high living, and retire to a private house. And he sent his lady into a monastery. Yet he continued still to be Coleman's agent and correspondent. He went often to see an English lady, that was of their religion, lady Brown. And being one day with her, he received a deep wound by a knife struck into his thigh, that pierced the great artery. Whether the lady did it to defend herself, or he to shew the violence of his passion, was not known. It was not possible to stop the bleeding. Yet the lady would have him carried out of her house. He died in the house of one Hollman, an eminent man of their religion, then at Paris. The whole matter was carried off in such secrecy, that Lockhart, then at Paris, could never penetrate further into it. I had this from his lady after his death. [I love not to make judgments on extraordinary events; but this man's fate, and Coleman's, together with his wife's, who cut her own throat, and had a large share in all he did, were no usual things.]

Coleman quickly found out another correspondent, that was more useful to him than he whom he lost could ever have been, F. St. German, a Jesuit, who was sent over with the duchess, and passed for her confessor, though I have been assured that was a mistake. He had all the heat of his order in him, and was apt to talk very boldly. I was sometimes in company with him. He was complained of in council by the bishop of London for some practice

1676.

1676. on one that was come over a convert, whom he was
— between threatening and persuasion working on, in
order to the sending him back. This came to be
discovered. Upon which he fled. And on him Cole-
man fixed for his chief correspondent. Howard was
about this time by cardinal Altieri's means promoted
395 to be a cardinal. And upon that the king and duke
sent compliments to Rome. This opened a nego-
tiation with that court, that was put in the hands of
the internuncio at Brussels. So it was proposed,
that a sum of money should be given the king, if
in return of that some suitable favours for those of
their religion could be obtained. Coleman was sent
over by the duke to Brussels, to treat about it, none
being in the secret but the lord Arundell. Yet, as
he understood it, the king himself knew of it. When
he went thither, he found the sum offered was so
small, and the conditions demanded were so high,
that he made no progress in the negotiation. What-
soever Coleman did in the main business, he took
good care of himself. All his letters were full of
their being able to do nothing for want of money.
And he made the French ambassador believe, he
could do his master great service, if he was well sup-
plied. He got once 2500 guineas from him, to gain
his master some friends. But he applied it all to
furnish out his own expense. He was at that time
so lifted up, that he had a mind to pass for the head
of the party. And of this I will give one instance,
in which I my self had a share.

Sir Philip Terwhit, a papist, had married a zeal-
ous protestant, who suspecting his religion, charged
him with it. But he denied it before marriage;
and carried that so far, that he received the sacra-

ment with her in her own church. After they were married, she found that he had deceived her; and they lived untowardly together. At this time some scruples were put in her head, with which she acquainted me, and seemed fully satisfied with the answers that I gave her. She came afterwards to me, and desired I would come to her house, and talk of all those matters with some that her husband would bring to meet us. I told her, I would not decline the thing, if desired, though I seldom knew good come of such conferences. She made the same proposition to Dr. Stillingfleet; and he gave the same answer. So a day was set, and we went thither, and found ten or twelve persons, that were not known to us. We were scarce set down, when Coleman came in, who took the whole debate upon him. I writ down a very exact account of all that passed, and sent it to them, and had their additions to it: and I printed it. The thing made a great noise, and was a new indication of Coleman's arrogance. Soon after that, the lady, who continued firm upon this conference, was possessed with new scruples about the validity of our ordinations. I got from her the paper that was put in her hand, and answered it: and she seemed satisfied with that likewise. But afterwards the uneasiness of her life prevailed more on her than her scruples did; and she changed her religion.

A conference between Coleman and some divines.

Some time after I had printed the memoirs of the dukes of Hamilton, which were favourably received, the reading of these got me the acquaintance and friendship of sir William Jones, then attorney general. He was raised to that high post merely by merit, and by his being thought the greatest man of

I undertook to write the history of our reformation.

396

1676. the law : for, as he was no flatterer, but a man of a morose temper, so he was against all the measures that they took at court. They were weary of him, and were raising sir John King to vie with him : but he died in his rise, which indeed went on very quick. Jones was an honest and wise man. He had a roughness in his deportment that was very disagreeable : but he was a good natured man at bottom, and a faithful friend. He grew weary of his employment, and laid it down : and though the great seal was offered him, he would not accept of it, nor return to business. The quickness of his thoughts carried his views far. And the sourness of his temper made him too apt both to suspect and to despise most of those that came to him. My way of writing history^d [made him think I was cut out for it^e.] And so he pressed me to undertake the history of England. But Sanders's book, that was then translated into French, and cried up much in France, made all my friends [conclude I was the fittest man^f] to answer it, by writing the history of the reformation. So now all my thoughts were turned that way. I laid out for MSS. and searched into all offices. I got for some days into the Cotton library. But duke Lauderdale, hearing of my design, and apprehending it might succeed in my hands, got Dolben, bishop of Rochester, to divert sir John Cotton from suffering me to search into his library. He told him, I was a great enemy to the prerogative, to which Cotton was devoted, even to slavery^g. So he

^d Very modest. S.

^e The editors substituted, *pleased him*.

^f *Press me* was substituted.

^g The word *prerogative* has

been much used, though seldom understood, and as little by the bishop as any. The notion the greatest men of our law have had of it, has been, that it is a

said, I would certainly make an ill use of all I had found. This wrought so much on him, that I was no more admitted, till my first volume was published. And then, when he saw how I had composed it, he gave me free access to it. 1676.

At this time the earl of Essex was brought over from being lord lieutenant of Ireland, whose friendship to me was afterwards such, that I think my self obliged to stop, and to give some account of him. He was the lord Capell's son. His education was neglected by reason of the war. But, when he was at man's age, he made himself master of the Latin tongue, and made a great progress in mathematics, and in all the other parts of learning. He knew our law and constitution well, and was a very thoughtful man. He began soon to appear against the court. The king imputed it to his resentments: so he resolved to make use of him. He sent him ambassador to Denmark, where his behaviour in the affair of the flag gained him much reputation: though he said to me, there was nothing in it. That king had

The earl of Essex's character.

power lodged in the crown for which there is no law, but not repugnant to any law. The meaning is, the execution of the law being vested in the king, and it being impossible the legislature should foresee all cases that may happen, have left a power with the chief magistrate to use his discretion upon extraordinary occasions, where the rigour of the law may prove unjust or oppressive, and to exercise the supreme authority in all cases where the law has not directed or limited the execution. But which way sir

John Cotton, who was a very worthy honest gentleman, that understood and loved the constitution of his country, could be devoted, even to slavery, to the prerogative, the bishop would have done well to have produced some better proof for, than his own saying so. But I believe nobody will wonder at his being cautious how he trusted a Scotch divine in searching for English records, though neither bishop Dolben nor duke Lauderdale had interposed. D.

1676. ordered the governor of Croonenburgh to make all ships that passed strike to him. So when lord Essex was sailing by, he sent to him, either to strike to him, or to sail by in the night, or to keep out of his reach : otherwise he must shoot, first with powder, but next with ball. Lord Essex sent him a resolute answer, that the kings of England made others strike

397 to them, but their ships struck to none : he would not steal through in the dark, nor keep out of his reach : and if he shot at him, he would defend him-

His em-
ployment in
Denmark.

self. The governor did shoot at him, but on design shot over him. This was thought great bravery in him : yet he reckoned, it was impossible the governor would endeavour to sink a ship that brought over an ambassador. While he was there, the king died, which made a great change in the court. For that king had made one of his servants stadtholder ; which was indeed a strange thing, he himself being upon the place. He was but a mean person, and was advanced by the favour the queen bore him. Lord Essex's first business was to justify his behaviour in refusing to strike. Now at his going from England sir John Cotton had desired him to take some volumes of his library that related to Danish affairs ; which he took, without apprehending that he should have great occasion to use them : but this accident made him search into them. And he found very good materials to justify his conduct ; since by formal treaties it had been expressly stipulated, that the English ships of war should not strike in the Danish seas. This raised his character so high at court, that it was writ over to him, that he might expect every thing he should pretend to at his return. The change of government that he saw in Denmark,

and the bringing it about with so little difficulty, 1676.
made a great impression on him: since one of the freest nations in the world was on a sudden brought under a most arbitrary form of government. Many of the ancient nobility seemed uneasy under the change. And even the chancellor himself, though raised by favour from very mean beginnings, could not forbear to lament even to him the change of their constitution.

Upon his return from Denmark, he was made lord lieutenant of Ireland. He could never understand how he came to be raised to that post; for he had not pretended to it: and he was a violent enemy to popery; not so much from any fixed principle in religion, in which he was too loose, as because he looked on it as an invasion made on the freedom of human nature. In his government of Ireland he exceeded all that had gone before him; and is still considered as a pattern to all that come after him. He studied to understand exactly well the constitution, and interest of the nation. He read over all their council books; and made large abstracts out of them, to guide him, so as to advance every thing that had been at any time set on foot for the good of the kingdom. He made several volumes of tables of the state, and persons that were in every county and town; and got true characters of all that were capable to serve the public. And he preferred men always upon merit, without any application from themselves; and watched over all about him, that there should be no bribes going among his servants. The revenue of Ireland was then in the earl of Ranelagh's management; who was one of the ablest men that island had bred, capable of all affairs, even

1676. in the midst of a loose run of pleasure, and much riot. He had the art of pleasing masters of very different tempers and interests so much, that he continued above thirty years in great posts. He had undertaken to furnish the king with money for the building of Windsor out of the revenue of Ireland. And it was believed the duchess of Portsmouth had a great yearly pension out of his office. By this means payments in Ireland were not regularly made. So the earl of Essex complained of this. The king would not own how much he had from lord Ranelagh, but pressed lord Essex to pass his accounts. He answered, he could not pass them as accounts : but, if the king would forgive lord Ranelagh, he would pass a discharge, but not an ill account. The king was not pleased with this, nor with his exactness in that government : it reproached his own too much. So he took a resolution about this time to put the duke of Ormond in it again^h. Upon this occasion the earl of Essex told me, that he knew the king did often take money into his privy purse, to defraud his exchequer : for he reckoned that what was carried thither, was not so much his own, as his privy purse was. And Coventry told lord Essex, that there was once a plantation-cause at the council board : and he was troubled to see the king espouse the worst side : and upon that he went to him, and told him secretly, that it was a vile cause which he was supporting : the king answered him, he had got good money for doing it.

^h (Compare Carte's Life of the Duke of Ormond, vol. II. p. 463. He calls it a strange and gross mistake in our historian to represent this, as a ground of the king's resolution for putting the duke again into the government of Ireland.)

About this time there was a proposition made for farming the revenue of Ireland. And lord Danby seemed for some time to favour one set of men, who offered to farm it. But on the sudden he turned to another. The secret of this broke out, that he was to have great advantages by the second proposition. The matter was brought to the council table: and some were examined to it upon oath. Lord Widdrington did confess that he made offer of a round sum to lord Danby, but said that he did not accept of it. Lord Hallifax was yet of the council. So he observed that the lord treasurer had rejected that offer very mildly; but not so as to discourage a second attempt: it would be somewhat strange, if a man should ask the use of another man's wife, and if the other should indeed refuse it, but with great civility. This nettled lord Danby, who upon that got him to be dismissed from that board: at which the duke was much pleased, who hated lord Hallifax at that time, more even than the earl of Shaftsbury himself; for he had fallen severely on the declaration for toleration in the house of lords. He said, if we could make good the eastern compliment, *O king, live for ever!* he could trust the king with every thing; but since that was so much a compliment, that it could never become real, he could not be implicit in his confidence. Thus matters went on all 1676, and to the beginning of the (year) 1677, when 399 another session of parliament was held. I have brought within this year several things that may be of use to enlighten the reader as to the state of things, though perhaps of their own nature they were not important enough to deserve to be told. But in so bare a year, as this proved to be, it seemed no in-

1676. pertinent digression, to bring all such matters into the reader's way.

The affairs
of Scotland.

I shall next give some account of Scottish affairs. The duke of Lauderdale had mastered the opposition made to him so entirely, that men were now though silent, not quietⁱ. The field conventicles increased mightily. Men came to them armed. And upon that great numbers were outlawed: and a writ was issued out, that was indeed legal, but very seldom used, called *intercommoning*: because it made all that harboured such persons, or did not seize them, when they had it in their power, to be involved in the same guilt. By this means many, apprehending a severe prosecution, left their houses, and went about like a sort of banditti, and fell under a fierce and savage temper. The privy council upon this pretended they were in a state of war. And upon an old statute, that was almost quite forgot, it was set on foot, that the king had a power to take any castle that lay convenient for his forces, and put a garrison in it. So twelve houses were marked out: of which two were the chief dwelling-houses of two peers. The rest were the houses of gentlemen, that had gone into the party against duke Lauderdale. And though these were houses of no strength, and not at all properly situated for the suppressing of conventicles, yet they were taken. Soldiers were put in them. And the countries about were required to furnish those small garrisons with all things necessary. This was against the express words of the law that had lately settled the militia. Great opposition was made to it. Yet it was kept

ⁱ Nonsense, or printer's mistake. It should be, *silent, though not quiet*. S.

up above a year, till the houses were quite ruined by the rude soldiers, who understood that the more waste they made, it would be the more acceptable. At last it was let fall. 1676.

Another thing happened, scarce worth mentioning, if it was not for the effects that followed on it. One Carstairs, a loose and vicious gentleman^k, who had ruined his estate, undertook to Sharp to go about in disguise to see those conventicles, and to carry some with him to witness against such as they saw at them; in which he himself was not to appear; but he was to have a proportion of all the fines that should be set upon this evidence: and he was to have so much for every one of their teachers that he could catch. He had many different disguises, and passed by different names in every one of them. He found Kirkton, an eminent preacher among them, who was as cautious as the rest were bold, and had avoided all suspicious and dangerous meetings. Carstairs, seeing him walking on the streets of Edinburgh, told him, there was a person that was sick, and sent him to beg a visit from him. He suspecting nothing went with him. Carstairs 400 brought him to his own lodgings; and there he told him, he had a warrant against him, which he would execute, if he would not give him money to let him alone. Kirkton said, he had not offended, and was willing to go to prison till his innocence should appear. Carstairs really had no warrant: but, as was afterwards discovered, he had often taken this method, and had got money by it. So he went out to procure a warrant, and left Kirkton locked up in his chamber. Kirkton called to the people of the

^k Epithets well placed. S.

1676. house: and told them how he was trepanned. And he got one of them to seek Baillie of Jerviswood, his brother-in-law, who was a gentleman of great parts, but of much greater virtue. [He was indeed deeply possessed¹ with those principles, but was otherwise a most extraordinary man.] Carstairs could not find nine privy counsellors to sign a warrant, which were the number required by law. Yet when he came back, he pretended he had a warrant, and would force Kirkton to go to prison upon it. Kirkton refused to obey any such warrant, till he saw it. And upon that Carstairs struggled, and pulled him to the ground, and sate on him, the other crying out murder. At that time Baillie came to the door: and, hearing him cry out, he called to Carstairs to open the door: and, that not being done, he forced it, and found Carstairs sitting upon Kirkton. He drew his sword, and made him come off him. He then asked him, what warrant he had to use him as he did? He said, he had a warrant to carry him to prison: but he refused to shew it. Baillie offered to assist in executing it, if he had any: but he persisted in this, that he was not bound to shew it. Baillie made Kirkton to go out; and followed him, no violence being used; for which he had many witnesses, whom the noise had brought together. And he said, he was resolved to sue Carstairs for this riot. But before the next council-day a warrant was signed by nine privy counsellors, but antedated, for the committing of Kirkton, and of six or seven more of their preachers. Lord Athol told me, he was one of those who signed it with that false date to it. So Baillie was cited before the council:

¹ prejudiced, Bowyer's Transcript.

Carstairs produced his warrant, which he pretended he had at the time that Kirkton was in his hands, but did not think fit to shew, since that would discover the names of others, against whom he was also to make use of it. Baillie brought his witnesses to prove his behaviour. But they would not so much as examine them. It was said, that upon Carstairs saying he had a warrant, Kirkton was bound to go to gaol; and that, if it had been found that he was carried thither without a warrant, the gaoler would not have received him. Duke Hamilton and lord Kinkardin were yet upon the council. And they argued long against this way of proceeding, as liker a court of inquisition than a legal government. Yet Baillie was fined five hundred pounds, and condemned to a year's imprisonment. And upon this an occasion was taken to turn duke Hamilton and lord Kinkardin out of the council, as enemies to the church, and as favourers of conventicles.

The parliament of England had been prorogued for about a year and some months, by two different prorogations. One of these was for more than a year. So upon that it was made a question, whether by that the parliament was not dissolved. The argument for it was laid thus. By the ancient laws a parliament was to be held *once a year, and oftener if need be*: it was said, the words, *if need be*, in one act, which were not in another that enacted an annual parliament without that addition, did not belong to the whole period, by which a session was only to be held once a year if it was needful; but belonged only to the word *oftener*: so that the law

1676.

1677.

A question raised in England about the legality of a prorogation.

401

1677. was positive for a parliament once a year: and if so, then any act contrary to that law was an unlawful act: by consequence, it could have no operation: from whence it was inferred, that the prorogation which did run beyond a year, and by consequence made that the parliament could not sit that year, was illegal; and that therefore the parliament could not sit by virtue of such an illegal act. Lord Shaftsbury laid hold on this with great joy, and he thought to work his point by it. The duke of Buckingham was for every thing that would embroil matters^m. The earl of Salisbury was brought into it, who was a high-spirited man, and had a very ill opinion of the court. Lord Wharton went also into it. And lord Hollis writ a book for it: but a fit of the gout kept him out of the way. All the rest of the party was against it. They said, it was a subtilty: and it was very dangerous to hang so much weight upon such weak grounds. The words, *if need be*, had been understood to belong to the whole act: and the long parliament did not pretend to make annual parliaments necessary, but

^m He said in his speech on this occasion, "That ancient statutes were not like women, the worse for being old." "That the words of the statute were as plain as a pikestaff." I mention this as a specimen of the style of a wit, and of him, who upon his delivering to the commons, at a conference, the lord Clarendon's apology, sent to the lords upon his withdrawing out of the kingdom, said, "the lords desired to have it again, for it had a style they were in

"love with, and therefore desired to keep it." These last words of this duke are very like his manner, and have been generally asserted to have been spoken by him, and mentioned to be so by several historians; but the words are not in the Report made by the solicitor general (Finch) of the conference. See Journal of the House of Commons of 4th December 1667. The solicitor was a grave man. O. (The duke had before called it, "This scandalous and seditious paper.")

insisted only on a triennial parliament : if there had 1677.
 been need of a parliament during that long prorogation, the king by proclamation might have dissolved it, and called a new one. All that knew the temper of the house of commons were much troubled at this dispute, that was like to rise on such a point. It was very certain the majority of both houses, who only could judge it, would be against it. And they thought such an attempt to force a dissolution, would make the commons do every thing that the court desired. Lord Hallifax set himself much against this ; and did it not without expressing great sharpness against lord Shaftsbury, who could not be managed in this matter. So, upon the first opening the session, the debate was brought on : and these lords stood against the whole house. That matter was soon decided by a question.

But then a second debate rose, which held for 402
 two days, whether these lords were not liable to censure, for offering a debate, that might create great distractions in the subjects' minds, concerning the legality of parliament. Lord Hallifax, with the rest of the party, argued against it strongly. They said, if an idle motion was made, and checked at first, he that made it might be censured for it, though it was seldom, if ever, to be practised in a free council, where every man was not bound to be wise, nor to make no impertinent motion : but when the motion was entertained, and a debate followed, and a question was put upon it, it was destructive to the freedom of public councils, to call any one to an account for it : they might
 with the same justice call them to an account for
 their debates and votes : so that no man was safe,

The lords
that moved
it sent to
the Tower.

1677. unless he could know where the majority would be: here would be a precedent to tip down so many lords at a time, and to garboil the house, as often as any party should have a great majority. It was said, on the other hand, here was a design to put the nation into great disorder, and to bring the legality of a parliament into dispute. So it was carried to oblige them to ask pardon as delinquents: otherwise it was resolved to send them to the Tower. They refused to ask pardon; and so were sent thither. The earl of Salisbury was the first that was called on: for the duke of Buckingham went out of the house. He desired he might have his servants to wait on him: and the first he named was his cook; which the king resented highly, as carrying in it an insinuation of the worst sort. The earl of Shaftsbury made the same demand. But the lord Wharton did not ask for his cook. The duke of Buckingham came in next day; and was sent after them to the Tower. And they were ordered to continue prisoners during the pleasure of the house, or during the king's pleasure. They were much visited. So to check that, though no complaint was made of their behaviour, they were made close prisoners, not to be visited without leave from the king or the house: and particular observations were made of all those that asked leave. This was much cried out on: and the earl of Danby's long imprisonment afterwards, was thought a just retaliation for the violence with which he drove this on. Three of the lords lay in the Tower for some months: but they were set at liberty upon their petitioning the king. Lord Shaftsbury would not petition: but he moved in the king's bench that he

might be discharged. The king's justice, he said, ^{1677.} was to be dispensed in that court. The court said, ⁴⁰³ he was committed by an order from the house of lords, which was a court superior to them: so they could take no cognizance of the matter. Lord Danby censured this motion highly, as done in contempt of the house of lords; and said, he would make use of it against him next session of parliament. Yet he was often forced to make the same motion at that bar: and he complained of the injustice of the court for refusing to bail or discharge him, though in that they followed the precedent which at this time was directed by himself.

The debate about the dissolution of the parliamentⁿ had the effect in the house of commons that ^{Proceedings in parliament.} was foreseen: for the commons were much inflamed against lord Shaftsbury and his party. They at first voted 600,000*l.* for the building thirty ships: for they resolved to begin with a popular bill. A clause was put in the bill by the country party, that the money should be accounted for to the commons, in hope that the lords would alter that clause, and make it accountable to both houses; which was

ⁿ But the validity of the prorogation was much debated there, not as making a dissolution of the parliament, but leaving the parliament under the former adjournment, and so this no new session; on this matter, upon the question for naming the grand committees, there was a division of 193 for the prorogation, and 142 against it. I have seen a good MS. account of this debate, (in a collection of Mr. Anchistel Gray's,) which appears there

to be very perplexed, especially as against the prorogation, although the length of the prorogation was a very silly measure. See Journal of the House of Commons of 16th, &c. of February, 1676. Note, this MS. collection of debates above mentioned, though called Mr. A. Gray's, I have proof, from a particular in it, that some part of it was made by Mr. Richard May, recorder of, and member for, Chichester. O.

1677. done by the lords, and conferences were held upon
 — it. The lords thought, that, since they paid their share of the tax, it was not reasonable to exclude them from the accounts. The commons adhered to their clause: and the bill was in great danger of being lost. But the king prevailed with the lords to recede. An additional excise, that had been formerly given, was now falling: so they continued that for three years longer. And they were in all things so compliant, that the court had not for many years had so hopeful a session as this was. But all was changed of a sudden.

Affairs in
 Flanders.

The king of France was then making one of his early campaigns in Flanders; in which he at first took Valenciennes, and then divided his army in two. He with one besieged Cambray: and the other, commanded by his brother, besieged St. Omer. But, though I intend to say little of foreign affairs, yet where I came to the knowledge of particulars that I have not seen in any printed relations, I will venture to set them down. Turenne's death was a great blow to the king of France; but not to his ministers, whom he despised, and who hated him. But the king had such a personal regard to him, that they were afraid of opposing him too much. He was both the most cautious and the most obliging general that ever commanded an army. He had the art of making every man love him, except those
 404 that thought they came in some competition with him: for he was apt to treat them with too much contempt. It was an extraordinary thing that a random cannon shot should have killed him^o. He

^o How extraordinary? Might it not kill him as well as another man? S.

sat by the balance of his body a while on the saddle, 1677.
 but fell down dead in the place: and a great design
 he had, which probably would have been fatal to the
 German army, died with him. The prince of Condé
 was sent to command the army, to his great afflic-
 tion: for this was a declaration that he was esteemed
 inferior to Turenne, which he could not well bear,
 though he was inferior to him in all that related to
 the command; unless it was in a day of battle, in
 which the presence of mind, and vivacity of thought,
 which were wonderful in him, gave him some ad-
 vantage. But he had too much pride to be so oblig-
 ing as a general ought to be. And he was too much
 a slave to pleasure, and gamed too much, to have
 that constant application to his business that the
 other had. He was entirely lost in the king's good
 opinion, not only by reason of his behaviour during
 his minority, but after that was forgiven, once when
 the king was ill, not without apprehensions, he sent
 for him, and recommended his son to his care, in
 case he should die at that time. But he, instead of
 receiving this as a great mark of confidence, with
 due acknowledgments, expostulated upon the ill
 usage he had met with. The king recovered; but
 never forgot that treatment, and took all occasions
 to mortify him; which the ministers knew well, and
 seconded him in it: so that, bating the outward re-
 spect due to his birth, they treated him very hardly
 in all his pretensions.

The French king came down to Flanders in 76, The French king de-
 clined a
 battle when
 offered by
 the prince
 of Orange.
 and first took Condé, and then besieged Bouchain.
 The siege went on in form: and the king lay with
 an army covering it, when on a sudden the prince
 of Orange drew his army together, and went up al-

1677. most to the king's camp, offering him battle. All
the marshals and generals concluded that battle was
to be given, and that the war would be that day
ended. The king heard all this coldly. Schomberg
was newly made a marshal, and had got great honour
the year before against the prince of Orange,
in raising the siege of Maestricht. He commanded
in a quarter at some distance. The king said he
would come to no resolution, till he heard his opinion.
Louvoy sent for him by a confident person,
whom he ordered to tell him what had happened;
and that, in any opinion he was to give, he must
consider the king's person. So, when he came to
405 the king's tent, a council of war was called; and
Schomberg was ordered to deliver his opinion first.
He said, the king was there on design to cover the
siege of Bouchain: a young general was come up
on a desperate humour to offer him battle: he did
not doubt, but it would be a glorious decision of the
war: but the king ought to consider his own designs,
and not to be led out of these by any bravado,
or even by the great hope of success: the king
ought to remain in his post, till the place was taken:
otherwise he suffered another man to be the master
of his counsels and actions. When the place was
taken, then he was to come to new counsels: but
till then, he thought he was to pursue his first design.
The king said Schomberg was in the right:
and he was applauded that day, as a better courtier
than a general. I had all this from his own mouth.

To this I will add a pleasant passage, that the
prince of Condé told young Rouvigny, now earl of
Galway. The king of France has never yet fought
a battle; and has a mighty notion of that matter:

and, it seems, he apprehends the danger of it too much. Once he was chiding the prince of Conti for his being about to fight a combat with a man of quality. The king told him, he ought to consider the dignity of his blood, and not put himself on the level with other subjects; and that his uncle had declined fighting on that very account. The prince of Conti answered, My uncle might well have done so, after he had won two battles; but I, who have yet done nothing, must pretend to no such distinction. The king told this answer to the prince of Condé, who saw he was nettled with it. So he said to him, that his nephew had in that spoke like a young man: for winning of a battle was no great matter; since, though he who commanded had the glory of it, yet it was the subalterns that did the business: in which he thought he pleased the king; and for which he laughed heartily at him, when he told the story. The late king^P told me, that in these campaigns the Spaniards were both so ignorant and so backward, so proud and yet so weak, that they would never own their feebleness or their wants to him. They pretended they had stores, when they had none; and thousands, when they scarce had hundreds. He had in their counsels often desired, that they would give him only a true state of their garrisons and magazines. But they always gave it false. So that for some campaigns all was lost, merely because they deceived him in the strength they pretended they had. At last he believed nothing they said, but sent his own officers to examine every thing. Monterey was a wise man, and a good governor, but was a coward. Villa Her- 406

^P William. S.

1677. mosa was a brave man, but ignorant and weak.

Cambray
and St.
Omer
taken.

Thus the prince had a sad time of it every campaign. But none was so unhappy as this: in which, upon the loss of Valenciennes, he looking on St. Omer as more important than Cambray, went thither, and ventured a battle too rashly. Luxembourg, with a great body of horse, came into the duke of Orleans's army, just as they were engaging. Some regiments of marines, on whom the prince depended much, did basely run away. Yet the other bodies fought so well, that he lost not much, besides the honour of the day^q. But upon that St. Omer did immediately capitulate, as Cambray did some days after. It was thought, that the king was jealous of the honour his brother had got in that action; for he never had the command of an army after that time: and, courage being the chief good quality that he had, it was thought his having no occasion given him to shew it flowed from some particular reason.

The house
of commons
pressed
the king
to engage
in the
war.

These things happening during this session of parliament, made great impression on all people's minds. Sir W. Coventry opened the business in the house of commons: and shewed the danger of all these provinces falling under the power of France; which must end in the ruin of the united provinces, if a timely stop were not put to the progress the French were making. He demonstrated, that the interest of England made it necessary for the king to withdraw his mediation, and enter into the alliance against France: and the whole house went into this. There were great complaints made of the regiments that the king kept in the French

^q He was used to that. S.

army, and of the great service that was done by them. It is true, the king suffered the Dutch to make levies. But there was another sort of encouragement given to the levies for France, particularly in Scotland; where it looked liker a press than a levy. They had not only the public gaols given them to keep their men in: but, when these were full, they had the castle of Edenburgh assigned them, till ships were ready for their transport. Some, that were put in prison for conventicles, were, by order of council, delivered to their officers. The Spanish ambassador heard of this, and made great complaints upon it. So a proclamation was ordered, prohibiting any more levies. But duke Lauderdale kept it up some days, and writ down to hasten the levies away; for a proclamation was coming down against them. They were all shipped off, but had not sailed, when the proclamation came down: yet it was kept up till they sailed away. One of the ships was driven back by stress of weather: but no care was taken to execute the proclamation. So apparently was that kingdom in a French management.

The house of commons pressed the king, by repeated addresses, to fall into the interest of Europe, as well as into his own. The king was uneasy at this, and sent them several angry messages. Peace and war, he said, were undoubtedly matters within his prerogative, in which they ought not to meddle. And the king in common discourse remembered often the parliament's engaging his father and grandfather in the affairs of Germany, and to break the match with Spain, which proved fatal to them: and he resolved not to be served in such a manner.

1677. Upon this occasion, lord Danby saw his error, of neglecting the leading men, and reckoning upon a majority, such as could be made: for these leading men did so entangle the debates, and overreached those on whom he had practised, that they, working on the aversion that the English nation naturally has to a French interest, spoiled the hopefulest session the court had had of a great while, before the court was well aware of it^r. The king, who was yet firmly united with France, dismissed them with a very angry speech, checking them for going so far in matters that were above them, and that belonged only to him: though they brought to him many precedents in the reigns of the highest spirited of all our kings, in which parliaments had not only offered general advices, about the entering into wars, but even special ones, as to the conduct that was to be held in them. The whole nation thought it a great happiness, to see a session that lord Shaftsbury's wilfulness had, as it were, driven in to the court, end with doing so little mischief; far contrary to all men's expectations.

Danby declared against France.

When the session was over, lord Danby saw his ruin was inevitable, if he could not bring the king off from a French interest: upon which he set himself much to it. And, as he talked with an extraordinary zeal against France on all occasions, so he pressed the king much to follow the advices of his parliament. The king seemed to insist upon this, that he would once have a peace made, upon the grounds that he had concerted with France: and, when that was done, he would enter next day into the alliance. But he stood much upon this; that

^r Rare style! 'S.

having once engaged with France in the war, he 1677.
could not with honour turn against France till it
was at an end. This was such a refining in a point
of honour, which that king had not on all other oc-
casions considered so much, that all men believed
there was somewhat else at the bottom. The earl 408
of Danby continued to give, by sir William Tem-
ple, all possible assurances to the prince of Orange,
pressing him likewise to make some compliances on
his side. And he gave him great hopes of bringing
about a marriage with the duke's daughter; which
was universally desired by all the protestant party,
both at home and abroad. Great offers were made
to the duke to draw him into the alliance. He was
offered the command of the whole force of the allies.
And he seemed to be wrought on by the prospect of
so great an authority. There was a party that
were still very jealous of lord Danby in all this mat-
ter. Some thought all this was artifice; that a war
would be offered to the next session, only to draw
money from the parliament, and thereby to raise an
army; and that, when the army was raised, and
much money given to support it, all would be sold
to France for another great sum; and that the par-
liament would be brought to give the money to pay
an army for some years, till the nation should be
subdued to an entire compliance with the court. It
was given out, that this must be the scheme by
which he maintained himself in the king and the
duke's confidence, even when he declared himself an
open enemy to that which they were still support-
ing. This he did with so little decency, that at
Sancroft's consecration dinner, he began a health, to
the confusion of all that were not for a war with

1677. France. He got the prince of Orange to ask the king's leave to come over at the end of the campaign: with which the court of France was not pleased; for they suspected a design for the marriage. But the king assured Barillon, who was lately sent over ambassador in Courtin's place, that there was not a thought of that; and that the prince of Orange had only a mind to talk with him: and he hoped he should bring him into such measures as should produce a speedy peace.

The prince
of Orange
came into
England.

The campaign ended unsuccessfully to the prince: for he sat down before Charleroy, but was forced to raise the siege^s. When that was over, he came to England, and staid some time in it, talking with his two uncles about a peace. But they could not bring him up to their terms. After a fruitless stay for some weeks, he intended to go back without proposing marriage. He had no mind to be denied: and he saw no hope of succeeding, unless he would enter more entirely into his uncle's measures. Lord Danby pressed his staying a few days longer, and that the management of that matter might be left to him^t. So next Monday morning, after he had

^s Which occasioned a very severe jest, when he came to England, from the earl of Mulgrave, who, not being received by him in the manner expected, said, he supposed he could rise before nothing less than a town. D.

^t The duke of Leeds (lord Danby's title afterwards) told me, he wrote to the prince to come over by the king's order, and that as soon as he arrived, the duke (of York) told him in great passion, he understood

the intrigue, and that he was the chief manager, but they should be all disappointed, for the king had promised never to dispose of his daughters without his consent: and that this was a match he would never give his consent to. Lord Danby immediately acquainted the king, who said it was true he had given his brother such a promise, but, "God's fish," (his usual oath,) "he must consent." D.

taken care, by all his creatures about the king, to put him in a very good humour, he came to the king, and told him he had received letters from all the best friends his majesty had in England, and shewed a bundle of them; (in which he was pretty sure the king would not trouble himself to read them; probably they were written as he had directed.) They all agreed, he said, in the same advice, that the king should make a marriage between the prince of Orange and the duke's daughter: for they all believed he came over on that account: and, if he went away without it, nobody would doubt but that he had proposed it, and had been denied. Upon which the parliament would certainly make addresses to the king for it. And if the marriage was made upon that, the king would lose the grace and thanks of it: but if it was still denied, even after the addresses of both houses, it would raise jealousies that might have very ill consequences. Whereas, if the king did it of his own motion, he would have the honour of it: and, by so doing, he would bring the prince into a greater dependance on himself, and beget in the nation such a good opinion of him, as would lay a foundation for a mutual confidence. This he enforced with all the topics he could think on. The king said, the prince had not so much as proposed it: lord Danby owned he had spoke of it to himself; and said, that his not moving it to the king was only because he apprehended he was not like to succeed in it. The king said next, My brother will never consent to it. Lord Danby answered, Perhaps not, unless the king took it upon him to command it: and he thought it was the duke's interest to have it done, even more

1677.

409

1677. than the king's: all people were now possessed of his being a papist, and were very apprehensive of it: but if they saw his daughter given to one that was at the head of the protestant interest, it would very much soften those apprehensions, when it did appear that his religion was only a personal thing, not to be derived to his children after him. With all this the king was convinced^u. So he sent for the duke, lord Danby staying still with him. When the duke came, the king told him he had sent for him, to desire he would consent to a thing that he was sure was as much for his interest, as it was for his own quiet and satisfaction. The duke, without asking what it was, said, he would be ready always to comply with the king's pleasure in every thing. So the king left it to the lord Danby to say over all he had said on that head to himself. The duke seemed much concerned. But the king said to him, Brother, I desire it of you for my sake, as well as
410 your own: and upon that the duke consented to it. So lord Danby sent immediately for the prince, and in the king's name ordered a council to be presently summoned. Upon the prince's coming, the king, in a very obliging way, said to him, Nephew, it is not good for man to be alone, I will give you a help meet for you: and so he told him he would bestow his niece on him. And the duke, with a seeming heartiness, gave his consent in very obliging terms: the king adding, Nephew, remember that love and war do not agree well together. In the mean while the news of the intended marriage went over the court and town. All, except the French and the popish party, were much pleased with it. Barillon

^u Then how was the king for bringing in popery? S.

was amazed. He went to the duchess of Ports-
mouth; and got her to send all her creatures to de-
sire to speak to the king: she writ him likewise
several billets to the same purpose. But lord Danby
had ordered the council to be called: and he took
care, that neither the king nor the duke should be
spoke to, till the matter was declared in council.
And when that was done, the king presented the
prince to the young lady, as the person he designed
should be her husband. When Barillon saw it was
gone so far, he sent a courier to the court of France
with the news: upon whose arrival Mountague, that
was then our ambassador there, was sent for. When
he came to Versailles, he saw the king the most
moved that he had ever observed him to be. He
asked him, when was the marriage to be made?
Mountague understood not what he meant. So he
explained all to him. Mountague protested to him,
that he knew nothing of the whole matter. That
king said, he always believed the journey would end
in this: and he seemed to think that our court had
now forsaken him. He spoke of the king's part in
it more decently; but expostulated severely on the
duke's part, who had now given his daughter to the
greatest enemy he had in the world. To all this
Mountague had no answer to make. But next night
he had a courier with letters from the king, the
duke, and the prince, to the king of France. The
prince had no mind to this piece of courtship: but
his uncle obliged him to it, as a civility due to kin-
dred and blood. The king assured the king of
France, that he had made the match on design to
engage the prince to be more tractable in the treaty,
that was now going on at Nimeguen. The king of

1677.

He mar-
ried the
duke's
daughter.

1677. France received these letters civilly; but did not
 seem much satisfied with them. Mountague was
 called over soon after this, to get new instructions.
 And lord Danby asked him how the king of France
 411 received the news of the marriage. He answered,
 As he would have done the loss of an army; and that
 he had spoke very hardly of the duke, for consenting
 to it, and not at least acquainting him with it. Lord
 Danby answered, he wronged him; for he did not
 know of it an hour before it was published, and the
 king himself not above two hours. All this relation
 I had from Mountague himself^x. It was a master-
 piece indeed, and the chief thing in the earl of Dan-
 by's ministry, for which the duke never forgave
 him.

1678. Upon the general satisfaction that this marriage
 gave the whole nation, a new session of parliament
 was called in the beginning of the year 78: to which
 the king declared the sense he had of the dangerous
 state their neighbours were in, and that it was ne-
 cessary he should be put in a posture to bring things
 to a balance. So the house was pressed to supply
 the king in so plentiful a manner as the occasion
 did require. The court asked money, both for an

^x But see sir William Tem-
 ple's Memoirs and Letters, in
 which the account of all this
 transaction varies in many par-
 ticulars from what is here said.
 O. (Ralph, in his History of
 England, vol. I. p. 338, com-
 pares this account, which the
 bishop had from lord Monta-
 gue, with that given by sir Wil-
 liam Temple in his Memoirs in

vol. II. of his works, who says,
 that even lord Danby was not
 in the secret of the king's
 sudden change, and of his no
 longer insisting on the peace
 prior to the marriage, which
 was effected by the prince of
 Orange's rather minatory de-
 claration, and by Temple's argu-
 ments, who communicated the
 resolution to the prince.)

army and a fleet. Sir William Coventry shewed 1678.
 the great inconvenience of raising a land army, the danger that might follow on it, the little use could be made of it, and the great charge it must put the nation to: he was for hiring bodies from the German princes, and for assisting the Dutch with money: and he moved to recall our troops from France, and to employ them in the Dutch service: he thought, that which did more properly belong to England, was to set out a great fleet, and to cut off the French trade every where; for they were then very high in their manufactures and trade; their people were ingenious as well as industrious; they wrought hard, and lived low; so they sold cheaper than others could do; and it was found, that we sent very near a million of our money, in specie every year for the balance of our trade with them. But the king had promised so many commissions to men of quality in both houses, that this carried it for a land army. It was said, what hazard could there be from an army commanded by men of estates, as this was to be^y? A severe act passed, prohibiting all importation of the French manufactures or growth for three years, and to the next session of parliament after that. This was made as strict as was possible: and for a year after it was well looked to. But the merchants found ways to evade it: and the court was too much French, not to connive at the breach of it. In the preamble of this act it was set forth, that we were in an actual war with France. This was excepted

^y It is a slender security; and how few are they who may but it is all we have upon such occasions, when kings and ministers are not to be trusted: be trusted with the power of an army, in mixed governments? O.

1678. to, as not true in fact. But the ministry affirmed
 ————— we were already engaged so far with the allies, that
 412 it was really a war, and that our troops were already called from France. Coventry^z in some heat said, the king was engaged, and he would rather be guilty of the murder of forty men, than to do any thing to retard the progress of the war. The oddness of the expression made it to be often objected afterwards to him. A poll bill was granted, together with the continuance of the additional customs, that were near falling off. Six hundred thousand pound was also given for a land army, and for a fleet. All the court party magnified the design of raising an army. They said, the employing hired troops was neither honourable nor safe. The Spaniards were willing to put Ostend and Newport in our hands: and we could not be answerable for these places, if they were not kept by our own people.

Supplies
 given to-
 wards the
 war.

The French
 take Ghent.

At this time the king of France made a step that struck terror into the Dutch, and inflamed the English out of measure. Louvoy till then was rather his father's assistant, than a minister upon his own foot. He at this time gained the credit with the king, which he maintained so long afterwards. He proposed to him the taking of Ghent; and thought that the king's getting into such a place, so near the Dutch, would immediately dispose them to a peace. But it was not easy to bring their army so soon about it, without being observed: so the execution seemed impossible. He therefore laid such a scheme of marches and countermarches, as did amuse all the allies. Sometimes the design seemed to be on

^z Mr. H. Coventry. O.

the Rhine: sometimes on Luxemburgh. And while 1678.
 their forces were sent to defend those places, where
 they apprehended the design was laid, and that none
 of the French generals themselves did apprehend
 what the true design was, all on the sudden Ghent
 was invested: and both town and citadel were
 quickly taken. This was Louvoy's masterpiece.
 And it had the intended effect. It brought the
 Dutch to resolve on a peace. The French king
 might have taken Bruges, Ostend, and Newport.
 But he only took Ypres; for he had no mind to pro-
 voke the English. He was sure of his point by the
 fright this put the Dutch in. We were much
 alarmed at it. And the duke of Monmouth was
 immediately sent over with some of the guards.

But the parliament grew jealous, as they had The affairs
of Scot-
land.
 great cause given them, both by what was then do-
 ing in Scotland, and by the management they ob-
 served at court. And now I must look northward
 to a very extraordinary scene that opened there.
 Duke Lauderdale and his duchess went to Scotland
 the former year. Her design was to marry her
 daughters into two of the great families of Scotland,
 Argile and Murray, which she did. But, things be- 413
 ing then in great disorder, by reason of the numbers
 and desperate tempers of those who were intercom-
 moned, Sharp pretended, he was in great danger of
 his life; and that the rather, because the person
 that had made the attempt on him was let live still.
 Upon this I must tell what had passed three years be- Mitchell's
trial.
 fore this. Sharp had observed a man that kept shop
 at his door, who looked very narrowly at him always
 as he passed by: and he fancied, he was the man
 that had shot at him six years before. So he or-

1678. dered him to be taken up, and examined. It was found he had two pistols by him, that were deeply charged, which increased the suspicion. Yet the man denied all. But Sharp got a friend of his to go to him, and deal with him to make a full confession : and he made solemn promises, that he would procure his pardon. His friend answered, he hoped he did not intend to make use of him to trepan a man to his ruin. Upon that, with lifted up hands, Sharp promised by the living God, that no hurt should come to him, if he made a full discovery ^a. The person came again to him, and said, if a promise was made in the king's name, the prisoner would tell all. So it was brought before the council. Lord Rothes, Halton, and Primerose were ordered to examine him. Primerose said, it would be a strange force of eloquence, to persuade a man to confess, and be hanged. So duke Lauderdale, being the king's commissioner, gave them power to promise him his life. And as soon as these lords told him this, he immediately kneeled down, and confessed the fact, and told the whole manner of it. There was but one person privy to it, who was then dead. Sharp was troubled to see so small a discovery made : yet they could not draw more from him. So then it was considered what should be done to him. Some moved the cutting off his right hand. Others said, he might learn to practise with his left hand, and to take his revenge ; therefore they thought both hands should be cut off. Lord Rothes, who was a pleasant man, said, How shall he wipe his breech then ? This is not very decent to be mentioned in such a work,

^a Malice. S.

if it were not necessary^b; for when the truth of the promise now given was afterwards called in question, this jest was called to mind, and made the whole matter to be remembered. But Primerose moved, that since life was promised, which the cutting off a limb might endanger, it was better to keep him prisoner during life in a castle they had in the Bass, a rock in the mouth of the Frith: and thither he was sent. But it was thought necessary to make him repeat his confession in a court of judicature: so he was brought into the justiciary court, upon an indictment for the crime, to which it was expected he should plead guilty. But the judge, 414 who hated Sharp, as he went up to the bench, passing by the prisoner, said to him, Confess nothing, unless you are sure of your limbs as well as of your life^c. Upon this hint, he, apprehending the danger, refused to confess: which being reported to the council, an act was passed mentioning the promise and his confession, and adding, that since he had retracted his confession, they likewise recalled the promise of pardon: the meaning of which was this, that, if any other evidence was brought against him, the promise should not cover him: but it still was understood, that this promise secured him from any ill effect by his own confession. The thing was almost forgot after four years, the man being in all respects very inconsiderable. But now Sharp would have his life. So duke Lauderdale gave way to it: and he was brought to Edinburgh in order to his trial. Nisbit, who had been the king's advocate, and was one of the worthiest and learnedest men of

^b As decent as a thousand other passages; so he might have spared his apology. S.

^c A rare judge. S.

1678. the age, was turned out: and Mackenzie was put in his place, who was a man of much life and wit, but he was neither equal nor correct in it: he has published many books, some of law, but all full of faults; for he was a slight and superficial man^d. Lockhart was assigned counsel for the prisoner. And now that the matter came again into people's memory, all were amazed at the proceeding. Primerose was turned out of the place of lord register, and was made justice general. He [was a man of most exquisite malice, and was too much pleased with the thoughts, that the greatest enemies he had were to appear before him, and to perjure themselves in his court: yet he] fancied orders had been given to raze the act that the council had made: so he turned the books, and he found the act still on record. He took a copy of it, and sent it to Mitchell's counsel: that was the prisoner's name. And, a day or two before the trial, he went to duke Lauderdale, who, together with Sharp, lord Rothes, and lord Halton, were summoned as the prisoner's witnesses. He told him, many thought there had been a promise of life given^e. Duke Lauderdale denied it stiffly. Primerose said, he heard there was an act of council made about it, and he wished that might be looked into. Duke Lauderdale said, he was sure it was not possible, and he would not give himself the trouble to turn over the books of council. Primerose, who told me this, said his conscience led him to give duke Lauderdale this warning of the matter, but that he was not sorry to see him thus reject it: [and upon it he said within himself, "I have you now."] The trial was very solemn. The confession was

^d Envious and base. S.

brought against him, as full evidence: to which 1678.
Lockhart did plead, to the admiration of all, to shew
that no extrajudicial confession could be allowed in
a court. The hardships of a prison, the hopes of
life, with other practices, might draw confessions
from men, when they were perhaps drunk, or out of
their senses. He brought upon this a measure of 415
learning, that amazed the audience, out of the law-
yers of all civilized nations. And, when it was op-
posed to this, that the council was a court of judica-
ture, he shewed, that it was not the proper court for
crimes of this nature, and that it had not proceeded
in this as a court of judicature. And he brought
out likewise a great deal of learning upon those
heads. But this was overruled by the court, and
the confession was found to be judicial. The next
thing pleaded for him was, that it was drawn from
him upon hope and promise of life: and to this
Sharp was examined. The person he had sent to
Mitchell gave a full evidence of the promises he had
made him: but Sharp denied them all. He also
denied he heard any promise of life made him by
the council: so did the lords Lauderdale, Rothes,
and Halton, to the astonishment of all that were
present. Lockhart upon that produced a copy of
the act of council, that made express mention of the
promise given, and of his having confessed upon
that. And the prisoner prayed that the books of
council, which lay in a room over that in which the
court sat, might be sent for. Lockhart pleaded,
that since the court had judged that the council was
a judicature, all people had a right to search into
their registers; and the prisoner, who was like to
suffer by a confession made there, ought to have the

1678. benefit of those books. Duke Lauderdale, who was
 ——— in the court only as a witness, and so had no right to speak, stood up, and said, he and those other noble persons were not brought thither to be accused of perjury; and added, that the books of council were the king's secrets, and that no court should have the perusing of them. The court was terrified with this, and the judges were divided in opinion. Primerose, and one other, was for calling for the books. But three were of opinion, that they were not to furnish the prisoner with evidence, but to judge of that which he brought. And here was only a bare copy, not attested upon oath, which ought not to have been read. So, this defence being rejected, he was cast and condemned.

And con-
demnation.

As soon as the court broke up, the lords went up stairs, and to their shame found the act recorded, and signed by lord Rothes, as president of the council. He pretended, he signed every thing that the clerk of council put in the book without reading it. And it was intended to throw it on him. But he, to clear himself, searched among his papers, and found a draught of the act in Nisbit's hand. So, he being rich, and one they had turned out, they resolved to put it upon him, and to fine him deeply.

416 But he examined the *sederunt* in the book, and spoke to all who were there at the board, of whom nine happened to be in town, who were ready to depose upon oath, that when the council had ordered this act to be drawn, the clerk of the council desired the help of the king's advocate in penning it, which he gave him; and his draught was approved by the council. And now lord Rothes's jest was remembered. Yet duke Lauderdale still stood to it, that

the promise could only be for interceding with the king for his pardon, since the council had not the power of pardoning in them. Lord Kincardin acted in this the part of a Christian to an enemy. Duke Lauderdale had writ to him, he being then serving for him at court, that he referred the account of Mitchell's business to his brother's letters; in which the matter was truly related, that upon promise of life he had confessed the fact; and he concluded, desiring him to ask the king, that he would be pleased to make good the promise. These letters I saw in lord Kincardin's hand. Before the trial, he sent a bishop to duke Lauderdale, desiring him to consider better of that matter, before he would upon oath deny it: for he was sure he had it under his and his brother's hand, though he could not yet fall upon their letters. But duke Lauderdale despised this. Yet, before the execution, he went to his house in the country, and there found the letters, and brought them in with him, and shewed them to that bishop. All this made some impression on duke Lauderdale: and he was willing to grant a reprieve, and to refer the matter to the king. So a petition was offered to the council: and he spoke for it. But Sharp said, that was upon the matter the exposing his person to any man that would attempt to murder him, since favour was to be shewed to such an assassin. Then said duke Lauderdale, in an impious jest, Let Mitchell glorify God in the Grass Market, which was the place where he was to be hanged^e. This action,

^e (According to Higgons, upon Mitchell's examination, he being asked what induced him to make so wicked an attempt upon the person of the archbishop, replied, that he did it for the glory of the Lord; for this reason afterward, when it was resolved to hang him, the duke said, Let Mitchell

1678. and all concerned in it, were looked at by all people
 ——— with horror. And it was such a complication of
 treachery, perjury, and cruelty, as the like had not
 perhaps been known. Yet duke Lauderdale had a
 chaplain, Hickes, afterwards dean of Worcester^f,
 who published a false and partial relation of this
 matter, in order to the justifying of it. [He was af-
 terwards turned out for not taking the oaths to the
 late king.] Primerose not only gave me an account
 of this matter, but sent me an authentic record of
 the trial, every page signed by the clerk of the
 court; of which I have here given an abstract. This
 I set down the more fully, to let my readers see to
 what a height in wickedness men may be carried,
 after they have once thrown off good principles.
 What Sharp did now to preserve himself from such
 practices, was probably that which, both in the just
 417 judgment of God, and the inflamed fury of wicked
 men, brought him two years after to such a dismal
 end. [Primerose did most inhumanly triumph in
 this matter, and said it was the greatest glory of his
 life, that the four greatest enemies he had should
 come and consign the damnation of their souls in
 his hands: I told him, that was an expression fitter
 for a devil than a Christian. The poor creature
 died more pitied than could have been imagined.]

glorify God in the Grass Mar-
 ket. Bevill Higgons's Remarks,
 p. 206. Salmon in p. 762 of
 his Examination of Burnet's
 Hist. relates, but without men-
 tioning his authority, that the
 archbishop moved in council
 to have the assassin reprieved.
 In a letter, however, lately
 published, Dr. Hickes says, that
 Mitchell was not at first pro-

secuted, because the archbishop
 would not pursue him in *causa*
sanguinis, adding, that the king's
 advocate, Nesbitt, would not,
 being a fanatic. Ellis's Second
 Series of Letters, vol. IV. p. 40.
 See more below, relative to
 this unhappy business, p. 514,
 folio edit.)

^f A learned, pious man. S.

This made way to more desperate undertakings. 1678.

Conventicles grew in the west to a very unsufferable pitch: they had generally with them a troop of armed and desperate men, that drew up and sent parties out to secure them. Duke Lauderdale upon this threatened he would extirpate them, and ruin the whole country, if a stop was not put to those meetings. The chief men of those parts upon that went into Edenburgh; they offered to guard and assist any that should be sent to execute the laws against all offenders; and offered to leave some as hostages, who should be bound body for body for their security: they confessed there were many conventicles held among them in a most scandalous manner: but, though they met in the fields, and many of them were armed, yet, when their sermons were done, they dispersed themselves: and there was no violent opposition made at any time to the execution of the law: so, they said, there was no danger of the public peace of the country. Those conventicling people were become very giddy and furious: and some hot and hair-brained young preachers had the chief following among them, who infused wild principles in them, which were disowned by the chief men of the party. The truth was, the country was in a great distraction: and that was chiefly occasioned by the strange administration they were then under. Many grew weary of their country, and even of their lives. If duke Lauderdale, or any of his party, brought a complaint against any of the other side, how false or frivolous soever, they were summoned upon it to appear before the council, as sowers of sedition, and as men that spread lies of the government: and

The administration there grew very violent and illegal.

1678. upon the slightest pretences they were fined and imprisoned. When very illegal things were to be done, the common method was this: a letter was drawn for it to be signed by the king, directing it upon some colour of law or ancient practice: the king signed whatsoever was thus sent to him: and when his letter was read in council, if any of the lawyers or others of the board offered to object to it, he was brow-beaten, as a man that opposed the king's service, and refused to obey his orders. And by these means things were driven to great extremities.

Upon one of those letters, a new motion was set on foot, that went beyond all that had been yet made. All the landlords in the western counties were required to enter into bonds for themselves, their wives, children, servants, tenants, and all that lived upon their estates, that they should not go to conventicles, nor harbour any vagrant teachers, or any
 418 intercommuned persons; and that they should live in all points according to law under the penalties of the laws. This was generally refused by them: they said, the law did not impose it on them: they could not be answerable for their servants, much less for their tenants: this put it in the power of every servant or tenant to ruin them. Upon their refusing this, duke Lauderdale writ to the king, that the country was in a state of rebellion, and that it was necessary to proceed to hostilities for reducing them. So by a letter, such as he sent up, the king left it to him and the council to take care of the public peace in the best way they could.

An army
 of High-
 landers sent
 to the west
 upon free
 quarter.

Upon this, all the force the king had was sent into the west country, with some cannon, as if it had been for some dangerous expedition: and letters

were writ to the lords in the Highlands, to send all the strength they could to assist the king's army. 1678.
The marquess of Athol, to shew his greatness, sent 2400 men. The earl of Braidalbin sent 1700. And, in all, 8000 men were brought into the country, and let loose upon free quarter. A committee of council was sent to give necessary orders. Here was an army. But no enemy appeared. The Highlanders were very unruly, and stole and robbed every where. The gentlemen of the country were required to deliver up their arms upon oath, and to keep no horse above four pound price. The gentlemen looked on, and would do nothing. This put duke Lauderdale in such a phrensy, that at council table he made bare his arms above his elbow, and swore by Jehovah he would make them enter into those bonds. Duke Hamilton, and others, who were vexed to see such waste made on their estates, in ploughing time especially, came to Edinburgh to try if it was possible to mollify him. But a proclamation was issued out, requiring all the inhabitants of those counties to go to their houses, to be assistant to the king's host, and to obey such orders as should be sent them. And by another proclamation, all men were forbidden to go out of the kingdom without leave from the council, on pretence that their stay was necessary for the king's service. These things seemed done on design to force a rebellion; which they thought would be soon quashed, and would give a good colour for keeping up an army. And duke Lauderdale's party depended so much on this, that they began to divide in their hopes the confiscated estates among them: so that on Valentine's day, instead of drawing mistresses, they drew estates. And great joy

1678. appeared in their looks upon a false alarm that was brought them of an insurrection: and they were as much dejected, when they knew it was false. It was happy for the public peace, that the people were universally possessed with this opinion: for when they saw a rebellion was desired, they bore the present oppression more quietly, than perhaps they would have done, if it had not been for that. All the chief men of the country were summoned before the committee of council, and charged with a great many crimes, of which they were required to purge themselves by oath: otherwise they would hold them guilty, and proceed against them as such. It was in vain to pretend, that this was against all law, and was the practice only of the courts of inquisition. Yet the gentlemen, being thus forced to it, did purge themselves by oath. And, after all the inquiries that were made, there did not appear one single circumstance to prove that any rebellion was intended. And, when all other things failed so evidently, recourse was had to a writ, which a man who suspects another of ill designs towards him may serve him with; and it was called law-boroughs, as most used in boroughs. This lay against a whole family: the master was answerable, if any one of his household broke it. So, by a new practice, this writ was served upon the whole country at the king's suit. And, upon serving the writ, security was to be given, much like the binding men to their good behaviour. Many were put in prison for refusing to give this security.

Many of the nobility came up to complain to the king.

Duke Hamilton had intimation sent him, that it was designed to serve this on him. So he, and ten or twelve of the nobility, with about fifty gentlemen

of quality, came up to complain of all this; which 1678.
 looked like French, or rather like Turkish, govern-
 ment. The lords of Athol and Perth, who had been
 two of the committee of council, and had now fallen
 off from duke Lauderdale, came up with them to
 give the king an account of the whole progress of
 this matter. The clamour this made was so high, that
 duke Lauderdale saw he could not stand under it.
 So the Highlanders were sent home, after they had
 wasted the country near two months. And he mag-
 nified this as an act of his compassion, that they
 were so soon dismissed. Indeed all his own party
 were against him in it. Lord Argile sent none of
 his men down with the other Highlanders. And
 lord Stairs pretended that by a fall his hand was out
 of joint: so he signed none of these wild orders.

When the Scottish nobility came to London, the
 king would not see them, because they were come
 out of the kingdom in contempt of a proclamation;
 though they said, that proclamation, being intended
 to hinder them from bringing their complaints to the
 king, was one of their greatest grievances. But 420
 it was answered, they ought to have asked leave:
 and, if it had been denied them, they were next to
 have asked the king's leave; and the king insisted
 still on this. Only he saw the lords of Athol and
 Perth. The madness of this proceeding made him
 conclude, that duke Lauderdale's head was turned.
 Yet he would not disown, much less punish him
 for what he had done. But he intended to put
 Scotland in another management, and to set the
 duke of Monmouth at the head of it. So he suf-
 fered him to go to the Scottish lords, and be their in-
 tercessor with him. They were all much charmed

But the
king would
not see
them.

1678. with the softness of his temper and behaviour. But, though he assured them the king would put their affairs in other hands, they looked on that as one of the king's artifices to get rid of them. The matter made great noise : and it was in the time of the session of parliament here. And all people said, that by the management in Scotland it appeared what was the spirit of the government ; and what would be done here, as soon as the designs of the court were brought to a greater perfection. The earl of Danby, by supporting duke Lauderdale, heightened the prejudices that himself lay under. The duke did also justify his conduct ; which raised higher jealousies of him, as being pleased with that method of government. The chief of the Scottish nobility were heard before the cabinet council. And the earl of Nottingham held them chiefly to the point of coming out of the kingdom in the face of a proclamation. They said, such proclamations were anciently legal, when we had a king of our own among ourselves : but now it was manifestly against law, since it barred them from access to the king, which was a right that was never to be denied them. Lord Nottingham objected next to them a practice of making the heads of the families or clans in the Highlands to bind for their whole name ; and why, by a parity of reason, might they not be required to bind for their tenants ? It was answered, that anciently estates were let so low, that service and the following the landlords was instead of a rent ; and then, in the inroads that were made into England, landlords were required to bring their tenants along with them : but now lands were let at rack : and so an end was put to that service : in the Highlands the feuds among

the families were still so high, that every name came under such a dependance on the head or chief of it for their own security, that he was really the master of them all, and so might be bound for them: but even this was only to restrain depredations and murders: and it was an unheard-of stretch, to oblige men to be bound for others in matters of religion and conscience, whether real or pretended. 1678.

The whole matter was at that time let fall. And 421 duke Lauderdale took advantage from their absence to desire leave from the king to summon a convention of estates; from whom he might more certainly understand the sense of the whole kingdom. And, what by corrupting the nobility, what by carrying elections, or at least disputes about them, which would be judged as the majority should happen to be at first, he hoped to carry his point. So he issued out the writs while they were at London, knowing nothing of the design. And these being returnable in three weeks, he laid the matter so, that before they could get home, all the elections were over: and he was master of above four parts in five of that assembly. So they granted an assessment for three years, in order to the maintaining a greater force. And they wrote a letter to the king, not only justifying, but highly magnifying, duke Lauderdale's government. This was so base and so abject a thing, that it brought the whole nation under great contempt.

And thus I leave the affairs of Scotland, which had a very ill influence on the minds of the English; chiefly on the house of commons then sitting, who upon it made a new address against duke Lauderdale. And that was followed by another of a higher

A convention of estates gives money, and justifies the administration.

Affairs in England.

1678. strain, representing to the king the ill effects of his
not hearkening to their address the former year with
relation to foreign affairs; and desiring him to
change his ministry, and to dismiss all those that
had advised the prorogation at that time, and his de-
laying so long to assist the allies. This was carried
only by a small majority of two or three. So lord
Danby brought up all his creatures, the aged and in-
firm not excepted: and then the majority lay the
other way: and by short adjournments the parlia-
ment was kept sitting till Midsummer. Once lord
Danby, thinking he had a clear majority, got the
king to send a message to the house, desiring an ad-
ditional revenue of 300,000*l.* during life. This set
the house all in a flame. It was said, here was no
demand for a war, but for a revenue, which would
furnish the court so well, that there would be no
more need of parliaments. The court party thought
such a gift as this would make them useless. So
the thing was upon one debate rejected without a
division. Lord Danby was much censured for this
rash attempt, which discovered the designs of the
court too barefacedly. At the same time he ordered
Mountague to treat with the court of France for a
peace, in case they would engage to pay the king
300,000*l.* a year for three years. So, when that
came afterwards to be known, it was then generally
believed, that the design was to keep up and model
the army now raised, reckoning there would be
money enough to pay them till the nation should be
brought under a military government. And the
opinion of this prevailed so, that lord Danby became
the most hated minister that had ever been about
the king. All people said now, they saw the secret

The house
of com-
mons grew
jealous of
the court.

of that high favour he had been so long in, and the black designs that he was contriving. At this time expresses went very quick between England and France: and the state of foreign affairs varied every post. So that it was visible we were in a secret negotiation: of which Temple has given so particular an account, that I refer my reader wholly to him. But I shall add one particular, that he has not mentioned: Mountague, who was a man of pleasure^g, was in an intrigue with the duchess of Cleveland, who was quite cast off by the king, and was then at Paris. The king had ordered him to find out an astrologer, of whom it was no wonder he had a good opinion; for he had, long before his restoration, foretold he should enter London on the 29th of May, 60. He was yet alive, and Mountague found him; and saw he was capable of being corrupted. So he resolved to prompt him, to send the king such hints as should serve his own ends. And he was so bewitched with the duchess of Cleveland, that he trusted her with this secret. But she, growing jealous of a new amour, took all the ways she could think on to ruin him, reserving this of the astrologer for her last shift^h. And by it she compassed her

1678.

^g His brother, Edward Mountague, had been chamberlain to the queen, who asked the king, (having never had an admirer before, nor after,) what people meant by squeezing one by the hand; the king told her, love; then said she, Mr. Mountague loves me mightily. Upon which he was turned out. D. ("They say the king himself did once ask Mountague, how his mistress did." Pepys's *Diary*,

vol. I. p. 295, in which work this gentleman is frequently mentioned as one of a very indifferent character.)

^h (The letter from the duchess of Cleveland to the king, containing her charge against Mountague, and which is shockingly disgraceful to all the parties concerned, has been published by Harris, at the end of his life of Charles II.)

1678. ends: for [the king looked upon this as such a piece of treachery and folly, thatⁱ] Mountague was entirely lost upon it with the king, and came over without being recalled. The earl of Sunderland was sent ambassador in his room.

Affairs abroad.

The treaty went on at Nimeguen, where Temple and Jenkins were our plenipotentiaries. The States were resolved to have a peace. The prince of Orange did all he could to hinder it. But De Wit's party began to gather strength again. And they infused a jealousy in all people, that the prince intended to keep up the war for his own ends. A peace might be now had by restoring all that belonged to the States, and by a tolerable barrier in Flanders. It is true, the great difficulty was concerning their allies, the king of Denmark, and the elector of Brandenburg; who had fallen on the Swede, upon the king's declaring for France, and had beat him out of Germany. No peace could be had, unless the Swede was restored. Those princes who had been quite exhausted by that war, would not consent to this. So they, who had adhered so faithfully to the States in their extremity, pressed them to stick by them. And this was the prince of Orange's constant topic: how could they expect any of their allies should stick to them, if they now forsook such faithful friends? But nothing could prevail. It was given out in Holland, that they could not depend on England, that court being so entirely in a French interest, that they suspected they would, as they had once done, sell them again to the French. And this was believed to be let out by the French ministers themselves, who, to come at their ends, were

ⁱ Bowyer's Transcript of the Suppressed Passages.

apt enough to give up even those who sacrificed every thing to them. It was said, the court of France would consider both Denmark and Brandenburg, and repay the charge of the war against Sweden. This, it was said, was to force those princes into a dependance on France, who would not continue those payments so much for past as for future services. In the mean while the French had blocked up Mons. So the prince of Orange went to force them from their posts. Luxemburgh commanded there, and seemed to be in full hope of a peace, when the prince came and attacked him. And, notwithstanding the advantage of his situation, it appeared how much the Dutch army was now superior to the French, for they beat them out of several posts. The prince had no order to stop. He indeed knew that the peace was upon the matter concluded. But no intimation was yet made to him. So it was lawful for him to take all advantages. And he was not apprehensive of a new embroilment, but rather wished it. The French treasure was so exhausted, and their king was so weary of the war, that no notice was taken of the business of Mons. The treaty at Nimeguen was finished, and ratified^j. Yet new difficulties arose, upon the French king's refusing to evacuate the places that were to be restored till the Swede was restored to all his dominions. Upon this the English struck in again: and the king talked so high, as if he would engage anew in the war. But the French prevented that, and did evacuate the

^j (In a MS. which has been preserved of lord Shaftsbury's, he says, "That England got neither honour nor profit by the peace of Nimeguen; and " that France broke all her " enemies more effectually by " that peace, than she could " have done by her armies in " war.")

1678. places. And then they got Denmark and Brandenburg into their dependance, under the pretence of repaying the charge of the war. But it was more truly, the engaging them into the interests of France by great pensions. So a general peace quickly followed. And there was no more occasion for our troops beyond sea. The French were so apprehensive of them, that Rouvigny, now earl of Galway, was sent over to negotiate matters. That which France insisted most on, was the disbanding the army. And the force of money was so strong, that he had orders to offer six millions of their money, in case the army should be disbanded in August. Rouvigny had such an ill opinion of the designs of our court, if the army was kept up, that he insisted on fixing the day for disbanding it; at which the duke was very uneasy. And matters were so managed, that the army was not disbanded by the day prefixed for it. So the king of France saved his money. And for this piece of good management Rouvigny was much commended. The troops were brought into England, and kept up, under the pretence that there was not money to pay them off. So all people looked on the next session as very critical.

424 The party against the court gave all for lost. They believed the lord Danby, who had so often brought his party to be very near the majority, would now lay matters so well as to be sure to carry the session. And many did so despair of being able to balance his numbers, that they resolved to come up no more, and reckoned that all opposition would be fruitless, and serve only to expose themselves to the fury of the court. But of a sudden an unlooked for accident changed all their measures, and put the kingdom

into so great a fermentation, that it well deserves to be opened very particularly. I am so well instructed in all the steps of it, that I am more capable to give a full account of it than any man I know. And I will do it so impartially, that no party shall have cause to censure me for concealing or altering the truth in any one instance. It is the history of that called the popish plot. 1678.

Three days before Michaelmas Dr. Tonge came to me. I had known him at Sir Robert Murray's. He was a gardener and a chymist, and was full of projects and notions. He had got some credit in Cromwell's time: and that kept him poor. He was a very mean divine, and seemed credulous and simple. But I had always looked on him as a sincere man. At this time he told me of strange designs against the king's person; ^kand that Coniers, a Benedictine, had provided himself of a poniard, with which he undertook to kill him. I was amazed at all this; and did not know whether he was crazed, or had come to me on design to involve me in a concealing of treason. So I went to Dr. Lloyd, and sent him to the secretary's office with an account of that discourse of Tonge's, since I would not be guilty of misprision of treason. He found at the office, that Tonge was making discoveries there; of which they made no other account, but that he intended to get himself to be made a dean. I told this next morning to Littleton and Powel. And they looked on it as a design of lord Danby's, to be laid before the next session, thereby to dispose them to keep up a greater force, since the papists were plotting against the king's life: this would put an end to all jealousies

^k (Compare Ralph's History of England, vol. I. p. 540—543.)

1678. of the king, now the papists were conspiring against his life. But lord Hallifax, when I told him of it, had another apprehension of it. He said, considering the suspicions all people had of the duke's religion, he believed every discovery of that sort would raise a flame, which the court would not be able to manage.

Oates's character.

The day after that, Titus Oates was brought before the council. He was the son of an anabaptist teacher, who afterwards conformed, and got into orders, and took a benefice, as this his son did. He was proud and ill natured, haughty, but ignorant. He [conversed much with Socinians, and he] had been complained of for some very indecent expressions concerning the mysteries of the Christian religion. He was once presented for perjury. But he got to be a chaplain in one of the king's ships, from which he was dismissed upon complaint of some unnatural practices, not to be named. He got a qualification from the duke of Norfolk as one of his chaplains: and there he fell into much discourse with the priests that were about that family. He seemed inclined to be instructed in the popish religion. One Hutchinson, a Jesuit, had that work put on him. He was a weak and light-headed man, and afterwards came over to the church of England. Hutchinson was a curate about the city near a year, and came oft to me, and preached once for me. He seemed to be a sincere, devout man, who did not at all love the order, for he found they were a deceitful and meddling sort of people. They never trusted him with any secrets, but employed him wholly in making converts. He went afterwards back to that church. So all this was thought a juggle only to cast an odium upon Oates. He told me, that Oates

and they were always in ill terms. They did not 1678. .
allow Oates above ninepence a day, of which he
complained much. And Hutchinson relieved him
often. They wished they could be well rid of him;
and sent him beyond sea, being in very ill terms
with him. This made Hutchinson conclude, that
they had not at that time trusted Oates with their
secrets. Oates was kept for some time at St. Omer's;
and from thence sent through France into Spain;
and was now returned into England. He had been
long acquainted with Tonge; and made his first dis-
covery to him. And he, by the means of one Kirby,
a chymist, that was sometimes in the king's labora-
tory, signified the thing to the king. So Tonge had
an audience; and told the king a long thread of
many passages, all tending to the taking away his
life; which the king, as he afterwards told me,
knew not what to make of: yet among so many
particulars he did not know but there might be
some truth. So he sent him to lord Danby, who in-
tended to make some use of it, but could not give
much credit to it, and handled the matter too re-
missly: for, if at first the thing had been traced
quick, either the truth or the imposture of the whole
affair might have been made appear. The king or-
dered lord Danby to say nothing of it to the duke.
In the mean while some letters of an odd strain, re-
lating to plots and discoveries, were sent by the
post to Windsor, directed to Beddingfield, the duke's
confessor; who, when he had read them, carried
them to the duke, and protested he did not know
what they meant, nor from whom they came. The
duke carried them to the king. And he fancied
they were writ either by Tonge or Oates, and sent

1678. on design to have them intercepted, to give the
more credit to the discovery. The duke's enemies
on the other hand gave out, that he had got some
426 hints of the discovery, and brought these as a blind
to impose on the king. The matter lay in a secret
and remiss management for six weeks.

His disco-
very.

At last, on Michaelmas eve, Oates was brought
before the council; and entertained them with a
long relation of many discourses he had heard among
the Jesuits, of their design to kill the king. He
named persons, places, and times, almost without
number. He said, many Jesuits had disguised them-
selves, and were gone to Scotland, and held field
conventicles, on design to distract the government
there. He said, he was sent first to St. Omer's,
thence to Paris, and from thence to Spain, to ne-
gociate this design; and that upon his return, when
he brought many letters and directions from beyond
sea, there was a great meeting of the Jesuits held in
London, in April last, in different rooms in a tavern
near St. Clement's; and that he was employed to
convey the resolutions of those in one room to those
in another, and so to hand them round. The issue
of the consultation was, that they came to a resolu-
tion to kill the king by shooting, stabbing, or poison-
ing him; that several attempts were made, all which
failed in the execution, as shall be told when the
trials are related. While he was going on, waiting
for some certain evidence to accompany his disco-
very, he perceived they were jealous of him: and so
he durst not trust himself among them any more.
In all this there was not a word of Coniers, of whom
Tonge had spoke to me. So that was dropt. This
was the substance of what Oates told the first day.

Many Jesuits were upon this seized on that night, 1678. and the next day. And their papers were sealed up next day. He accused Coleman of a strict correspondence with P. de la Chaise; (whose name he had not right, for he called him Father Le Shee :) and he said in general, that Coleman was acquainted with all their designs.

Coleman had a whole day free to make his escape, if he thought he was in any danger. And he had conveyed all his papers out of the way: only he forgot a drawer under the table, in which the papers relating to 74, 75, and a part of 76 were left. And from these I drew the negociations that I have formerly mentioned as directed by him. If he had either left all his papers, or withdrawn all, it had been happy for his party. Nothing had appeared, if all his papers had been put out of the way. But, if all had been left, it might have been concluded, that the whole secret lay in them. But he left enough to give great jealousy. And, no more appearing, all was believed that the witnesses had deposed. Coleman went out of the way for a day, hearing that there was a warrant out against him. But he delivered himself the next day to the secretary of state. When Oates and he were confronted, Oates did not know him at first: but he named him, when he heard him speak. Yet he only charged him upon hearsay. So he was put in a messenger's hands. Oates named Wakeman, the queen's physician; but did not know him at all. And being asked if he knew any thing against him, he answered he did not; adding, God forbid he should say any thing more than he knew, he would not do that for all the world. Nor did he name Langhorn, the famous

Coleman
and his
papers
seized.

427

1678. lawyer, that indeed managed all their concerns.

— The king found him out in one thing. He said, when he was in Spain, he was carried to Don John, who promised great assistance in the execution of their designs. The king, who knew Don John well, asked him what sort of a man he was : he answered, he was a tall lean man : now Don John was a little fat man. At first he seemed to design to recommend himself to the duke and the ministers : for he said, he heard the Jesuits oft say, that the duke was not sure enough to them : and they were in doubt, whether he would approve of their killing the king : but they were resolved, if they found him stiff in that matter, to despatch him likewise. He said, they had oft made use of his name, and counterfeited his hand and seal, without his knowledge. He said, the Jesuits cherished the faction in Scotland against duke Lauderdale ; and intended to murder the duke of Ormond, as a great enemy to all their designs. And he affirmed he had seen many letters, in which these things were mentioned, and had heard them oft spoke of. He gave a long account of the burning of London, at which they intended to have killed the king : but they relented, when they saw him so active in quenching the fire, which, as he said, they had kindled.

Coleman's
letters con-
firm it.

The whole town was all over inflamed with this discovery. It consisted of so many particulars, that it was thought to be above invention. But when Coleman's letters came to be read and examined, it got a great confirmation ; since by these it appeared, that so many years before they thought the design for the converting the nation, and rooting out the pestilent heresy that had reigned so long in these

northern kingdoms, was very near its being executed: mention was oft made of the duke's great zeal for it: and many indecent reflections were made on the king, for his inconstancy, and his disposition to be brought to any thing for money: they depended on the French king's assistance: and therefore were earnest in their endeavours to bring about a general peace, as that which must finish their design. 1678.

On the second day after this discovery, the king went to Newmarket. This was censured, as a very indecent levity in him, to go and see horse races, when all people were so much possessed with this extraordinary discovery, to which Coleman's letters had gained an universal credit. While the king was gone, Tonge desired to speak with me. So I went to him to Whitehall, where both he and Oates 428 were lodged under a guard. I found him so lifted up, that he seemed to have lost the little sense he had. Oates came in; and made me a compliment, that I was one that was marked out to be killed. He had before said the same to Stillingfleet of him. But he made that honour which he did us too cheap, when he said Tonge was to be served in the same manner, because he had translated the Jesuits' morals into English. He broke out into great fury against the Jesuits; and said, he would have their blood. But I, to divert him from that strain, asked him, what were the arguments that prevailed on him to change his religion, and to go over to the church of Rome. He upon that stood up, and laid his hands on his breast; and said, God and his holy angels knew, that he had never changed, but that he had gone among them on purpose to betray

1678. them. This gave me such a character of him, that
 ————— I could have no regard to any thing he either said
 or swore after that.

Godfrey is
 murdered.

A few days after this, a very extraordinary thing happened, that contributed more than any other thing to the establishing the belief of all this evidence. Sir Edmondbury Godfrey was an eminent justice of peace, that lived near Whitehall. He had the courage to stay in London, and keep things in order during the plague ; which gained him much reputation, and upon which he was knighted. He was esteemed the best justice of peace in England ; and kept the quarter where he lived in very good order. He was then entering upon a great design of taking up all beggars, and putting them to work. He was thought vain, and apt to take too much upon him. But there are so few men of a public spirit, that small faults, though they lessen them, yet ought to be gently censured. I knew him well, and never had reason to think him faulty that way. He was a zealous protestant, and loved the church of England ; but had kind thoughts of the nonconformists, and was not forward to execute the laws against them. And he, to avoid being put on doing that, was not apt to search for priests or mass-houses. So that few men of his zeal lived in better terms with the papists than he did. Oates went to him the day before he appeared at the council board ; and made oath of the narrative he intended to make, which he afterwards published. This seemed to be done in distrust of the privy council, as if they might stifle his evidence ; which to prevent he put it in safe hands. Upon that Godfrey was chid for his presuming to meddle in so tender a matter

And it was generally believed, that Coleman and he were long in a private conversation, between the time of his (Coleman's) being put in the messenger's hands, and his being made a close prisoner: which was done as soon as report was made to the council of the contents of his letters. It is certain, Godfrey 429
grew apprehensive and reserved: for meeting me in the street, after some discourse of the present state of affairs, he said, he believed he himself should be knocked on the head. Yet he took no care of himself, and went about according to his own maxim, still without a servant: for he used to say, that the servants in London were corrupted by the idleness and ill company they fell into, while they attended on their masters. On the day fortnight from that in which Oates had made his discovery, being Saturday, he went abroad in the morning, and was seen about one o'clock near St. Clement's church; but was never seen any more. He was a punctual man to good hours: so his servants were amazed when he did not come home. Yet, he having an ancient mother that lived at Hammersmith, they fancied, he had heard she was dying, and so was gone to see her. Next morning they sent thither, but heard no news of him. So his two brothers, who lived in the city, were sent to. They were not acquainted with his affairs: so they did not know whether he might not have stepped aside for debt; since at that time all people were calling in their money, which broke a great many. But, no creditors coming about the house, they on Tuesday published his being thus lost. The council sat upon it, and were going to order a search of all the houses about the town; but were diverted from it, by many stories that were

1678.

1678. brought them by the duke of Norfolk. Sometimes it was said, he was indecently married: and the scene was often shifted of the places where it was said he was. The duke of Norfolk's officiousness in this matter, and the last place he was seen at, being near Arundel house, brought him under great suspicion^l. On Thursday, one came into a bookseller's shop after dinner, and said he was found thrust through with a sword. That was presently brought as news to me: but the reporter of it was not known^m. That night late his body was found in a ditch, about a mile out of the town, near St. Pancras church. His sword was thrust through him. But no blood was on his clothes, or about him. His shoes were clean. His money was in his pocket. But nothing was about his neck. And a mark was all round it, an inch broad, which shewed he was strangled. His breast was likewise all over marked with bruises: and his neck was broken. All this I saw; for Dr. Lloyd and I went to view his body. There were many drops of white wax-lights on his breeches, which he never used himself. And since only persons of quality, or priests, use those lights, this made all people conclude in whose hands he

His body
was found.

^l (North in his *Examen of the Complete History of England*, p. 202, informs us, that the duke of Norfolk went with great joy to tell the news at Whitehall of Godfrey's being found, (in his supposed voluntary concealment;) and that the duke narrowly escaped being put in the plot, which it was said he owed to the circumstance of Oates having been once his chaplain.)

^m One Adam Angus, an amanuensis to Dr. Burnet, and one John Oswald, a Scotch minister, were in Mr. Chiswell's (the bookseller) shop, when a person, who could never be found out, told Angus as above; though neither Oswald nor Mr. Chiswell's servant in the shop saw any such person. However the two Scotchmen went with the news to Burnet and Dr. Lloyd. *Cole*.

must have been. And it was visible he was first 1678.
 strangled, and then carried to that place, where his
 sword was run through his dead body. For a while
 it was given out, that he was a hypochondriacal man,
 and had killed himselfⁿ. Of this the king was pos- 430
 sessed, till Dr. Lloyd went and told him what he
 had seen. The body lay two days exposed, many
 going to see it, who went away much moved with
 the sight. And indeed men's spirits were so sharp-
 ened upon it, that we all looked on it as a very
 great happiness, that the people did not vent their
 fury upon the papists about the town.

The session of parliament was to be opened with- Oates made
 in three days: and it may be easily imagined in a new dis-
 covery.
 what a temper they met. The court party were
 out of countenance. So the country party were
 masters this session. All Oates's evidence was now
 so well believed, that it was not safe for any man to
 seem to doubt of any part of it. He thought he
 had the nation in his hands, and was swelled up to
 a high pitch of vanity and insolence. And now he
 made a new edition of his discovery at the bar of
 the house of commons. He said, the pope had de-
 clared that England was his kingdom, and that he
 had sent over commissions to several persons: and
 had by these made lord Arundel of Wardour, chan-
 cellor; lord Powis, treasurer; sir William Godolphin,
 then in Spain, privy seal; Coleman, secretary of
 state; Bellasis, general; Petre, lieutenant general;
 Ratcliffe, major general; Stafford, paymaster gene-

ⁿ That he was a hypochon- yond all possibility of doubt.
 driacal man, and inherited his See sir Roger L'Estrange's
 father's distemper, who had Brief History of the Times,
 made several attempts to de- part III. p. 182, 183. *Cole*.
 stroy himself, is made out be-

1678. ral; and Langhorn, advocate general; besides many other commissions for subaltern officers. These, he said, he saw in Langhorn's chamber; and that he had delivered out many of them himself, and saw many more delivered by others. And he now swore, upon his own knowledge, that both Coleman and Wakeman were in the plot; that Coleman had given eighty guineas to four ruffians, that went to Windsor last summer, to stab the king; that Wakeman had undertaken to poison him, for which 10,000*l.* was offered him, but that he got the price raised to 15,000*l.* He excused his not knowing them, when confronted with them; and said, that he was then so spent by a long examination, and by not sleeping for two nights, that he was not then master of himself; though it seemed very strange, that he should then have forgot that which he made now the main part of his evidence, and should have then objected only reports upon hearsay, when he had such matter against them, as he now said, upon his own knowledge. And it seemed not very congruous, that those who went to stab the king had but twenty guineas apiece, when Wakeman was to have 15,000*l.* for a safer way of killing him. Many other things in the discovery made it seem ill digested, and not credible. Bellasis was almost perpetually ill of the gout. Petre was a weak man, and had never any military command. Ratcliffe was a man that lived in great state in the north, and had not stirred from home all the last summer. Oates also swore, he delivered a commission to be a colonel, in May last, to Howard, the earl of Carlisle's
431 brother, that had married the duchess of Richmond. But a friend of mine told me, he was all that month

at Bath, lodged in the same house with Howard, 1678.
with whom he was every day engaged at play. He was then miserably ill of the gout, of which he died soon after. Oates did also charge general Lambert, as one engaged in the design, who was to have a great post, when set at liberty. But he had been kept in prison ever since the restoration; and by that time had lost his memory and sense. But it was thought strange, that since Oates had so often said, what I once heard him say, that he had gone in among them on design to betray them, that he had not kept any one of all these commissions to be real proof in support of his evidence. He had also said to the king, that whereas others ventured their lives to serve him, he had ventured his soul to serve him: and yet he did suffer the four ruffians to go to Windsor to kill him, without giving him any notice of his danger. These were characters strong enough to give suspicion, if Coleman's letters and Godfrey's murder had not seemed such authentic confirmations, as left no room to doubt of any thing. Tillotson indeed told me, that Langhorn's wife, who was still as zealous a protestant as he was a papist, came oft to him, and gave him notice of every thing she could discover among them; though she continued a faithful and dutiful wife to the last minute of her husband's life. Upon the first breaking out of the plot, before Oates had spoke a word of commissions, or had accused Langhorn, she engaged her son into some discourse upon those matters, who was a hot, indiscreet papist. He said, their designs were so well laid, it was impossible they could miscarry: and that his father would be one of the greatest men of England; for he had seen a commission

1678. from the pope, constituting him advocate general.
 This he told me in Stillingfleet's hearing.

The earl of Shaftsbury had got out of the Tower in the former session, upon his submission, to which it was not easy to bring him. But when he saw an army raised, he had no mind to lie longer in prison. The matter bore a long debate, the motion he had made in the king's bench being urged much against him. But a submission always takes off a contempt. So he got out. And now the duke of Buckingham and he, with the lords Essex and Hallifax, were the governing men among the lords. Many hard things were said against the duke. Yet when they tried to carry an address to be made to the king to send him away from court, the majority was against them.

Bedlow's
evidence.

While things were thus in a ferment at London, Bedlow delivered himself to the magistrates of Bristol, pretending he knew the secret of Godfrey's murder. So he was sent up to London. The king told
 432 me, that when the secretary examined him in his presence, at his first coming he said he knew nothing of the plot; but that he had heard that 40,000 men were to come over from Spain, who were to meet as pilgrims at St. Jago's, and were to be shipped for England: but he knew nothing of any fleet that was to bring them over. So this was looked on as very extravagant. But he said, he had seen Godfrey's body at Somerset house; and that he was offered 4000*l.* by a servant of the lord Bellasis, to assist in carrying it away: but upon that he had gone out of town to Bristol, where he was so pursued with horror, that it forced him to discover it. Bedlow had led a very vicious life. He had gone by

many false names, by which he had cheated many persons. He had gone over many parts of France and Spain, as a man of quality. And he had made a shift to live on his wits, or rather by his cheats. So a tenderness of conscience did not seem to be that to which he was much subject. But the very next day after this, when he was brought to the bar of the house of lords, he made a full discovery of his knowledge of the plot, and of the lords in the Tower: for all those against whom Oates had informed were now prisoners. The king was upon this convinced, that some had been with Bedlow after he had been before him, who had instructed him in this narration, of which he had said the night before that he knew nothing: and yet he not only confirmed the main parts of Oates's discoveries, but added a great deal to them. And he now pretended, that his rambling over so many places of Europe was all in order to the carrying on this design; that he was trusted with the secret, and had opened many of the letters which he was employed to carry.

Here were now two witnesses to prove the plot, as far as swearing could prove it. And among the papers of the Jesuits, that were seized on when they were clapt up, two letters were found, that seemed to confirm all. One from Rome mentioned the sending over the patents; of which it was said in the letter, that they guessed the contents, though their patrons there carried their matters so secretly, that nothing was known, but as they thought fit. The Jesuits, when examined upon this, said, these were only patents with relation to the offices in their order. Another letter was writ to a Jesuit in the country, citing him to come to London by the

Other
proofs
that seemed
to support
the disco-
very.

1678. 24th of April; which was the day in which Oates swore they held their consult, and that fifty of them had signed the resolution of killing the king, which was to be executed by Grove and Pickering. In the end of that letter it was added, I need not enjoin secrecy, for the nature of the thing requires it. When the Jesuit was examined to this, he said, it was a summons for a meeting according to the rule 433 of their order: and they being to meet during the sitting of the parliament, that was the particular reason for enjoining secrecy. Yet, while men's minds were strongly possessed, these answers did not satisfy, but were thought only shifts.

Carstairs's
practices.

At this time Carstairs, of whose behaviour in Scotland mention has been made, not having met with those rewards that he expected, came up to London, to accuse duke Lauderdale, as designing to keep up the opposition that was made to the laws in Scotland, even at the time that he seemed to prosecute conventicles with the greatest fury; because he had often drawn the chief of their teachers into such snares, that upon the advertisements that he gave they might have been taken, but that duke Lauderdale had neglected it: so he saw he had a mind that conventicles should go on, at the same time that he was putting the country in such a flame to punish them. This he undertook to prove, by those witnesses of whom on other occasions he had made use. He also confessed the false date of that warrant upon which Baillie had been censured. He put all this in writing, and gave it to the marquess of Athol; and pressed him to carry him to duke Hamilton and the earl of Kincardin, that he might beg their pardon, and be assured of their favour. I

was against the making use of so vile a man, and 1678.
 would have nothing to do with him. He made application to lord Cavendish, and to some of the house of commons, to whom I gave such a character of him, that they would see him no more.

While he was thus looking about where he could find a lucky piece of villainy, he happened to go into an eating-house in Covent Garden, that was over against the shop of one Staley, the popish banker, who had been in great credit, but was then under some difficulties; for all his creditors came to call for their money. Staley happening to be in the next room to Carstairs, Carstairs pretended he heard him say in French, that the king was a rogue, and persecuted the people of God; and that he himself would stab him, if nobody else would. The words were writ down, which he resolved to swear against him. So next morning he and [another who had been with him in the eating-house^p] went to him, and told him what they would swear against him, and asked a sum of money of him. He was in much anxiety, and saw great danger on both hands. Yet he chose rather to leave himself to their malice, than be preyed on by them. So he was seized on: and they swore the words against him: and he was appointed to be tried within five days^q. When I heard who the witnesses were, I thought I was bound to do what I could to stop it. So I sent both to the lord chancellor and to the attorney general, to let them know what profligate wretches these witnesses were. Jones, the attorney general, took

Staley's
trial.

^p In the printed copy was substituted, *one of his witnesses*. volume of State Trials, p. 133. and also Echard's account of it,

^q See the trial in the second in his History, p. 953. O.

1678. it ill of me, that I should disparage the king's evidence. The thing grew public, and raised great clamour against me. It was said, I was taking this method to get into favour at court. I had likewise observed to several persons of weight, how many incredible things there were in the evidence that was given: I wished they would make use of the heat the nation was in to secure us effectually from popery: we saw certain evidence to carry us so far, as to graft that upon it: but I wished they would not run too hastily to the taking men's lives upon such testimonies. Lord Hollis had more temper than I expected from a man of his heat. Lord Halifax was of the same mind. But the earl of Shaftsbury could not bear the discourse. He said, we must support the evidence; and that all those who undermined the credit of the witnesses were to be looked on as public enemies. And so inconstant a thing is popularity, that I was most bitterly railed at by those who seemed formerly to put some confidence in me. It went so far, that I was advised not to stir abroad for fear of public affronts. But these things did not daunt me. Staley was brought to his trial, which did not hold long. The witnesses gave a full evidence against him: and he had nothing to offer to take away their credit. He only shewed how improbable it was, that in a public house he should talk such things with so loud a voice as to be heard in the next room, in a quarter of the town where almost every body understood French. He was cast^r: and he prepared himself very seriously for death. Dr. Lloyd went to see him in prison. He was offered his life, if he would

^r Anglice, found guilty. S.

discover their plots. He protested he knew of none ; 1678.
 and that he had not said the words sworn against
 him, nor any thing to that purpose. ^sAnd he died
 the first of those who suffered on the account of the
 plot. Duke Lauderdale, having heard how I had
 moved in this matter, railed at me with open mouth.
 He said, I had studied to save Staley, for the liking
 I had to any one that would murder the king. And
 he infused this into the king, so that he repeated it
 in the house of lords to a company that were stand-
 ing about him.

Yet so soon could the king turn to make use of a
 man whom he had censured so unmercifully, that
 two days after this he sent the earl of Dunbarton,
 that was a papist, and had been bred in France, and
 was duke Hamilton's brother, to me, to desire me to
 come to him secretly, for he had a mind to talk
 with me. He said, he believed I could do him ser-
 vice, if I had a mind to it. And the see of Chiches-
 ter being then void, he said he would not dispose of
 it, till he saw whether I would deserve it or not. I
 asked, if he fancied I would be a spy, or betray any
 body to him. But he undertook to me, that the
 king should ask me no question, but should in all
 points leave me to my liberty.

An accident fell in, before I went to him, which 435
 took off much from Oates's credit. When he was
 examined by the house of lords, and had made the
 same narrative to them that he had offered to the

The queen
 was charg-
 ed as in the
 plot.

^s (Echard says, in his His-
 tory of England, that at his
 execution he denied the words,
 for which he was condemned,
 or if he did use them, declared
 they were the effect of a vast

passion, without any design a-
 gainst the king's person. There
 was a third witness to the
 words, who called Carstairs his
 captain.)

1678. commons, they asked him, if he had now named all the persons whom he knew to be involved in the plot? He said, there might be some inferior persons whom he had perhaps forgot, but he had named all the persons of note. Yet, it seems, afterwards he bethought himself: and Mrs. Elliot, wife to Elliot of the bedchamber, came to the king, and told him, Oates had somewhat to swear against the queen, if he would give way to it. The king was willing to give Oates line enough, as he expressed it to me, and seemed to give way to it. So he came out with a new story, that the queen had sent for some Jesuits to Somerset house: and that he went along with them, but stayed at the door, when they went in; where he heard one, in a woman's voice, expressing her resentments of the usage she had met with, and assuring them she would assist them in taking off the king: upon that he was brought in, and presented to her: and there was then no other woman in the room but she. When he was bid describe the room, it proved to be one of the public rooms of that court, which are so great, that the queen, who was a woman of a low voice, could not be heard over it, unless she had strained for it. Oates, to excuse his saying that he could not lay any thing to the charge of any besides those he had already named, pretended, that he thought then it was not lawful to accuse the queen. But this did not satisfy people. Bedlow, to support this, swore, that being once at chapel at Somerset house, he saw the queen, the duke, and some others, very earnest in discourse in the closet above; and that one came down with much joy, and said, the queen had yielded at last; and that one explained this to him

beyond sea, and said, it was to kill the king. And, besides Bedlow's oath that he saw Godfrey's body in Somerset house, it was remembered, that at that time the queen was for some days in so close a retirement, that no person was admitted. Prince Rupert came then to wait on her, but was denied access. This raised a strange suspicion of her. But the king would not suffer that matter to go any farther^t. 1678.

While examinations were going on, and preparation was making for the trial of the prisoners, a bill was brought into the house of commons, requiring all members of either house, and all such as might come into the king's court or presence, to take a test against popery; in which, not only transubstantiation was renounced, but the worship of the

A law passed for the test to be taken by both houses.

^t (The king's constant and steady protection of his queen against these horrible slanders reflects credit on his conduct in this instance, during these difficult and dangerous times. Even that prejudiced partisan, Oldmixon, in his *History of the Stuarts*, confesses his persuasion of the queen's innocence. "I shall not," he says, "enlarge upon Oates's and Bedloe's accusation of the queen, for I do not much give into it, having occasion to know more of that princess than the common writers, as the archdeacon (Echard) has it. For some of the last words she said before her death at Lisbon, were to an English physician (Dr. Chrichton), from whom I had it. The queen, sitting up in her bed, called to him to hold her,

"while she said softly to this effect, That when she was in England, she had been wrongfully charged with endeavouring to bring in popery; that she had never desired any more favour for those of her own religion, than was granted them by her marriage articles; that she had never been a promoter of the French interest; on the contrary, that it was one of her greatest griefs, at her going out of the world, to think that when she was gone, the French faction in her brother's court might do the confederates ill offices, for it was she that had kept him firm to them." p. 618. Oldmixon repeats this account in his *History of the Three succeeding Reigns*, p. 6.)

1678. Virgin Mary and the saints, as it was practised in the church of Rome, was declared to be idolatrous. This passed in the house of commons without any difficulty. But in the house of lords, Gunning, 436 bishop of Ely, maintained, that the church of Rome was not idolatrous. He was answered by Barlow, bishop of Lincoln. The lords did not much mind Gunning's arguments, but passed the bill. And though Gunning had said, that he could not take that test with a good conscience, yet, as soon as the bill was passed, he took it in the crowd with the rest^u. The duke got a proviso to be put in it for excepting himself. He spoke upon that occasion with great earnestness, and with tears in his eyes. He said, he was now to cast himself upon their favour in the greatest concern he could have in this world. He spoke much of his duty to the king, and of his zeal for the nation: and solemnly protested, that, whatever his religion might be, it should only be a private thing between God and his own soul, and that no effect of it should ever appear in the government. The proviso was carried for him by a few voices. And, contrary to all men's expectations, it passed in the house of commons^x. There was also a proviso put in, excepting nine ladies about the queen. And she said, she would have all

With a proviso for the duke.

^u (Evelyn, in his *Memoirs*, says, "I went with sir William Godolphin, a member of the commons' house, to the bishop of Ely (Dr. Pet. Gunning), to be resolved, whether masses were idolatry, as the test expressed it; which was so worded, that several good protestants scrupled, and sir William, though a learned

" man, and excellent divine himself, had some doubts about it. The bishop's opinion was, that he might take it, though he wished it had been otherwise worded in the test." Vol. I. p. 475.

^x By a majority of two. The numbers were 158 and 156. See the Journal of 21st of Nov-1678. O.

the ladies of that religion cast lots, who should be 1678.
comprehended. Only she named the duchess of
Portsmouth, as one whom she would not expose to
the uncertainty of a lot; which was not thought
very decent in her, though her circumstances at that
time required an extraordinary submission to the
king in every thing^y.

Coleman was brought to his trial. Oates and Coleman's
Bedlow swore flatly against him, as was mentioned trial.
before. He denied, that he had ever seen either
the one or the other of them in his whole life: and
defended himself by Oates's not knowing him, when
they were first confronted, nor objecting those mat-
ters to him for a great while after. He also pressed
Oates to name the day in August, in which he had
sent the fourscore guineas to the four ruffians. But
Oates would fix on no day, though he was very
punctual in matters of less moment. Coleman had
been out of town almost that whole month. But,
no day being named, that served him in no stead.
He urged the improbability of his talking to two
such men, whom he had by their own confession
never seen before. But they said, he was told
that they were trusted with the whole secret. His
letters to P. de la Chaise was the heaviest part of
the evidence. He did not deny, that there were
many impertinent things in his letters: but, he said,
he intended nothing in them, but the king's service
and the duke's: he never intended to bring in the
catholic religion, by rebellion, or by blood, but only
by a toleration: and the aid that was prayed from

^y The duchess of Portsmouth duchess of Cleveland never
always behaved herself with did; who, the queen used to
great respect to the queen, say, was a cruel woman. D.
which her predecessor the

1678. France, was only meant the assistance of money,
 — and the interposition of that court. After a long
 437 trial, he was convicted: and sentence passed upon
 him to die as a traitor. He continued to his last
 breath denying every tittle of that which the wit-
 nesses had sworn against him. Many were sent to
 him from both houses, offering to interpose for his
 pardon, if he would confess. He still protested his
 innocence, and took great care to vindicate the
 duke. He said, his own heat might make him too
 forward: for, being persuaded of the truth of his
 religion, he could not but wish, that all others were
 not only almost, but altogether, such as he was, ex-
 cept in that chain; for he was then in irons: he
 confessed, he had mixed too much interest for rais-
 ing himself in all he did; and that he had received
 two thousand five hundred guineas from the French
 ambassador, to gain some friends to his master, but
 that he had kept them to himself: he had acted by
 order in all that he had done: and he believed the
 king knew of his employment, particularly that at
 Brussels. But, though he seemed willing to be
 questioned concerning the king, the committee did
 not think fit to do it, nor to report what he said con-
 cerning it: only in general they reported, that he
 spoke of another matter, about which they did not
 think fit to interrogate him, nor to mention it. Lit-
 tleton was one of the committee; and gave me an
 account of all that passed that very night. And I
 found his behaviour made great impression on them
 all. He suffered with much composedness and devo-
 tion; and died much better than he had lived. It
 was given out at that time, to make the duke more
 odious, that Coleman was kept up from making con-

And execu-
 tion.

fessions, by the hopes the duke sent him of a pardon at Tyburn. But he could not be so ignorant, as not to know that, at that time, it was not in the king's power to pardon him, while the tide went so high. 1678.

The nation was now so much alarmed, that all people were furnishing themselves with arms, which heightened the jealousy of the court. A bill passed in both houses for raising all the militia, and for keeping it together for six weeks: a third part, if I remember right, being to serve a fortnight, and so round. I found some of them hoped, when that bill passed into a law, they would be more masters; and that the militia would not separate, till all the demands of the two houses should be granted. The king [had notice of the consequence of that bill, and of the effects it might have. He] rejected the bill, when offered to him for his assent, [and thanked me for the advice I sent him.]

I waited often on him all the month of December. He came to me to Chiffinch's, a page of the back stairs; and kept the time he assigned me to a minute. He was alone, and talked much and very freely with me. We agreed in one thing, that the greatest part of the evidence was a contrivance. But he suspected, some had set on Oates, and instructed him: and he named the earl of Shaftsbury. I was of another mind. I thought the many gross things in his narrative shewed, there was no abler head than Oates, or Tonge, in the framing it^z; and

The king's
thoughts of
this whole
matter.

^z “ (A certain lord of his “ would scarce go down with
“ (lord Shaftsbury's) confi- “ *tantum non* ideots; what then
“ dence in parliament, once “ could he propose by pressing
“ asked him what he intended “ the belief of it upon men of
“ to do with the plot, which “ common sense, and especial-
“ was so full of nonsense, as “ ly in parliament? It is no

1678. Oates in his first story had covered the duke and the ministers so much, that from thence it seemed clear that lord Shaftsbury had no hand in it, who hated them much more than he did popery. He fancied, there was a design of a rebellion on foot. I assured him, I saw no appearances of it. I told him, there was a report breaking out, that he intended to legitimate the duke of Monmouth. He answered quick, that, as well as he loved him, he had rather see him hanged. Yet he apprehended a rebellion so much, that he seemed not ill pleased that the party should flatter themselves with that imagination, hoping that would keep them quiet in a dependance upon himself: and he suffered the duke of Monmouth to use all methods to make himself popular, reckoning that he could keep him in his own management. He was surprised, when I told him that Coleman had insinuated that he knew of all their foreign negotiations; or at least he seemed so to me. I pressed him much to oblige the duke to enter into conferences with some of our divines, and to be present at them himself. This would very much clear him of jealousy, and might have a good effect on his brother: at least it would give the world some hopes; like what Henry IV. of France, his grandfather, did, which kept a party firm to him for some time before he changed. He answered, that his brother had neither Henry IV.'s understanding nor his conscience: for he believed, that king was always indifferent as to those mat-

“ matter, said he, the more
 “ nonsensical, the better; if we
 “ cannot bring them to swal-
 “ low worse nonsense than
 “ that, we shall never do any

“ good with them.” *North's
 Examen of the Critical Hist. of
 England*, vol. I. cap. 11. §. cxx.
 p. 95.)

1678.

ters^a. He would not hearken to this, which made me incline to believe a report I had heard, that the duke had got a solemn promise of the king, that he would never speak to him of religion. The king spoke much to me concerning Oates's accusing the queen, and acquainted me with the whole progress of it. He said, she was a weak woman, and had some disagreeable humours, but was not capable of a wicked thing: and, considering his faultiness towards her in other things, he thought it a horrid thing to abandon her. He said, he looked on falsehood and cruelty as the greatest crimes in the sight of God: he knew, he had led a bad life; (of which he spoke with some sense:) but he was breaking himself of all his faults: and he would never do a base and a wicked thing. I spoke on all these subjects what I thought became me, which he took well. And I encouraged him much in his resolution of not exposing the queen to perish by false swearing. I told him, there was no possibility of laying the heat that was now raised, but by changing his ministry. And I told him how odious the earl of Danby was, and that there was a design against him: but I knew not the particulars. He said, he knew that lay at bottom. The army was not yet 439 disbanded: and the king was in great straits for money. The house of commons gave a money bill for this. Yet they would not trust the court with the disbanding the army: but ordered the money to be brought into the chamber of London, and named

^a His brother was of another opinion, as the earl of Thanet told me, who once took an occasion to tell the duke, he had heard that his grandfather said, the crown of France was worth a mass. To which he answered very hastily, "That story is false, Harry the fourth was as good a catholic as I am." D.

1678. a committee for paying off and breaking the army.

I perceived the king thought I was reserved to him, because I would tell him no particular stories, nor name persons. Upon which I told him, since he had that opinion of me, I saw I could do him no service, and would trouble him no more; but he should certainly hear from me, if I came to know any thing that might be of any consequence to his person or government.

This favour of mine lasted all the month of December 78. I acquainted him with Carstairs's practice against duke Lauderdale, and all that I knew of that matter; which was the ground on which I had gone with relation to Staley. The king told duke Lauderdale of it, without naming me. And he sent for Carstairs, and charged him with it. Carstairs denied it all; but said, that duke Hamilton and lord Kincardin had pressed him to do it: and he went to the king, and affirmed it confidently to him. He did not name lord Athol, hoping that he would be gentle to him for that reason. The king spoke of this to duke Hamilton, who told him the whole story, as I had done. Lord Athol upon that sent for Carstairs, and charged him with all this foul dealing, and drew him near a closet, where he had put two witnesses. Carstairs said, that somebody had discovered the matter to duke Lauderdale, that he was now upon the point of making his fortune, and that if duke Lauderdale grew to be his enemy, he was undone. He confessed, he had charged duke Hamilton and lord Kincardin falsely: but he had no other way to save himself. After the marquess of Athol had thus drawn every thing from him, he went to the king with his two witnesses,

and the paper that Carstairs had formerly put in his hand. Carstairs was then with the king, and was, with many imprecations, justifying his charge against the two lords : but he was confounded, when he saw lord Athol. And upon that his villainy appeared so evidently, that the part I had acted in that matter was now well understood and approved of. Carstairs died, not long after, under great horror ; and ordered himself to be cast into some ditch as a dog ; for he said he was no better. But I could never hear what he said of Staley's business.

While all matters were in this confusion, a new incident happened that embroiled them yet more. The earl of Danby had broke with Mountague : but he knew what letters he had writ to him, and with what secrets he had trusted him. He apprehended Mountague might accuse him : so he resolved to prevent him. Jenkins, who was then at Nimeguen, writ over, according to a direction sent him, as was believed, that he understood that Mountague had been in a secret correspondence, and in dangerous practices with the pope's nuncio at Paris. This was meant of one Con, whom I knew well, who had been long in Rome : and most of the letters between England and Rome passed through his hands : he was a crafty man, and knew news well, and loved money : so Mountague made use of him, and gave him money for such secrets as he could draw from him. Upon Jenkins's letter, the king sent a message to the house of commons, letting them know that he was resolved to bring Mountague to a trial, for being a confederate with Rome, and in the plot to bring in popery : and at the same time he sent to secure his cabinets and papers. This was a device of lord Dan-

1678.

Danby's
letters to
Mountague
are brought
out.

440

1678. by's to find his own letters, and destroy them; and then to let the prosecution fall: for they knew they had nothing against Mountague. But Mountague understood the arts of a court too well to be easily caught; and had put a box, in which those letters were, in sure hands out of the way. A great debate rose upon this matter in the house of commons. It was thought a high breach of privilege to seize on the papers of a member of their house, when there was nothing of treason sworn against him. After some hours spent in the debate, during which Mountague sat silent very long; at last, when the box was brought to him from the person to whom he had trusted it, he opened it, and took out two of lord Danby's letters, that contained instructions to him to treat with the king of France for 300,000*l.* a year for three years, if a peace succeeded, since it would not be convenient for the king to meet a parliament in all that time, and he was charged to mention no part of this to the secretary of state^b. Winnington, who from small beginnings, and from as small a proportion of learning in his profession, in which he was rather bold and ready than able, was now come to be

^b (At the end of the letter were these words: "This letter was writ by my order. C. R." See Oldmixon's *History of the Stuarts*, p. 621. "In Barillon's letters there are several relations of money sought by Buckingham and Mountague, and sometimes given, and oftener refused to them. So far as I could discover in the papers at Versailles, Mountague did not receive more than 50,000 of the 100,000 crowns promised to him for

"ruining lord Danby." *Dalrymple's Memoirs of Great Britain and Ireland, Appendix*. p. 318. Dr. Lingard states, from Montague's own Letters, published among those of lord Danby, that the application to the court of France for money, in return for the king's services in disposing the allies to consent to the conditions of peace, had been suggested and recommended by him. *History of England*, vol. VIII. c. 5. p. 86.)

solicitor general, fell severely upon those letters ^c. 1678.
 He said, here was a minister, who, going out of the affairs of his own province, was directing the king's ambassadors, and excluding the secretary of state, whose office it was, from the knowledge of it: here was the faith of England to our allies, and our interest likewise, set to sale for French money, and that to keep off a session of parliament: this was a design to sell the nation, and to subvert the government: and he concluded, that was high treason. Upon which he moved, that lord Danby should be impeached of high treason. The earl of Danby's party was much confounded. They could neither deny nor justify his letters. But they argued, that they could not be high treason, since no such fact was comprehended in any of the statutes of treason: 441
 the letters seemed to be writ by the king's order, who certainly might appoint any person he pleased to send his orders to his ministers abroad: they reflected on the business of the earl of Strafford, and on constructive treason, which was a device to condemn a man for a fact against which no law did lie. Mainard, an ancient and eminent lawyer, explained the words of the statute of 25 Edward III. that the courts of law could not proceed but upon one of the crimes there enumerated: but the parliament had still a power, by the clause in that act, to declare what they thought was treason ^d: so an act passed,

^c The old lord Trevor, who knew him well, said to me, "that Winnington was in very little esteem in Westminster hall." But he was certainly a man of parts, as appears in all his parliamentary performances in these times. He was much sunk afterwards, and very little considered, which carried him, after the revolution, into opposition to the measures of the court. O.

^d Yes, by a new act, but not

1678. declaring poisoning treason, in king Henry VIII.'s time: and though by the statute it was only treason to conspire against the prince of Wales; yet if one should conspire against the whole royal family, when there was no prince of Wales, they would without doubt declare that to be high treason.

And he was
impeached
of high
treason.

After a long debate it was voted by a majority of above seventy voices, that lord Danby should be impeached of high treason. And the impeachment was next day carried up to the lords^e. The earl of Danby justified himself, that he had served the king faithfully, and according to his own orders. And he produced some of Mountague's letters, to shew that at the court of France he was looked on as an enemy to their interest. He said, they knew him well that judged so of him; for he was indeed an enemy to it: and, among other reasons, he gave this for one, that he knew the French king held both the king's person and government under the last degree of contempt. These words were thought very strange with relation to both kings. A great debate arose in the house of lords concerning the impeachment; whether it ought to be received as an impeachment of high treason, only because the commons added the word high treason in it. It was said, the utmost

with a retrospect; therefore Maynard was a knave or a fool, with all his law. S.

^e ("Meanwhile the treasurer
endeavoured to destroy the
credit of his accuser, and on
the 7th (of Dec.) produced
some letters from him, when
in France, which were read
in the house, and made it ap-
pear, that Montague had been
very guilty of the offences

“ he threw upon his lordship,
“ but his enemies were so
“ many and so powerful, that
“ the whole edge was bent
“ against him; in a word, the
“ tide was not to be stemmed,
“ and six articles of impeach-
“ ment were drawn against
“ him.” *Memoirs of sir John*
Reresby, page 215. See also
page 220.)

that could be made of it was to suppose it true: 1678.
 but even in that case they must needs say plainly,
 that it was not within the statute. To this it was
 answered, that the house of commons, that brought
 up the impeachment, were to be heard to two points:
 the one was, to the nature of the crime: the other
 was, to the trial of it: but the lords could not take
 upon them to judge of either of these, till they heard
 what the commons could offer to support the charge:
 they were bound therefore to receive the charge, and
 to proceed according to the rules of parliament,
 which was to commit the person so impeached, and
 then give a short day for his trial: so it would be
 soon over, if the commons could not prove the mat-
 ter charged to be high treason. The debate went
 on with great heat on both sides: but the majority
 was against the commitment. Upon this, it was 442
 visible, the commons would have complained that
 the lords denied them justice. So there was no
 hope of making up the matter. And upon that the
 parliament was prorogued.

The parlia-
 ment was
 prorogued.

This was variously censured. The court con-
 demned Mountague for revealing the king's secrets.
 Others said, that, since lord Danby had begun to fall
 on him, it was reasonable and natural for him to de-
 fend himself. The letters did cast a very great ble-
 mish, not only on lord Danby, but on the king;
 who, after he had entered into alliances, and had
 received great supplies from his people to carry on
 a war, was thus treating with France for money,
 which could not be asked or obtained from France
 on any other account, but that of making the con-
 federates accept of lower terms than otherwise they
 would have stood on; which was indeed the selling

1678. of the allies and of the public faith. All that the court said in excuse for this was, that, since the king saw a peace was resolved on, after he had put himself to so great a charge to prepare for war, it was reasonable for him to be reimbursed as much as he could from France; this was ordinary in all treaties, where the prince that desired a peace was made to buy it. This indeed would have justified the king, if it had been demanded above board^f: but such underhand dealing was mean and dishonourable: and it was said, that the States went into the peace with such unreasonable earnestness upon the knowledge, or at least the suspicion, that they had of such practices. This gave a new wound to the king's credit abroad, or rather it opened the old one: for indeed after our breaking both the treaty of Breda, and the triple alliance, we had not much credit to lose abroad. None gained so much by this discovery as secretary Coventry; since now it appeared, that he was not trusted with those ill practices. He had been severely fallen on for the famed saying of the murder of forty men. Birch aggravated the matter heavily; and said, it seemed he thought the murder of forty men a very small matter, since he would rather be guilty of it, than oppose an alliance made upon such treacherous views. Coventry answered, that he always spoke to them sincerely, and as he thought; and that if an angel from heaven should come and say otherwise, (at this they were very attentive, to see how he could close a period so strangely begun,) he was sure he should never get back to heaven again, but would be a fallen and

^f Style of a gamester. S.

a lying angel. Now the matter was well understood, and his credit was set on a sure foot. 1678.

After the prorogation, the earl of Danby saw the king's affairs and the state of the nation required a speedy session. He saw little hope of recovering himself with that parliament, in which so great a majority were already so deeply engaged. So he entered into a treaty with some of the country party for a new parliament. He undertook to get the duke to be sent out of the way against the time of its meeting. Lord Hollis, Littleton, Boscawen, and Hambden were spoke to. They were all so apprehensive of the continuance of that parliament, and that another set of ministers would be able to manage them as the court pleased, that they did undertake to save him, if he could bring these things about. But it was understood that he must quit his post, and withdraw from affairs. Upon which they promised their assistance to carry off his impeachment with a mild censure. The duke went into the advice of a dissolution upon other grounds. He thought the house of commons had engaged with so much heat in the matter of the plot, that they could never be brought off, or be made more gentle in the matter of religion. He thought a new parliament would act in a milder strain, and not fly so high ; or that they would give no money, and so the king and they would break : for he dreaded nothing so much as the bargains that were made with the present parliament, in which popery was always to be the sacrifice. Thus both the duke and lord Danby joined in advancing a dissolution, which was not resolved on till the January following.

In December, Ireland, Whitebread, and Fenwick, The trial of F. Ireland

1678. three Jesuits; and Grove and Pickering, two of the
and some servants in the queen's chapel, were brought to their
others. trial. Oates and Bedlow swore home against Ireland, that in August last he had given particular orders about killing the king. Oates swore the same against the other two Jesuits. But Bedlow swore only upon hearsay against them. So, though they had pleaded to their indictment, and the jury was sworn, and the witnesses examined; yet, when the evidence was not found full, their trial was put off to another time, and the jury was not charged with them. This looked as if it was resolved that they must not be acquitted. I complained of this to Jones: but he said, they had precedents for it. I always thought, that a precedent against reason signified no more, but that the like injustice had been done before. And the truth is, the crown has, or at least had, such advantages in trials of treason, that it seems strange how any person was ever acquitted. Ireland, in his own defence, proved by many witnesses, that he went from London on the second of August to Staffordshire, and did not come back till the twelfth of September. Yet, in opposition to that, a woman swore that she saw him in London about the middle of August. So, since he might have come up post in one day, and gone down in another, this did not satisfy. Oates and Bedlow swore against Grove and Pickering, that they undertook to shoot the king at Windsor; that
444 Grove was to have 1500*l.* for it; and that Pickering chose thirty thousand masses, which, at a shilling a mass, amounted to the same sum: they attempted it three several times with a pistol: once the flint was loose: at another time there was no

powder in the pan: and the third time the pistol 1678.
 was charged only with bullets. This was strange
 stuff. But all was imputed to a special providence
 of God: and the whole evidence was believed. So
 they were convicted, condemned, and executed.
 But they denied to the last every particular that
 was sworn against them.

This began to shake the credit of the evidence, Dugdale's
evidence.
 when a more composed and credible person came in
 to support it. One Dugdale, that had been the lord
 Aston's bailiff, and lived in a fair reputation in the
 country, was put in prison for refusing the oaths of
 allegiance and supremacy^g. He did then, with many
 imprecations on himself, deny, that he knew of any
 plot. But afterwards he made a great discovery of
 a correspondence that Evers, the lord Aston's Je-
 suit, held with the Jesuits in London; who had writ
 to Evers of the design of killing the king, and de-
 sired him to find out men proper for executing it,
 whether they were gentlemen or not. This, he
 swore, was writ plain in a letter from Whitebread,
 the provincial, directed to himself: but he knew it
 was meant for Evers. Evers, and Govan, another
 Jesuit, pressed this Dugdale to undertake it: they
 promised he should be canonized for it: and the
 lord Stafford offered him 500*l*. if he would set about
 it. He was a man of sense and temper; and be-
 haved himself decently; and had somewhat in his

^g (Higgon's, in his Remarks
 on Burnet's History, page 209,
 points out, that on lord Staf-
 ford's trial, (he might have
 added, on the trial of the five
 Jesuits,) it was proved, that
 Dugdale was a man of bad
 character, and had defrauded

lord Aston his master; and ob-
 serves, that the bishop him-
 self, in p. 505, relates, that on
 the trial of College, Dugdale
 forswore himself so directly,
 that he *quite sunk his credit,*
and was never more heard of.)

1678. air and deportment that disposed people to believe
 ——— him: so that the king himself began to think there
 was somewhat in the plot, though he had very little
 regard either to Oates or Bedlow. Dugdale's evi-
 dence was much confirmed by one circumstance.
 He had talked of a justice of peace in Westminster
 that was killed, on the Tuesday after Godfrey was
 missed: so that the news of this must have been
 writ from London on the Saturday night's post. He
 did not think it was a secret: and so he talked of it
 as news in an alehouse. The two persons, he said
 he spoke it to, remembered nothing of it, the one
 being the minister of the parish: but several others
 swore they had heard it. He saw this, as he swore,
 in a letter writ by Harcourt the Jesuit to Evers, in
 which Godfrey was named. But he added a strange
 story to this, which he said Evers told him after-
 wards; that the duke had sent to Coleman, when
 he was in Newgate, to persuade him to discover no-
 thing, and that he desired to know of him, whe-
 ther he had ever discovered their designs to any
 other person; and that Coleman sent back answer,
 that he had spoke of them to Godfrey, but to no
 other man: upon which the duke gave order to kill
 445 him. This was never made public till the lord Staf-
 ford's trial. And I was amazed to see such a thing
 break out after so long a silence. It looked like an
 addition to Dugdale's first evidence; though he had
 been noted for having brought out all his discoveries
 at once. The earl of Essex told me, he swore it in
 his first examination: but, since it was only upon
 hearsay from Evers, and so was nothing in law, and
 yet would heighten the fury against the duke, the
 king charged Dugdale to say nothing of it.

At the same time a particular discovery was made 1678.
of Godfrey's murder. Prance, a goldsmith, that Prance discovers Godfrey's murder.
wrought for the queen's chapel, had gone from his house for two or three days, the week before the murder. And one that lodged in his house, calling that to mind, upon Bedlow's swearing he saw the body in Somerset house, fancied that this was the time in which he was from home, and that he might be concerned in that matter; though it appeared afterwards, that his absence was the week before. He said, he went from his own house, fearing to be put in prison, as many were, upon suspicion, or on the account of his religion. Yet upon this information he was seized on, and carried to Westminster. Bedlow accidentally passed by, not knowing any thing concerning him: and at first sight he charged somebody to seize on him; for he was one of those whom he saw about Godfrey's body. Yet he denied every thing for some days. Afterwards he confessed he was concerned in it: and he gave this account of it: Girald and Kelly, two priests, engaged him and three others into it; who were Green, that belonged to the queen's chapel, Hill, that had served Godden, the most celebrated writer among them, and Berry, the porter of Somerset house. He said, these all, except Berry, had several meetings, in which the priests persuaded them it was no sin, but a meritorious action, to despatch Godfrey, who had been a busy man in taking depositions against them, and that the taking him off would terrify others. Prance named an alehouse where they used to meet: and the people of that house did confirm this of their meeting there. After they had resolved on it, they followed him for several days. The morning

1678. before they killed him, Hill went to his house, to see if he was yet gone out, and spoke to his maid. And, finding he was yet at home, they stayed for his coming out. This was confirmed by the maid, who, upon Hill's being taken, went to Newgate, and, in a crowd of prisoners, distinguished him, and said, he was the person that asked for her master the morning before he was lost. Prance said, they dogged him into a place near St. Clement's church, where he was kept till night. Prance was appointed to be at Somerset house at night. [This laid the suspicion still heavier on the duke of Norfolk^h.] And, as Godfrey went by the water gate, two of them pretended to be hot in a quarrel. And

446 one run out to call a justice of peace, and so pressed Godfrey to go in and part them. He was not easily prevailed on to do it. Yet he did at last. Green then got behind him, and pulled a cravat about his neck, and drew him down to the ground, and strangled him. Upon that, Girald would have run him through: but the rest diverted him from that, by representing the danger of a discovery by the blood's being seen there. Upon that they carried his body up to Godden's room, of which Hill had the key, Godden being then in France. Two days after that, they removed it to a room cross the upper court, which Prance could never describe particularly. And, that not being found a convenient place, they carried it back to Godden's lodgings. At last it was resolved to carry it out in the night in a sedan to the remote parts of the town, and from thence to cast it into some ditch. On Wednesday a sedan was provided. And one of the cen-

^h (See before, p. 429, folio edit.)

tinels swore he saw a sedan carried in: but none 1678.
saw it brought out. Prance said, they carried him ———
out, and that Green had provided a horse, on whose
back he laid him, when they were got clear of
the town: and then he carried him, as he believed,
to the place where his body was found. This was
a consisting story, which was supported in some cir-
cumstances by collateral proofs. He added another
particular, that, some days after the fact, those who
had been concerned in it, and two others, who were
in the secret, appointed to meet at Bow, where they
talked much of that matter. This was confirmed
by a servant of that house, who was coming in and
out to them, and heard them often mention God-
frey's name. Upon which he stood at the door out
of curiosity to hearken: but one of them came out,
and threatened him for it. The priests were not
found: but Green, Hill, and Berry, were appre-
hended upon it. Yet some days after this, Prance
desired to be carried to the king, who would not see
him, but in council: and he denied all that he had
formerly sworn, and said it was all a fiction. But
as soon as he was carried back to prison, he sent
the keeper of Newgate to the king, to tell him, that
all he had sworn was true, but that the horror and
confusion he was in put him on denying it. Yet he
went off from this again, and denied every thing.
Dr. Lloyd was upon this sent to him, to talk with
him. At first he denied every thing to him. But Dr.
Lloyd said to me, that he was almost dead through
the disorder of his mind, and with cold in his body.
But after that Dr. Lloyd had made a fire, and
caused him to be put in a bed, and began to dis-
course the matter with him, he returned to his con-

1678. fession ; which he did in such a manner, that Lloyd
 said to me, it was not possible for him to doubt of
 his sincerity in itⁱ.

Some con-
 demned for
 it, who died
 denying it.

So, he persisting in his first confession, Green,
 Hill, and Berry were brought to their trial. Bed-
 low and Prance, with all the circumstances formerly
 mentioned, were the evidence against them. On
 the other hand they brought witnesses to prove,
 447 that they came home in a good hour on the nights
 in which the fact was said to be done. Those that
 lived in Godden's lodgings deposed, that no dead
 body could be brought thither, for they were every
 day in the room that Prance had named. And the
 centinels of that night of the carrying him out said,
 they saw no sedan brought out. They were, upon
 a full hearing, convicted and condemned. Green
 and Hill died, as they had lived, papists ; and, with
 solemn protestations, denied the whole thing. Berry
 declared himself a protestant ; and that though he
 had changed his religion for fear of losing his place,
 yet he had still continued to be one in his heart. He
 said, he looked on what had now befallen him, as a
 just judgment of God upon him for that dissimula-

ⁱ Lloyd, however, in a letter
 to sir Roger L'Estrange, April
 16, 1686, says thus : " I never
 saw how Prance's evidence
 could stand, and I never went
 about to support it." And
 again : " As for Otes's and
 Bedloe's and Prance's infor-
 mations, they would make
 me renounce every thing that
 dependeth on their credit." And again : " I believe Prance
 can say nothing more than
 every one knows of the mur-
 ther of sir E. B. Godfrey.

" Yet he is best able to con-
 fute his own fictions con-
 cerning it ; and his word may
 be of some credit in this,
 though of none in any thing
 else." *Brief History of the
 Times*, part III. p. 85. Thus,
 if Lloyd was sincere in what he
 wrote to sir Roger L'Estrange,
 it is quite contradictory to what
 Burnet makes him say in this
 place. But these two bishops
 did all in their power to in-
 flame matters against the pa-
 pists. *Cole*.

tion. He denied the whole matter charged on him. 1678.
He seemed to prepare himself seriously for death :
and to the last minute he affirmed he was altogether
innocent. Dr. Lloyd attended on him, and was
much persuaded of his sincerity. Prance swore no-
thing against him, but that he assisted in the fact,
and in carrying about the dead body. So Lloyd
reckoned, that, those things being done in the night,
Prance might have mistaken him for some other
person who might be like him, considering the con-
fusion that so much guilt might have put him in.
He therefore believed Prance had sworn rashly
with relation to him, but truly as to the main of the
fact. The papists took great advantage from Ber-
ry's dying a protestant, and yet denying all that
was sworn against him, though he might have had
his life, if he would have confessed it. They said,
this shewed it was not from the doctrine of equivoca-
tion, or from the power of absolution, or any other
of their tenets, that so many died, denying all that
was sworn against them, but from their own convic-
tion. And indeed this matter came to be charged
on Dr. Lloyd, as if he had been made a tool for
bringing Berry to this seeming conversion, and that
all was done on design to cover the queen. But I
saw him then every day, and was well assured that
he acted nothing in it but what became his profes-
sion, with all possible sincerity. Prance began, after
this, to enlarge his discoveries. He said, he had
often heard them talk of killing the king, and of
setting on a general massacre, after they had raised
an army. Dugdale also said, he had heard them
discourse of a massacre. The memory of the Irish
massacre was yet so fresh, as to raise a particular

678. horror at the very mention of this ; though where
 ————— the numbers were so great as in Ireland, that might
 have been executed, yet there seemed to be no occa-
 sion to apprehend the like, where the numbers were
 in so great an inequality as they were here. Prance
 did also swear, that a servant of the lord Powis had
 told him, that there was one in their family who had
 undertaken to kill the king ; but that some days
 after he told him, they were now gone off from that
 design. It looked very strange, and added no credit
 448 to his other evidence, that the papists should be
 thus talking of killing the king, as if it had been a
 common piece of news. But there are seasons of
 believing, as well as of disbelieving : and believing
 was then so much in season, that improbabilities or
 inconsistencies were little considered. Nor was it
 safe so much as to make reflections on them. That
 was called the blasting of the plot, and disparaging
 the king's evidence : though indeed Oates and Bed-
 low did, by their behaviour, detract more from their
 own credit, than all their enemies could have done.
 The former talked of all persons with insufferable
 insolence : and the other was a scandalous libertine
 in his whole deportment.

Scroggs was
 then lord
 chief jus-
 tice.

The lord chief justice at that time was sir Wil-
 liam Scroggs, a man more valued for a good readi-
 ness in speaking well, than either for learning in his
 profession, or for any moral virtue. His life had
 been indecently scandalous, and his fortunes were
 very low. He was raised by the earl of Danby's
 favour, first to be a judge, and then to be the chief
 justice. And it was a melancholy thing to see so
 bad, so ignorant, and so poor a man, raised up to
 that great post. Yet he, now seeing how the stream

run, went into it with so much zeal and heartiness, 1678.
that he was become the favourite of the people. ———
But, when he saw the king had an ill opinion of it,
he grew colder in the pursuit of it. He began to
neglect and check the witnesses: upon which, they,
who behaved themselves as if they had been the tri-
bunes of the people, began to rail at him. Yet in
all the trials he set himself, even with indecent earn-
estness, to get the prisoners to be always cast.

Another witness came in soon after these things, <sup>Jennison's
evidence.</sup>
Jennison, the younger brother of a Jesuit, and a
gentleman of a family and estate. He, observing
that Ireland had defended himself against Oates
chiefly by this, that he was in Staffordshire from the
beginning of August till the 12th of September, and
that he had died affirming that to be true, seemed
much surprised at it; and upon that turned pro-
testant. For he said, he saw him in London on the
19th of August, on which day he fixed upon this
account, that he saw him the day before he went
down in the stage coach to York, which was proved
by the books of that office to be the 20th of August.
He said he was come to town from Windsor: and
hearing that Ireland was in town, he went to see
him, and found him drawing off his boots. Ire-
land asked him news, and in particular, how the
king was attended at Windsor? And when he an-
swered, that he walked about very carelessly, with
very few about him, Ireland seemed to wonder at it,
and said, it would be easy then to take him off: to
which Jennison answered quick, God forbid: but
Ireland said, he did not mean that it could be law-
fully done. Jennison, in the letter in which he writ
this up to a friend in London, added, that he re-

1678. membered an inconsiderable passage or two more,
and that perhaps Smith (a priest that had lived
with his father) could help him to one or two more
449 circumstances relating to those matters : but he protested, as he desired the forgiveness of his sins, and the salvation of his soul, that he knew no more ; and wished he might never see the face of God, if he knew any more. This letter was printed. And great use was made of it, to shew how little regard was to be had to those denials, with which so many had ended their lives. But this man in the summer thereafter published a long narrative of his knowledge of the plot. He said, himself had been invited to assist in killing the king. He named the four ruffians that went to Windsor to do it. And he thought to have reconciled this to his letter, by pretending these were the circumstances that he had not mentioned in it. Smith did also change his religion ; and deposed, that, when he was at Rome, he was told in general of the design of killing the king. He was afterwards discovered to be a vicious man. Yet he went no farther than to swear, that he was acquainted with the design in general, but not with the persons that were employed in it. By these witnesses the credit of the plot was universally established. Yet, no real proofs appearing, besides Coleman's letters and Godfrey's murder, the king, by a proclamation, did offer both a pardon and 200*l.* to any one that would come in, and make further discoveries. This was thought too great a hire to purchase witnesses. Money had been offered to those who should bring in criminals. But it was said to be a new and indecent practice to offer so much money to men that should merit it by swearing :

and it might be too great an encouragement to 1678.
perjury.

While the witnesses were weakening their own credit, some practices were discovered, that did very much support it. Reading, a lawyer of some subtilty, but of no virtue, was employed by the lords in the Tower to solicit their affairs. He insinuated himself much into Bedlow's confidence, and was much in his company: and, in the hearing of others, he was always pressing him to tell all he knew. He lent him money very freely, which the other wanted often. And he seemed at first to design only to find out somewhat that should destroy the credit of his testimony. But he ventured on other practices; and offered him much money, if he would turn his evidence against the popish lords only into a hearsay, so that it should not come home against them. Reading said, Bedlow began the proposition to him; and employed him to see how much money these lords could give him, if he should bring them off: upon which Reading, as he pretended afterwards, seeing that innocent blood was like to be shed, was willing, even by indecent means, to endeavour to prevent it. Yet he freed the lords in the Tower. He said they would not promise a farthing; only the lord Stafford said, he would give himself two or three hundred pounds, which he might dispose of as he pleased. While Reading was driving the bargain, Bedlow was too hard for him at his own trade of craft: for, as he acquainted both prince Rupert 450 and the earl of Essex with the whole negotiation, from the first step of it, so he placed two witnesses secretly in his chamber, when Reading was to come to him; and drew him into those discourses, which

Practices
with the
witnesses
discovered.

1678. discovered the whole practice of that corruption. Reading had likewise drawn a paper, by which he shewed him with how few and small alterations he could soften his deposition so as not to affect the lords. With these witnesses, and this paper, Bedlow charged Reading. The whole matter was proved beyond contradiction. And, as this raised his credit, so it laid a heavy load on the popish lords ; though the proofs came home only to Reading, and he was set in the pillory for it. Bedlow made a very ill use of this discovery, which happened in March, to cover his having sworn against Whitebread and Fenwick only upon hearsay in December : for, being resolved to swear plain matter upon his own knowledge against them, when they should be brought again on their trial, he said, Reading had prevailed on him to be easy to them, as he called it ; and that he had said to him that the lords would take the saving of these Jesuits as an earnest of what he would do for themselves ; though it was not very probable that these lords would have abandoned Ireland, when they took such care of the other Jesuits. The truth was, he ought to have been set aside from being a witness any more, since now by his own confession he had sworn falsely in that trial : he had first sworn, he knew nothing of his own knowledge against the two Jesuits, and afterwards he swore copiously against them, and upon his own knowledge. Wyld, a worthy and ancient judge, said upon that to him, that he was a perjured man, and ought to come no more into courts, but to go home, and repent. Yet all this was passed over, as if it had been of no weight : and the judge was turned out for his plain freedom. There was soon after this another practice disco-

1678.

vered concerning Oates. Some that belonged to the earl of Danby conversed much with Oates's servants. They told them many odious things that he was daily speaking of the king, which looked liker one that intended to ruin than to save him. One of these did also affirm, that Oates had made an abominable attempt upon him not fit to be named. Oates smelled this out, and got his servants to deny all that they had said, and to fasten it upon those who had been with them, as a practice of theirs: and they were upon that likewise set on the pillory. And, to put things of a sort together, though they happened not all at once: one Tasborough, that belonged to the duke's court, entered into some correspondence with Dugdale, who was courting a kinswoman of his. It was proposed, that Dugdale should sign a paper, retracting all that he had formerly sworn, and should upon that go beyond sea, for which he was promised, in the duke's name, a considerable reward. He had written the paper, as was desired: but he was too cunning for Tasborough, and he proved his practices upon him. He pretended he drew the paper only to draw the other further on, that he might be able to penetrate the deeper into their designs. Tasborough was fined, and set in the pillory for tampering thus with the king's evidence.

This was the true state of the plot, and of the witnesses that proved it; which I have opened as fully as was possible for me: and I had particular occasions to be well instructed in it. Here was matter enough to work on the fears and apprehensions of the nation: so it was not to be wondered at, if parliaments were hot, and juries were easy in this

Reflections
upon the
whole evi-
dence.

1678. prosecution. The visible evidences that appeared, made all people conclude there was great plotting among them. And it was generally believed, that the bulk of what was sworn by the witnesses was true, though they had by all appearance dressed it up with incredible circumstances. What the men of learning knew concerning their principles, both of deposing of kings, and of the lawfulness of murdering them when so deposed, made them easily conclude, that since they saw the duke was so entirely theirs, and that the king was so little to be depended on, they might think the present conjuncture was not to be lost. And since the duke's eldest daughter was already out of their hands, they might make the more haste to set the duke on the throne. The tempers, as well as the morals, of the Jesuits, made it reasonable to believe, that they were not apt to neglect such advantages, nor to stick at any sort of falsehood in order to their own defence. The doctrine of probability, besides many other maxims that are current among them, made many give little credit to their witnesses, or to their most solemn denials, even at their execution. Many things were brought to shew, that by the casuistical divinity, taught among them, and published by them to the world, there was no practice so bad, but that the doctrines of probability, and of ordering the intention, might justify it. Yet many thought, that, what doctrines soever men might by a subtilty of speculation be carried into, the approaches of death, with the seriousness that appeared in their deportment, must needs work so much on the probity and candour which seemed rooted in human nature^k,

^k Credat Judæus Apella. S.

that even immoral opinions, maintained in the way 1678.
of argument, could not then resist it. Several of
our divines went far in this charge, against all re-
gard to their dying speeches; of which some of our
own church complained, as inhuman and indecent.
[I looked always on this as an opening their graves,
and the putting them to a second death.]

In January a new parliament was summoned. 1679.
The elections were carried with great heat, and went ^{A new par-}
almost every where against the court. Lord Danby ^{liament.}
resolved to leave the treasury at Lady-day. And in
that time he made great advantage by several pay-
ments which he got the king to order, that were due
upon such slight pretences, that it was believed he
had a large share of them to himself: so that he left 452
the treasury quite empty. He persuaded the king
to send the duke beyond sea, that so there might be
no colour for suspecting that the counsels were in-
fluenced by him. He endeavoured to persuade the
duke, that it was fit for him to go out of the way.
If the king and the parliament came to an agree-
ment, he might depend on the promise that the king
would make him, of recalling him immediately: and
if they did not agree, no part of the blame could be
cast on him; which must happen otherwise, if he
staid still at court. Yet no rhetoric would have pre-
vailed on him to go, if the king had not told him
positively, it was for both their service, and so it
must be done.

Before he went away, the king gave him all pos-
sible satisfaction with relation to the duke of Mon-
mouth, who was become very popular, and his crea-
tures were giving it out, that he was the king's law-
^{The duke sent beyond sea.}

1679. ful son. So the king made a solemn declaration in council, and both signed it and took his oath on it, that he was never married, nor contracted to that duke's mother¹; nor to any other woman, except to the present queen. The duke was sent away upon very short warning, not without many tears shed by him at parting, though the king shed none. He went first to Holland, and then to Brussels, where he was but coldly received^m.

At the opening the parliament in March, the parting with an only brother, to remove all jealousy,

¹ (Evelyn, in his *Memoirs*, mentioning this disavowal of the king, says, that the duke in his person much resembled Sidney, who had been familiar with his mother; which aids a similar suggestion in the *Life of King James*, printed from the Stuart papers. This Sidney was son of the earl of Leicester, and brother of Algernon Sidney. Compare Evelyn's *Memoirs*, vol. I. p. 567, and *King James's Life*, vol. I. p. 491.)

^m By his own letters (to the first lord Dartmouth) from Brussels, he seems very well satisfied with the civilities he received there, but seems very jealous of the king. In one dated the 22d of July, he writes, "There is one thing troubles me very much, and puts odd thoughts into my head; it is, that all this while, his majesty has never said a word, nor gone about to make a good understanding between me and the duke of Monmouth; for though it is a thing I shall never seek, yet

"methinks it is what his majesty might press. Think of this, and I am sure you may draw consequences from it, which I shall not mention to you, but are obvious enough to any one that considers."

About this time the princess of Orange thought herself with child, as I find by a letter of the duke's from Brussels, in which he says, "I did not design to go to the Hague, except my daughter had been brought to bed, and of that there was no likelihood, but now I am going thither upon another account, which is to endeavour to undeceive those who persuade her she is yet with child." The duke afterwards told my father, the women who were constantly about her person assured him, that they had never perceived that the prince had given her any real reason to think she could be with child, though he lay always in the bed with her, and she was at that time one of the most beautiful women in Europe. D.

was magnified with all the pomp of the earl of Nottingham's eloquence. Lord Danby's friends were in some hopes that the great services which he had done would make matters brought against him to be handled gently. But in the management he committed some errors, that proved very unhappy to him. 1679.

Seimour and he had fallen into some quarrellings, 453 both being very proud and violent in their tempers. Seimour had in the last session struck in with that heat against popery, that he was become popular upon it. So he managed the matter in this new parliament, that though the court named Meres, yet he was chosen speaker. The nomination of the speaker was understood to come from the king, though he was not named as recommending the person. Yet a privy counsellor named one: and it was understood to be done by order. And the person thus named was put in the chair, and was next day presented to the king, who approved the choice. When Seimour was next day presented as the speaker, the king refused to confirm the election. He said, he had other occasions for him, which could not be dispensed with. Upon this great heats arose, with a long and violent debate. It was said, the house had the choice of their speaker in them, and that their presenting the speaker was only a solemn shewing him to the king, such as was the presenting the lord mayor and sheriffs of London in the exchequer; but that the king was bound to confirm their choice. This debate held a week, and created much anger.

A temper was found at last. Seimour's election was let fallⁿ: but the point was settled, that the

ⁿ By a short prorogation of the parliament. O.

1679. right of electing was in the house, and that the confirmation was a thing of course^o. So another was chosen speaker. And the house immediately fell on lord Danby. Those who intended to serve him said, the heat this dispute had raised, which was imputed wholly to him, had put it out of their power to do it. But he committed other errors. He took out a pardon under the great seal. The earl of Nottingham durst not venture to pass it. So the king ordered the seal to be put to the pardon in his own presence. And thus, according to lord Nottingham's figure, when he was afterwards questioned about it, it did not pass through the ordinary methods of production, but was an immediate effect of his majesty's power of creating^p. He also took out a warrant to be marquess of Caermarthen. And the king, in a speech to the parliament, said, he had done nothing but by his order; and therefore he had pardoned him; and, if there was any defect in his pardon, he would pass it over and over again, till it should be quite legal.

Danby pardoned by the king, but prosecuted by the house of commons.

Upon this a great debate was raised. Some questioned whether the king's pardon, especially when passed in bar to an impeachment, was good in law: this would encourage ill ministers, who would be always sure of a pardon, and so would act more boldly, if they saw so easy a way to be secured against the danger of impeachments: the king's pardon did indeed secure one against all prosecu-

^o The earl of Oxford, (Harley,) who had been speaker, used to say, that all the commons got by this contest was, that a speaker might be moved for by one who was not a privy counsellor. Lord Russel now

moved for Gregory. O.

^p His words, as reported by the committee of the commons, were, that it was a *stampt pardon of creation*. See the Journal of the House of Commons, 22d and 24th March, 1678. O.

1679.

tion at his suit: but, as in the case of murder an appeal lay, from which the king's pardon did not cover the person, since the king could no more pardon the injuries done his people, than he could forgive the debts that were owing to them; so from a parity of reason it was inferred, that since the offences of ministers of state were injuries done the public, the king's pardon could not hinder a prosecution in parliament, which seemed to be one of the chief securities, and most essential parts of our constitution. Yet on the other hand it was said, that the power of pardoning was a main article of the king's prerogative: none had ever yet been annulled: the law had made this one of the trusts of the government, without any limitation upon it: all arguments against it might be good reasons for the limiting it for the future: but what was already passed was good in law, and could not be broke through. The temper proposed was, that, upon lord Danby's going out of the way, an act of banishment should pass against him, like that which had passed against the earl of Clarendon. Upon that, when the lords voted that he should be committed, he withdrew. So a bill of banishment passed in the house of lords, and was sent down to the commons. Winnington fell on it there in a most furious manner. He said, it was an act to let all ministers see what was the worst thing that could happen to them, after they had been engaged in the blackest designs, and had got great rewards of wealth and 454 honour: all they could suffer was, to be obliged to live beyond sea. This inflamed the house so, that those who intended to have moderated that heat, found they could not stop it. Littleton sent for

1679. me that night, to try if it was possible to mollify
Winnington. We laid before him, that the king seemed brought near a disposition to grant every thing that could be desired of him: and why must an attainder be brought on, which would create a breach that could not be healed? The earl of Danby was resolved to bear a banishment; but would come in, rather than be attainted, and plead his pardon: and then the king was upon the matter made the party in the prosecution, which might ruin all: we knew how bad a minister he had been, and had felt the ill effects of his power: but the public was to be preferred to all other considerations. But Winnington was then so entirely in Mountague's management, and was so blown up with popularity, and so much provoked by being turned out of the place of solicitor general, that he could not be prevailed on. It was offered afterwards from the court, as Littleton told me, both that lord Danby should by act of parliament be degraded from his peerage, as well as banished, and that an act should pass declaring for the future no pardon should be pleaded in bar to an impeachment. But the fury of the time was such, that all offers were rejected. And so a very probable appearance of settling the nation was lost: for the bill for banishing lord Danby was thrown out by the commons. And instead of it a bill of attainder was brought in. The treasury was put in commission. The earl of Essex was put at the head of it. And Hide and Godolphin were two of the commission. The earl of Sunderland was brought over from France, and made secretary of state. And lord Essex and lord Sunderland joined with the duke of Monmouth, to press the king to change his counsels,

and to turn to another method of government, and 1679.
 to take the men of the greatest credit into his
 confidence. Lord Essex was much blamed for going
 in so early into the court, before the rest were
 brought in. He said to me, he did it in the prospect
 of working the change that was afterwards effected.
 Lord Sunderland also told me, that the king was
 easy in the bringing in lord Shaftsbury; for he
 thought he was only angry in revenge, because he
 was not employed; but that he had so ill an opinion
 of lord Halifax, that it was not easy to get over that.
 The duke of Monmouth told me, that he had as
 great difficulty in overcoming that, as ever in any
 thing that he studied to bring the king to^q.

At last the king was prevailed on to dismiss the ^{A new council.}
 whole council, which was all made up of lord Dan-
 by's creatures. And the chief men of both houses
 were brought into it. This was carried with so
 much secrecy, that it was not so much as suspected,
 till the day before it was done^r. The king was
 weary of the vexation he had been long in, and de-455
 sired to be set at ease. And at that time he would
 have done any thing to get an end put to the plot,
 and to the fermentation that was now over the whole
 nation: so that, if the house of commons would have
 let the matter of lord Danby's pardon fall, and have
 accepted of limitations on his brother, instead of ex-

^q This sudden short-lived
 turn always went by the name
 of sir William Temple's scheme.
 D.

^r See sir W. Temple's Me-
 moirs, part 3. This change was
 his work, except the bring-
 ing in of the lord Shaftsbury.
 That part of his Memoirs is the

most excellent picture of courts
 and courtiers, and of faction
 and its leaders. Temple was
 too honest for those times. He
 was made only for such a prince
 as king William: but he would
 take no public employment
 even under him. O.

1679. cluding him, he was willing to have yielded in every thing else. He put likewise the admiralty and ordinance into commissions ; out of all which the duke's creatures were so excluded, that they gave both him and themselves for lost. But the hatred that Mountague bore lord Danby, and lord Shaftsbury's hatred to the duke, spoiled all this. There were also many in the house of commons, who, finding themselves forgot, while others were preferred to them, resolved to make themselves considerable. And they infused into a great many a mistrust of all that was doing. It was said, the king was still what he was before. No change appeared in him. And all this was only an artifice to lay the heat that was in the nation, to gain so many over to him, and so to draw money from the commons. So they resolved to give no money, till all other things should be first settled. No part of the change that was then made was more acceptable than that of the judges : for lord Danby had brought in some sad creatures to those important posts. And Jones had the new modelling of the bench. And he put in very worthy men, in the room of those ignorant judges that were now dismissed^s.

Debates
concerning
the exclu-
sion.

The main point in debate was, what security the king should offer to quiet the fears of the nation upon the account of the duke's succession. The earl of Shaftsbury proposed the excluding him simply, and making the succession to go on, as if he was dead, as the only mean that was easy and safe both for the crown and the people : this was nothing but the disinheriting the next heir, which certainly the king and parliament might do, as well as any pri-

^s (Four of the twelve judges of them was the honest judge were dismissed. Perhaps one mentioned above in page 194.)

vate man might disinherit his next heir, if he had a 1679.

mind to it^t. The king would not consent to this. He had faithfully promised the duke, that he never would. And he thought, if acts of exclusion were once begun, it would not be easy to stop them; but that upon any discontent at the next heir, they would be set on: religion was now the pretence: but other pretences would be found out, when there was need of them: this insensibly would change the nature of the English monarchy: so that from being hereditary it would become elective. The lords of Essex and Halifax upon this proposed such limitations of the duke's authority, when the crown should devolve on him, as would disable him from doing any harm, either in church or state: such as the taking out of his hand all power in ecclesiastical matters, the disposal of the public money, with the power of peace and war, and the lodging these in both houses of parliament; and that whatever parliament was in 456 being, or the last that had been in being at the king's death, should meet, without a new summons, upon it, and assume the administration of affairs. Lord Shaftsbury argued against this, as much more prejudicial to the crown, than the exclusion of one heir: for this changed the whole government, and set up a democracy instead of a monarchy. Lord Halifax's arguing now so much against the danger of turning the monarchy to be elective, was the more extraordinary in him, because he had made an hereditary monarchy the subject of his mirth; and had often said, Who takes a coachman to drive him, because his father was a good coachman? Yet he was

^t That is not always true. power of king and parliament
Yet it was certainly in the to exclude the next heir. S.

1679. now jealous of a small slip in the succession. But
at the same time he studied to infuse into some a zeal for a commonwealth. And to these he pretended, that he preferred limitations to an exclusion : because the one kept up the monarchy still, only passing over one person ; whereas the other brought us really into a commonwealth, as soon as we had a popish king over us. And it was said by some of his friends, that the limitations proposed were so advantageous to public liberty, that a man might be tempted to wish for a popish king, to come at them.

Upon this great difference of opinion, a faction was quickly formed in the new council. The lords Essex, Sunderland, and Halifax declaring for limitations, and against the exclusion ; while lord Shaftsbury, now made president of the council, declared highly for it. They took much pains on him to moderate his heat : but he was become so intolerably vain, that he would not mix with them, unless he might govern. So they broke with him : and the other three were called the triumvirate. Lord Essex applied himself to the business of the treasury, to the regulating the king's expence, and the improvement of the revenue. His clear, though slow sense, made him very acceptable to the king. Lord Halifax studied to manage the king's spirit, and to gain an ascendant there by a lively and libertine conversation. Lord Sunderland managed foreign affairs, and had the greatest credit with the duchess of Portsmouth. After it was agreed on to offer the limitations, the lord chancellor, by order from the king, made the proposition to both houses. The duke was struck with the news of this, when it came to him to

Brussels. I saw a letter writ by his duchess the 1679.
 next post: in which she wrote, that as for all the
 high things that were said by their enemies they
 looked for them, but that speech of the lord chan-
 cellor's was a surprise, and a great mortification to
 them. Their apprehensions of that did not hang
 long upon them. The exclusion was become the
 popular expedient. So, after much debating, a bill
 was ordered for excluding the duke of York. I will
 give you here a short abstract of all that was said,
 both within and without doors, for and against the
 exclusion.

Those who argued for it laid it down for a found-457
 ation, that every person, who had the whole right
 of any thing in him, had likewise the power of
 transferring it to whom he pleased. So the king
 and parliament, being entirely possessed of the whole
 authority of the nation, had a power to limit the
 succession, and every thing else relating to the na-
 tion, as they pleased. And by consequence there
 was no such thing as a fundamental law, by which
 the power of parliament was bound up: for no king
 and parliament in any former age had a power over
 the present king and parliament; otherwise the go-
 vernment was not entire, nor absolute. A father,
 how much soever determined by nature to provide
 for his children, yet had certainly a power of distin-
 heriting them, without which, in some cases, the re-
 spect due to him could not be preserved. The life
 of the king on the throne was not secure, unless
 this was acknowledged. For if the next heir was a
 traitor, and could not be seized on, the king would
 be ill served in opposition to him, if he could not
 bar his succession by an exclusion. Government

Arguments
 used for
 and against
 the exclu-
 sion.

1679. was appointed for those that were to be governed, and not for the sake of governors themselves^u: therefore all things relating to it were to be measured by the public interest and the safety of the people. In none of God's appointments in the Old Testament regard was had to the eldest. Isaac, Jacob, Judah, Ephraim, and more particularly Solomon, were preferred without any regard to the next in line. In the several kingdoms of Europe, the succession went according to particular laws, and not by any general law. In England, Spain, and Sweden, the heir general did succeed: whereas it was only the heir male in France and Germany. And whereas the oath of allegiance tied us to the king and his heirs, the word *heir* was a term that imported that person who by law ought to succeed: and so it fell by law to any person who was declared next in the succession. In England the heir of the king that reigned had been sometimes set aside, and the right of succession transferred to another person. Henry VII. set up his title on his possessing the crown. Henry VIII. got his two daughters, while they were by acts of parliament illegitimated, put in the succession: and he had a power given him to devise it after them, and their issue, at his pleasure. Queen Elizabeth, when she was in danger from the practices of the queen of Scots, got an act to pass asserting the power of the parliament to limit the succession of the crown. It was high treason to deny this during her life, and was still highly penal to this day. All this was laid down in general, to

^u A true maxim and infallible. S. (The meaning of the preceding sentence is,—and the next heir managed so, that it was not possible to seize on him.)

assert a power in the parliament to exclude the next heir, if there was a just cause for it. Now as to the present case, the popish religion was so contrary to the whole frame and constitution of our government, as well as to that dignity inherent in the crown, of being the head of the church, that a papist seemed to be brought under a disability to hold the crown. A great part of the property of the nation, the abbey lands, was shaken by the prospect of such a succession. The perfidy and the cruelty of that religion made the danger more sensible. Fires, and courts of inquisition, were that which all must reckon for, who would not redeem themselves by an early and zealous conversion. The duke's own temper was much insisted on. It appeared by all their letters, how much the papists depended on him: and his own deportment shewed there was good reason for it. He would break through all limitations, and call in a foreign power, rather than submit to them. Some mercenary lawyers would give it for law, that the prerogative could not be limited, and that a law limiting it was void of it self. Revenges for past injuries, when joined to a bigotry in religion, would be probably very violent.

On the other hand, some argued against the exclusion: that it was unlawful in it self, and against the unalterable law of succession; (which came to be the common phrase.) Monarchy was said to be by divine right: so the law could not alter what God had settled. Yet few went at first so high. Much weight was laid on the oath of allegiance, that tied us to the king's heirs: and whoso was the heir when any man took that oath, was still the heir to him. All lawyers had great regard to fundamental

1679.

458

1679. laws. And it was a maxim among our lawyers, that even an act of parliament against Magna Charta was null of it self^x. There was no arguing from the changes in the course of the succession. These had been the effects of prosperous rebellions. Nor from Henry VII.'s reigning in the right of his queen, and yet not owning it to be so. Nor was it strange, if in so violent a reign as Henry VIII.'s acts were made in prejudice of the right of blood. But though his daughters were made bastards by two several acts, yet it was notorious they were both born in a state of marriage. And when unlawful marriages were annulled, yet such issue as descended from them *bona fide* used not to be illegitimated. But though that king made a will pursuant to an act of parliament, excluding the Scotch line, yet such regard the nation had to the next in blood, that, without examining the will, the Scotch line was received. It is true, queen Elizabeth, out of her hatred to the queen of Scots, got the famed act to pass, that declares the parliament's power of limiting the succession. But since that whole matter ended so fatally, and was the great blemish of her reign, it was not reasonable to build much on it. These were the arguments of those, who thought the parliament had not the power to enact an exclusion of the next heir: of which opinion the earl of Essex was at this time. Others did not go on these grounds: but they said, that though a father has indeed a power of disinheriting his son, yet he ought never to exert it but upon a just and necessary occasion. It was not yet legally certain, that the duke was a papist. This was a condemning

^x A sottish maxim. S.

him unheard. A man's conscience was not even in 1679.
his own power. It seemed therefore to be an un-
justifiable severity, to cut off so great a right only
for a point of opinion. It is true, it might be rea-
sonable to secure the nation from the ill effects that
opinion might have upon them, which was fully 459
done by the limitations. But it was unjust to carry
it further. The protestants had charged the church
of Rome heavily for the league of France, in order
to the excluding the house of Bourbon from the suc-
cession to the crown of France, because of heresy :
and this would make the charge return back upon
us, to our shame. In the case of infancy, or lunacy,
guardians were assigned : but the right was still in
the true heir. A popish prince was considered as in
that state : and these limitations were like the as-
signing him guardians. The crown had been for
several ages limited in the power of raising money ;
to which it may be supposed a high spirited king
did not easily submit, and yet we had long main-
tained this : and might it not be hoped, the limita-
tions proposed might be maintained in one reign ;
chiefly considering the zeal and the number of those
who were concerned to support them? Other princes
might think themselves obliged in honour and reli-
gion to assist him, if he was quite excluded : and it
might be the occasion of a new popish league, that
might be fatal to the whole protestant interest.
Whereas, if the limitations passed, other princes would
not so probably enter into the laws and establish-
ment settled among us. It was said, many in the
nation thought the exclusion unlawful : but all would
jointly concur in the limitations : so this was the se-
curest way, that comprehended the greatest part of

1679. the nation: and probably Scotland would not go into the exclusion, but merit at the duke's hands by asserting his title: so here was a foundation of war round about us, as well as of great distractions among ourselves: some regard was to be had to the king's honour, who had so often declared, he would not consent to an exclusion; but would to any limitations, how hard soever.

These were the chief arguments upon which this debate was managed. For my own part, I did always look on it as a wild and extravagant conceit, to deny the lawfulness of an exclusion in any case whatsoever. But for a great while I thought the accepting the limitations was the wisest and best method ^y. I saw the driving on the exclusion would probably throw us into great confusions. And therefore I made use of all the credit I had with many in both houses, to divert them from pursuing it, as they did, with such eagerness, that they would hearken to nothing else. Yet, when I saw the party so deeply engaged, and so violently set upon it, both Tillotson and I, who thought we had some interest in lord Halifax, took great pains on him, to divert him from opposing it so furiously as he did: for he became as it were the champion against the exclusion. I foresaw a great breach was like to follow. And that was plainly the game of popery, to keep us in such an unsettled state. This was like either to end in a rebellion, or in an abject submission of the nation to the humours of the court. I confess, that which I apprehended most was rebellion, though

^y It was the wisest, because otherwise an exclusion would it would be less opposed; and have done better. S. the king would consent to it;

it turned afterwards quite the other way. But men of more experience, and who had better advantages to make a true judgment of the temper of the nation, were mistaken as well as my self. All the progress that was made in this matter in the present parliament, was, that the bill of exclusion was read twice in the house of commons. But the parliament was dissolved before it came to a third reading^z.

The earl of Danby's prosecution was the point on which the parliament was broken. The bill of attainder for his wilful absence was passed by the commons, and sent up to the lords. But, when it was brought to the third reading, he delivered himself; and was upon that sent to the Tower: upon which he moved for his trial. The man of the law he depended most upon was Pollexfen, an honest and learned, but perplexed lawyer. He advised him positively to stand upon his pardon. It was a point of prerogative never yet judged against the crown: so he might in that case depend upon the house of lords, and on the king's interest there. It might perhaps produce some act against all pardons for the future. But he thought he was secure in his pardon. It was both wiser, and more honourable for the king, as well as for himself, to stand on this, than to enter into the matter of the letters, which would occasion many indecent reflections on both. So he settled on this, and pleaded his pardon at the lords' bar: to which the commons put in a reply, questioning the validity of the pardon, on the grounds formerly mentioned. And they demanded a trial and judgment.

^z See p. 497. folio edit. O.

1679.

Upon this a famous debate arose, concerning the bishops' right of voting in any part of a trial for treason. It was said, that, though the bishops did not vote in the final judgment, yet they had a right to vote in all preliminaries. Now the allowing or not allowing the pardon to be good, was but a preliminary: and yet the whole matter was concluded by it. The lords Nottingham and Roberts argued for the bishops' voting. But the lords Essex, Shaftsbury, and Hollis were against it. Many books were writ on both sides, of which an account shall be given afterwards. But upon this debate it was carried by the majority, that the bishops had a right to vote. Upon which the commons said they would not proceed, unless the bishops were obliged to withdraw during the whole trial. And upon that breach between the two houses the parliament was prorogued: and soon after it was dissolved. And the blame of this was cast chiefly on the bishops. The truth was, they desired to have withdrawn, but the king would not suffer it. He was so set on maintaining the pardon, that he would not venture such a point on the votes of the temporal lords. And he told the bishops, they must stick to him, and to his prerogative, as they would expect that he should stick to them, if they came to be pushed at. By this means they were exposed to the popular fury.

461

A great
heat raised
against the
clergy.

Hot people began every where to censure them, as a set of men that for their own ends, and for every punctilio that they pretended to, would expose the nation and the protestant religion to ruin. And in revenge for this, many began to declare openly in favour of the nonconformists: and upon this the nonconformists behaved themselves very indecently.

1679.

For, though many of the more moderate of the clergy were trying if an advantage might be taken, from the ill state we were in, to heal those breaches that were among us, they on their part fell very severely upon the body of the clergy. The act that restrained the press was to last only to the end of the first session of the next parliament that should meet after that was dissolved. So now, upon the end of the session, the act not being revived, the press was open: and it became very licentious, both against the court and the clergy. And in this the nonconformists had so great a hand, that the bishops and clergy, apprehending that a rebellion, and with it the pulling the church to pieces, was designed, set themselves on the other hand to write against the late times, and to draw a parallel between the present times and them: which was not decently enough managed by those who undertook the argument, and who were believed to be set on, and paid by the court for it. The chief manager of all those angry writings was one sir Roger L'Estrange^a, a man who had lived in all the late times, and was furnished with many passages, and an unexhausted copiousness in writing: so that for four years he published three or four sheets a week under the title of the *Observator*, all tending to defame the contrary party, and to make the clergy apprehend that their ruin was designed. This had all the success he could have wished, as it drew considerable sums that were raised to acknowledge the service he did. Upon this the greater part of the clergy, who

The occasions that fomented that heat.

^a A superficial meddling coxcomb. In a different hand from Swift's. ("A person of

"excellent parts, bating some affectations." Evelyn, in his *Memoirs*, vol. I. p. 559.)

1679. were already much prejudiced against that party, being now both sharpened and furnished by these papers, delivered themselves up to much heat and indiscretion, which was vented both in their pulpits and common conversation, and most particularly, at the elections of parliament men: and this drew much hatred and censure upon them. They seemed now to lay down all fears and apprehensions of popery: and nothing was so common in their mouths as the year forty-one, in which the late wars begun, and which seemed now to be near the being acted over again. Both city and country were full of many indecencies that broke out on this occasion. But, as there were too many of the clergy whom the
 462 heat of their tempers, and the hope of preferment drove to such extravagancies, so there were still many worthy and eminent men among them, whose lives and labours did in a great measure rescue the church from those reproaches that the follies of others drew upon it. Such were, besides those whom I have often named, Tennison, Sharp, Patrick, Sherlock, Fowler, Scot, Calamy, Claget, Cudworth, two Mores, Williams, and many others, whom, though I knew not so particularly as to give all their characters, yet they deserved a high one; and were indeed an honour, both to the church, and to the age in which they lived.

Arguments
 for and
 against
 the bishops
 voting in
 the preli-
 minaries in
 trials of
 treason.

I return from this digression to give an account of the arguments by which that debate concerning the bishops voting in preliminaries was maintained. It was said, the bishops were one of three estates of which the parliament was composed, and that therefore they ought to have a share in all parliamentary matters: that as the temporal lords transmitted

their honours and fees to their heirs, so the bishops 1679.
did transmit theirs to their successors : and they sat
in parliament, both as they were the prelates of the
church, and barons of the realm : but in the time of
popery, when they had a mind to withdraw them-
selves wholly from the king's courts, and resolved to
form themselves into a state apart, upon this at-
tempt of theirs, our kings would not dispense with
their attendance : and then several regulations were
made, chiefly the famed ones at Clarendon ; not so
much intended as restraints on them in the use of
their rights as they were barons, as obligations on
them to perform all but those that in compliance
with their desires were then excepted : the clergy,
who had a mind to be excused from all parliament-
ary attendance, obtained leave to withdraw in judg-
ments of life and death, as unbecoming their profes-
sion, and contrary to their canons. Princes were
the more inclinable to this, because bishops might
be more apt to lean to the merciful side : and the
judgments of parliament in that time were com-
monly in favour of the crown against the barons : so
the bishops had leave given them to withdraw from
these : but they had a right to name a proxy for the
clergy, or to protest for saving their rights in all
other points as peers : so that this was rather a con-
cession in their favour, than a restraint imposed on
them : and they did it on design to get out of these
courts as much as they could : at the reformation all
such practices as were contrary to the king's pre-
rogative were condemned : so it was said, that the
king having a right by his prerogative to demand 463
justice in parliament against such as he should ac-
cuse there, none of the peers could be excused from

1679. that by any of the constitutions made in the time of popery, which were all condemned at the reformation: the protestation they made in their asking leave to withdraw, shewed it was a voluntary act of theirs, and not imposed on them by the law of parliament: the words of the article of Clarendon seemed to import, that they might sit during the trial, till it came to the final judgment and sentence of life or limb; and by consequence, that they might vote in the preliminaries ^b.

On the other hand it was argued, that bishops could not judge the temporal lords as their peers: for if they were to be tried for high treason, they were to be judged only by a jury of commoners: and since their honour was not hereditary, they could not be the peers of those whose blood was dignified: and therefore, though they were a part of that house with relation to the legislature and judicature, yet the difference between a personal and hereditary peerage made that they could not be the judges of the temporal lords, as not being to be tried by them: the custom of parliament was the law of parliament: and since they had never judged in these cases, they could not pretend to it: their protestation was only in bar to the lords doing any thing besides the trial during the time that they were withdrawn: the words of the article of Clarendon must relate to the whole trial as one compli-

^b (“ The determination of “ a right to stay and sit in “ the house of lords in the “ court in capital cases, till the “ earl of Danby’s case, which “ court proceeds to the vote of “ hath been ever since adhered “ guilty or not guilty.” *Blackstone’s Commentaries*, book IV. “ to, is consonant to these “ ch. 19. p. 264.) “ constitutions of Clarendon, “ That the lords spiritual have

cated thing, though it might run out into many branches : and since the final sentence did often turn upon the preliminaries, the voting in these was upon the matter the voting in the final sentence : whatever might be the first inducements to frame those articles of the clergy, which at this distance must be dark and uncertain, yet the laws and practice pursuant to them were still in force : by the act of Henry the eighth it was provided, that, till a new body of canon law should be formed, that which was then received should be still in force, unless it was contrary to the king's prerogative, or the law of the land : and it was a remote and forced inference to pretend that the prerogative was concerned in this matter.

Thus the point was argued on both sides. Dr. Stillingfleet gave upon this occasion a great proof of his being able to make himself the master of any argument which he undertook : for after the lawyers and others, conversant in parliament records, in particular the lord Hollis, who undertook the argument with great vehemence, had writ many books about it, he published a treatise that discovered more skill and exactness in judging those matters than all that had gone before him. And indeed he put an end to the controversy in the opinion of all impartial men ^c. He proved the right that the bishops had to vote in those preliminaries, beyond contradiction in my opinion, both from our records

^c (Still, those who managed the controversy on the other side did not waive it ; for Oldmixon, in his *History of the Stuarts*, p. 632, observes, that Lord Hollis mentions, in the

Preface to his *Considerations*, Stillingfleet's *Grand Question*, &c. which shews, that some observations were made by him on this subject after the doctor's treatise.)

1679. and from our constitution^d. But now, in the interval of parliament, other matters come to be related.

The trial of
five Jesuits.

The king upon the prorogation of the parliament became sullen and thoughtful: he saw, he had to do with a strange sort of people, that could neither be managed nor frightened: and from that time his temper was observed to change very visibly. He saw the necessity of calling another parliament, and of preparing matters in order to it: therefore the prosecution of the plot was still carried on. So five of the Jesuits that had been accused of it were brought to their trial: they were Whitebread their provincial, Fenwick, Harcourt, Govan, and Turner. Oates repeated against them his former evidence: and they prepared a great defence against it: for sixteen persons came over from their house at St. Omers', who testified that Oates had staid among them all the while from December seventy-seven till June seventy-eight; so that he could not possibly be at London in the April between at those consultations, as he had sworn. They remembered this the more particularly, because he sat at the table by

^d By the great charter, (which is the undeniable constitution of England,) every man is to be tried for his life by his peers; the bishops, before the reformation, pretended they were exempt from any trial by laymen; since the reformation, they have always been tried by a jury of commoners; which puts it out of dispute who are their peers, and consequently whose peers they are. And are, in all cases whatever, obliged to give their testimony upon oath, like other

people. D. (It is certain, that the bishops were anciently called peers; and the meaning of the term peer of England, is by no means uncertain, but places those to whom it is assigned, on a level with the nobility in general. It does not follow, because it has happened that their privileges are not of equal extent with those of the temporal nobility, that the bishops are not peers of the realm, as they are denominated in an act of the 25th of Edward III.)

himself in the refectory, which made his being there 1679.

to be the more observed; for as he was not mixed with the scholars, so neither was he admitted to the Jesuits' table. They said, he was among them every day, except one or two in which he was in the infirmary: they also testified, that some of those who he swore came over with him into England in April had staid all that summer in Flanders. In opposition to this, Oates had found out seven or eight persons who deposed that they saw him in England about the beginning of May; and that he being known formerly to them in a clergyman's habit, they had observed him so much the more by reason of that change of habit. With one of these he dined; and he had much discourse with him about his travels. An old Dominican friar, who was still of that church and order, swore also that he saw him, and spoke frequently with him at that time: by this the credit of the St. Omers' scholars was quite blasted. There was no reason to mistrust those who had no interest in the matter, and swore that they saw Oates about that time; whereas the evidence given by scholars bred in the Jesuits' college, when it was to save some of their order, was liable to a very just suspicion. Bedlow now swore against them all, not upon hearsay as before, but on 465 his own knowledge; and no regard was had to his former oath mentioned in Ireland's trial. Dugdale did likewise swear against some of them: one part of his evidence seemed scarce credible. He swore, that Whitebread did in a letter that was directed to himself, though intended for F. Evers, and that came to him by the common post, and was signed by Whitebread, desire him to find out men proper to

1679. be made use of in killing the king, of what quality soever they might be. This did not look like the cunning of Jesuits, in an age in which all people made use either of ciphers or of some disguised cant. But the overthrowing the St. Omers' evidence was now such an additional load on the Jesuits, that the jury came quickly to a verdict; and they were condemned. At their execution they did with the greatest solemnity, and the deepest imprecations possible, deny the whole evidence upon which they were condemned: and protested, that they held no opinions either of the lawfulness of assassinating princes, or of the pope's power of deposing them, and that they counted all equivocation odious and sinful. All their speeches were very full of these heads. Govan's was much laboured, and too rhetorical. A very zealous protestant, that went oft to see them in prison, told me, that they behaved themselves with great decency, and with all the appearances both of innocence and devotion.

Langhorn's
trial.

Langhorn, the lawyer, was tried next: he made use of the St. Omers' scholars: but their evidence seemed to be so baffled, that it served him in no stead. He insisted next on some contradictions in the several depositions that Oates had given at several trials: but he had no other evidence of that besides the printed trials, which was no proof in law. The judges said upon this, (that which is perhaps good in law, but yet does not satisfy a man's mind,) that great difference was to be made between a narrative upon oath, and an evidence given in court. If a man was false in any one oath, there seemed to be just reason to set him aside, as no good witness. Langhorn likewise urged this, that it

was six weeks after Oates's first discovery before he 1679.
 named him : whereas, if the commissions had been
 lodged with him, he ought to have been seized on
 and searched first of all. Bedlow swore, he saw him
 enter some of Coleman's treasonable letters in a re-
 gister, in which express mention was made of kill-
 ing the king. He shewed the improbability of this,
 that a man of his business could be set to register
 letters. Yet all was of no use to him ; for he was
 cast. Great pains was taken to persuade him to
 discover all he knew ; and his execution was de-466
 layed for some weeks, in hopes that somewhat might
 be drawn from him. He offered a discovery of the
 estates and stock that the Jesuits had in England,
 the secret of which was lodged with him : but he
 protested, that he could make no other discovery ;
 and persisted in this to his death. He spent the And death.
 time, in which his execution was respited, in writ-
 ing some very devout and well composed medita-
 tions. He was in all respects a very extraordinary
 man : he was learned, and honest in his profession ;
 but was out of measure bigoted in his religion. He
 died with great constancy.

These executions, with the denials of all that suf-
 fered, made great impressions on many. Several
 books were writ, to shew that lying for a good end
 was not only thought lawful among them, but had
 been often practised, particularly by some of those
 who died for the gunpowder treason, denying those
 very things which were afterwards not only fully
 proved, but confessed by the persons concerned in
 them : yet the behaviour and last words of those
 who suffered made impressions which no books could
 carry off.

1679. Some months after this one Serjeant, a secular priest, who had been always in ill terms with the Jesuits, and was a zealous papist in his own way, appeared before the council upon security given him; and he averred, that Govan, the Jesuit, who died protesting he had never thought it lawful to murder kings, but had always detested it, had at his last being in Flanders said to a very devout person, from whom Serjeant had it, that he thought the queen might lawfully take away the king's life for the injuries he had done her, but much more because he was a heretic. Upon that Serjeant run out into many particulars, to shew how little credit was due to the protestations made by Jesuits even at their death. This gave some credit to the tenderest part of Oates's evidence with relation to the queen. It shewed, that the trying to do it by her means had been thought of by them. All this was only evidence from second hand: so it signified little. Serjeant was much blamed for it by all his own side. He had the reputation of a sincere and good, but of an indiscreet, man ^e. The executions were generally imputed to lord Shaftsbury, who drove them on in hopes that some one or other, to have saved himself, would have accused the duke. But by these the credit of the witnesses, and of the whole plot, was sinking apace. The building so much, and shedding so much blood, upon the weakest part of it, which was the credit of the witnesses, raised a
467 general prejudice against it all; and took away the force of that, which was certainly true, that the

^e (There somewhere exists an account of the dealings of the prosecutors with him. He was an eminent controversial writer amongst the Romanists, an opponent of Hammond, Bramhall, Stillingfleet, and Tillotson.)

whole party had been contriving a change of religion by a foreign assistance, so that it made not impression enough, but went off too fast. It was like the letting blood, (as one observed,) which abates a fever. Every execution, like a new bleeding, abated the heat that the nation was in; and threw us into a cold deadness, which was like to prove fatal to us. 1679.

Wakeman's trial came on next. Oates swore, he saw him write a bill to Ashby the Jesuit, by which he knew his hand: and he saw another letter of his writ in the same hand, in which he directed Ashby, who was then going to the Bath, to use a milk diet, and to be pumped at the Bath; and that in that letter he mentioned his zeal in the design of killing the king. He next repeated all the story he had sworn against the queen: which he brought only to make it probable that Wakeman, who was her physician, was in it. To all this Wakeman objected, that at first Oates accused him only upon hearsay, and did solemnly protest he knew nothing against him: which was fully made out. So he said, all that Oates now swore against him must be a forgery not thought of at that time^f. He also proved by his

^f (“ Oates displayed considerable ingenuity in the manner of qualifying his evidence, so as to elude the objections of his adversaries. Though his vexation occasionally betrayed itself in passionate and irreverent expressions, he maintained the contest without flinching; and in a tone of conscious superiority, till he was unexpectedly confronted with sir Philip Lloyd, clerk of the council, who de-

posed, that when the lord chancellor asked Oates, if he knew any thing personally of sir George Wakeman, he raised his hands to heaven, and protested before God, that he did not, and yet that very morning he had charged him with several overt acts of treason, committed, as he said, in his own presence. This was a blow which he could not parry: feigning indisposition, he asked leave

1679. own servant, and by the apothecary at the Bath,
 ——— that Ashby's paper was not writ, but only dictated
 by him: for he happened to be very weary when he
 came for it, and his man wrote it out: and that of
 the milk diet was a plain indication of an ill laid
 forgery, since it was known that nothing was held
 more inconsistent with the Bath water than milk.
 Bedlow swore against him, that he saw him receive
 a bill of 2000*l.* from Harcourt in part of a greater
 sum; and that Wakeman told him afterwards that
 he had received the money; and that Harcourt told
 him for what end it was given, for they intended
 the king should be killed, either by those they sent
 to Windsor, or by Wakeman's means: and if all
 other ways failed, they would take him off at New-
 market. Bedlow in the first giving his evidence
 deposed, that this was said by Harcourt when Wake-
 man was gone out of the room. But observing, by
 the questions that were put him, that this would
 not affect Wakeman, he swore afterwards, that he
 said it likewise in his hearing. Wakeman had no-
 thing to set against all this, but that it seemed im-
 possible that he could trust himself in such matters
 to such a person: and if Oates was set aside, he was
 but one witness. Three other Benedictine priests were
 tried with Wakeman. Oates swore, that they were
 in the plot of killing the king; that one of them,
 being their superior, had engaged to give 6000*l.* to-
 468 wards the carrying it on. Bedlow swore somewhat
 circumstantial to the same purpose against two of
 them: but that did not rise up to be treason: and
 he had nothing to charge the third with. They

“ to retire, and the jury ac- Lingard's *History of England*,
 “ quitted all the prisoners.” vol. VIII. c. 5. p. 130.)

proved, that another person had been their superior 1679.

for several years; and that Oates was never once suffered to come within their house, which all their servants deposed. And they also proved, that when Oates came into their house the night after he made his discovery, and took Pickering out of his bed, and saw them, he said, he had nothing to lay to their charge. They urged many other things to destroy the credit of the witnesses: and one of them made a long declamation, in a high bombast strain, to shew what credit was due to the speeches of dying men. The eloquence was so forced and childish, that this did them more hurt than good. Scroggs summed up the evidence very favourably for the prisoners, far contrary to his former practice. The truth is, that this was looked on as the queen's trial, as well as Wakeman's. The prisoners were acquitted: and now the witnesses saw they were blasted.

He was acquitted.

And they were enraged upon it; which they vented with much spite upon Scroggs. And there was in him matter enough to work on for such foulmouthed people as they were. The queen got a man of great quality to be sent over ambassador from Portugal, not knowing how much she might stand in need of such a protection. He went next day with great state to thank Scroggs for his behaviour in this trial. If he meant well in this compliment, it was very unadvisedly done: for the chief justice was exposed to much censure by it. And therefore some thought it was a shew of civility done on design to ruin him. For, how well pleased soever the papists were with the success of this trial, and with Scroggs's management, yet they could not be supposed to be so satisfied with him, as to forgive his

1679. behaviour in the former trials, which had been very indecently partial and violent^g.

Debates
about dis-
solving the
parliament.

It was now debated in council whether the parliament, now prorogued, should be dissolved or not. The king prevailed on the lords of Essex and Halifax to be for a dissolution, promising to call another parliament next winter^h. Almost all the new counsellors were against the dissolution. They said, the crown had never gained any thing by dissolving a parliament in anger: the same men would probably be chosen again, while all that were thought favourable to the court would be blasted, and for the most part set aside. The new men thus chosen, being
469 trouble of a new election, they thought the next parliament would be more uneasy to the king than this if continued. Lord Essex and Halifax on the other hand argued, that since the king was fixed in his resolutions, both with relation to the exclusion and to the lord Danby's pardon, his parliament had en-

^g (Lingard relates, in his History of England, vol. VIII. 6. page 136, that twenty-four Roman catholic priests received about this time sentence of death for the exercise of their functions; and that after an address had been presented to the king by the house of commons, soliciting their immediate execution, eight of them suffered death: of these, two had passed their eightieth year.)

^h I find by the duke's letters he was pleased with the dissolution, but not with the so speedy calling of another, which he said was only two months' delay, and was giving

them so much time to concert their measures better against their next meeting; for he had little hopes a new parliament would differ much from the last. But his jealousies of the king continued: for in one he says, "it is strange his majesty has not written to me, neither in answer to what I wrote by Graham, nor now upon breaking the parliament. I am not used like a brother nor a friend. Press to have some mark of displeasure shewn to Armstrong; if that be not done, I know what I am to expect." D.

gaged so far in both these, that they could not think 1679.
 that these would be let fall: whereas a new parliament, though composed of the same members, not being yet engaged, might be persuaded to take other methods. The king followed this advice, which he had directed himself: two or three days after, lord Halifax was made an earl, which was called the reward of his good counsel. And now the hatred between the earl of Shaftsbury and him broke out into many violent and indecent instances. On lord Shaftsbury's side more anger appeared, and more contempt on lord Halifax's. Lord Essex was a softer man, and bore the censure of the party more mildly: he saw how he was cried out on for his last advice: but as he was not apt to be much heated, so all he said to me upon it was, that he knew he was on a good bottom, and that good intentions would discover themselves, and be justified by all in conclusion.

I now put a stop in the further relation of affairs in England, to give an account of what passed in Scotland. The party against duke Lauderdale had lost all hopes, seeing how affairs were carried in the last convention of estates: but they began to take heart upon this great turn in England. The duke was sent away, and the lord Danby was in the tower, who were that duke's chief supports: and when the new council was settled, duke Hamilton and many others were encouraged to come up and accuse him. The truth was, the king found his memory was failing him; and so he resolved to let him fall gently, and bring all Scottish affairs into the duke of Monmouth's hands. The Scottish lords were desired, not only by the king, but by the new ministers, to put the heads of their charge against

The affairs
of Scotland.

1679. duke Lauderdale in writing; and the king promised
 ————— to hear lawyers on both sides, and that the earls of
 Essex and Halifax should be present at the hearing.
 Mackenzie was sent for, being the king's advocate,
 to defend the administration; and Lockhart and
 Cunningham were to argue against it. The last of
 these had not indeed Lockhart's quickness, nor his
 talent in speaking; but he was a learned and judi-
 cious man, and had the most universal, and indeed
 the most deserved reputation for integrity and vir-
 tue of any man, not only of his own profession, but
 470 of the whole nation. The hearing came on as was
 promised; and it was made out beyond the possibi-
 lity of an answer, that the giving commissions to an
 army to live on free quarters in a quiet time was
 against the whole constitution, as well as the ex-
 press laws of that kingdom; and that it was never
 done but in an enemy's country, or to suppress a
 rebellion: they shewed likewise, how unjust and il-
 legal all the other parts of his administration were.
 The earls of Essex and Halifax told me every thing
 was made out fully; Mackenzie having nothing to
 shelter himself in, but that flourish in the act against
 field conventicles, in which they were called the ren-
 dezvous of rebellion; from which he inferred, that
 the country where these had been frequent was in
 a state of rebellionⁱ. Kings naturally love to hear
 prerogative magnified: yet on this occasion the king
 had nothing to say in defence of the administration.
 But when May, the master of the privy purse, asked

ⁱ (Compare Ralph's *Hist. of England*, I. 464, 465, where it is shewn, indeed, that this hearing took place after the rise of the rebellion, and that the

decision was not made, till it was ended. But the duke was charged with what had been done before.)

him in his familiar way what he thought now of his 1679.
 Lauderdale, he answered, as May himself told me, —
 that they had objected many damned things that he
 had done against *them*, but there was nothing ob-
 jected that was against *his* service. Such are the
 notions that many kings drink in, by which they set
 up an interest for themselves in opposition to the in-
 terest of the people: and as soon as the people ob-
 serve that, which they will do sooner or later, then
 they will naturally mind their own interest, and set
 it up as much in opposition to the prince: and in
 this contest the people will grow always too hard
 for the prince, unless he is able to subdue and govern
 them by an army. The duke of Monmouth was be-
 ginning to form a scheme of a ministry: but now
 the government in Scotland was so remiss, that the
 people apprehended they might run into all sort of
 confusion. They heard that England was in such
 distractions that they needed fear no force from
 thence. Duke Lauderdale's party was losing heart,
 and were fearing such a new model there, as was set
 up here in England. All this set those mad people
 that had run about with the field conventicles into a
 phrensy: they drew together in great bodies: some
 parties of the troops came to disperse them, but
 found them both so resolute and so strong, that they
 did not think fit to engage them: sometimes they
 fired on one another, and some were killed of both
 sides.

When a party of furious men were riding through
 a moor near St. Andrew's, they saw the archbishop's
 coach appear: he was coming from a council day,
 and was driving home: he had sent some of his
 servants home before him, to let them know he was

The arch-
 bishop of St.
 Andrew's is
 murdered.

1679. coming, and others he had sent off on compliments ;
 so that there was no horsemen about the coach. They seeing this, concluded, according to their frantic enthusiastic notions, that God had now delivered up their greatest enemy into their hands : seven of them made up to the coach, while the rest were as scouts riding all about the moor. One of them fired a pistol at him, which burnt his coat and gown, but did not go into his body : upon this they fancied he had a magical secret to secure him against a shot ; and they drew him out of his coach, and murdered him barbarously, repeating their strokes till they were sure he was quite dead : and so they got clear off, nobody happening to go cross the moor all the while^k. This was the dismal end of that unhappy man : it struck all people with horror, and softened his enemies into some tenderness^l : so that his memory was

^k (According to the apologetical account of one of the assassins, given in a book called *Memoirs of the Church of Scotland*, Lond. 1717. p. 207. they had resolved to kill a gentleman, one of their enemies, and had been lying in ambush for that purpose, when they were informed of the archbishop's being on the road. But the accounts published at the very time report, that inquiries had been previously made by them after him. Some servants were attending ; for in the above apology, and in a narrative of this murder affixed to the life of the archbishop, printed in 1723, they are expressly said to have been disarmed by the ruffians. They rifled the pockets of the archbishop and of his daughter, and wounded

the latter whilst she was clinging to her father. Such were the dreadful effects of fanaticism irritated by persecution, at a time when the principles of religious liberty were little understood, and less acted upon.)

^l (At the time of the archbishop's death, in order to exonerate the covenanters from the guilt of it, their friends in England gave out, that he died by the hands of his private enemies, whom he had grossly injured ; amongst whom, they said, was his steward. See *Algernon Sydney's Letters to Mr. H. Savile*, pp. 65. 72. A relation also, conformable to these particulars, is printed in the first volume of *Cogan's Collection of Tracts*, p. 385. And to show how this foul assassina-

treated with decency by those who had very little 1679.
respect for him during his life.

A week after that, there was a great field conven- ^{A rebellion}
ticle held within ten miles of Glasgow: a body of ^{in Scotland.}
the guards engaged with them, and they made such
vigorous resistance, that the guards, having lost
thirty of their number, were forced to run for it^m:
so the conventicle formed itself into a body, and
marched to Glasgow: the person that led them had
been bred by me, while I lived at Glasgow, being the
younger son of Sir Tho. Hamilton that had married
my sister, but by a former wife: he was then a lively,
hopeful young man: but getting into that company,
and into their notions, he became a crack-brained
enthusiast; [and under the shew of a hero, was an
ignominious coward.] Duke Lauderdale and his
party published every where that this rebellion was
headed by a nephew of mine, whom I had prepared
for such a work while he was in my hands: their
numbers were so magnified, that a company or two
which lay at Glasgow retired in all haste, and left
the town to them, though they were then not above
four or five hundred; and these were so ill armed,

tion has been subsequently
spoken of by the friends of the
foes of the archbishop, Cruick-
shank, in his *History of the*
Church of Scotland, speaks of
the death he justly merited. Vol.
I. c. 3. p. 124. Compare vol.
II. c. 1. p. 24. And in the
year 1820, Mr. Brown, a pro-
fessor of divinity, writes thus
in his *History of the British*
Church: “How far, in their
“circumstantiated case, it was
“lawful and prudent for these
“persons to take away his life,

“I leave to the judgment of
“God, whose providence pre-
“served all that had an active
“hand in it from the fury
“of their murderous persecu-
“tors, notwithstanding all they
“could do to apprehend them.”
Vol. II. p. 336. Cole, in a MS.
note on Burnet’s *History*, ob-
serves, that the archbishop’s
death was, according to Bur-
net himself, a just judgment
of God, referring to what he
says of it in p. 416, folio edit.)
^m For what? S.

1679. and so ill commanded, that a troop of horse could have easily dispersed them. The council at Edinburgh sent the earl of Linlithgow against them with a thousand foot, two hundred horse, and two hundred dragoons: a force much greater than was necessary for making head against such a rabble. He marched till he came within ten miles of them; and then he pretended he had intelligence that they were above eight thousand strong; so he marched back; for he said, it was the venturing the whole force the
472 king had upon too great an inequality: he could never prove that he had any such intelligence: some imputed this to his fear: others thought, that being much engaged with duke Lauderdale, he did this on purpose to give them time to increase their numbers: and thought their madness would be the best justification of all the violences that had been committed in duke Lauderdale's administration. Thus the country was left in their hands: and if there had been any designs or preparations made formerly for a rebellion, now they had time enough to run together, and to form themselves: but it appeared that there had been no such designs, by this, that none came into it but those desperate intercommoned men, who were as it were hunted from their houses into all those extravagances that men may fall in, who wander about inflaming one another, and are heated in it with false notions of religion. The rebels, having the country left to their discretion, fancied that their numbers would quickly increase: and they set out a sort of manifesto, complaining of the oppressions they lay under, asserting the obligation of the covenant: and they concluded it with the demand of a free parliament. When the news of this

came to court, duke Lauderdale said, it was the effect of the encouragement that they had from the king's hearkening to their complaints^m: whereas all indifferent men thought it was rather to be imputed to his insolence and tyranny. 1679.

The king resolved to lose no time: so he sent the duke of Monmouth down post, with full powers to command in chief: and directions were sent to some troops that lay in the north of England to be ready to march upon his orders. Duke Lauderdale apprehended that those in arms would presently submit to the duke of Monmouth, if there was but time given for proper instruments to go among them, and that then they would pretend they had been forced into that rising by the violence of the government: so he got the king to send positive orders after him, that he should not treat with them, but fall on them immediately: yet he marched so slowly that they had time enough given them to dispose them to a submission. They fixed at Hamilton, near which there is a bridge on Clide, which it was believed they intended to defend: but they took no care of it. They sent some to treat with the duke of Monmouth: he answered, that if they would submit to the king's mercy, and lay down their arms, he would interpose for their pardon, but that he would not treat with them as long as they were in arms: and some were beginning to press their rendering themselves at discretion: they had neither the grace to submit, nor the sense to march away, nor the courage to fight it out: but suffered the duke of Monmouth to make himself master of the bridge. They were then four thousand men: but few of them

^m No doubt of it. *Cole.*

1679. were well armed: if they had charged those that came first over the bridge, they might have had some advantage: but they looked on like men that had lost both sense and courage: and upon the first charge they threw down their arms, and ran away: there were between two or three hundred killed, and twelve hundred taken prisoners. The duke of Monmouth stopped the execution that his men were making as soon as he could, and saved the prisoners; for some moved, that they should be all killed upon the spot. Yet this was afterwards objected to him as a neglect of the king's service, and as a courting the people: the duke of York talked of it in that strain: and the king himself said to him, that if he had been there, they should not have had the trouble of prisoners: he answered, he could not kill men in cold blood; that was work only for butchers. Duke Lauderdale's creatures pressed the keeping the army some time in that country, on design to have eat it up: but the duke of Monmouth sent home the militia, and put the troops under discipline: so that all that country was sensible that he had preserved them from ruin: the very fanatical party confessed that he treated them as gently as possible, considering their madness: he came back to court as soon as he had settled matters, and moved the king to grant an indemnity for what was past, and a liberty to hold meetings under the king's licence or connivance: he shewed the king that all this madness of field conventicles flowed only from the severity against those that were held within doorsⁿ. Duke Lauderdale

They were
soon
broken.

ⁿ The duke, in a letter from "generality of the best men Edinburgh, says, "I find the "here much troubled at the

1679.

drew the indemnity in such a manner, that it carried in some clauses of it a full pardon to himself and all his party; but he clogged it much with relation to those for whom it was granted. All gentlemen, preachers, and officers were excepted out of it; so that the favour of it was much limited; two of their preachers were hanged, but the other prisoners were let go upon their signing a bond for keeping the peace: two hundred of them were sent to Virginia, but they were all cast away at sea. Thus ended this tumultuary rebellion, which went by the name of Bothwell-bridge, where the action was. The king soon after sent down orders for allowing meeting-houses: but the duke of Monmouth's interest sunk so soon after this, that these were scarce opened when they were shut up again: 474 their enemies said, this looked like a rewarding them for their rebellion.

An accident happened soon after this, that put the whole nation in a fright, and produced very great effects: the king was taken ill at Windsor of an intermitting fever: the fits were so long and so severe, that the physicians apprehended he was in danger: upon which he ordered the duke to be sent for, but very secretly; for it was communicated to none but to the earls of Sunderland, Essex, and Halifax^P. The duke made all possible haste, and came in disguise through Calais, as the quicker passage:

The king taken ill, and the duke comes to court.

“indulgence the duke of Monmouth gott for the phanatics here, after they had been beaten, and say it will encourage them to another rebellion.” D. (Compare Ralph's Hist. of England, vol. I. p. 464. his Memoirs, says, that the measure was proposed to the king by the earls of Essex and Halifax, through fear of the ill will of the duke of Monmouth and lord Shaftsbury to them. See vol. II. of Temple's works, p. 518.)

^P (Sir William Temple, in

1679. but the danger was over before he came : the fits did not return after the king took *quinquina*, called in England the Jesuits' powder, (or bark :) as he recovered, it was moved that the duke should be again sent beyond sea : he had no mind to it : but when the king was positive in it, he moved that the duke of Monmouth should be put out of all command, and likewise sent beyond sea. The duke of Monmouth's friends advised him to agree to this ; for he might depend on it, that as soon as the parliament met, an address would be made to the king for bringing him back, since his being thus divested of his commissions, and sent away at the duke's desire, would raise his interest in the nation.

The many
false stories
spread to
raise jea-
lousy.

At this time the party that began to be made for the duke of York were endeavouring to blow matters up into a flame every where : of which the earl of Essex gave me the following instance, by which it was easy to judge what sort of intelligence they were apt to give, and how they were possessing the king and his ministers with ill-grounded fears : he came once to London on some treasury business the day before the common hall was to meet in the city : so the spies that were employed to bring news from all corners came to him, and assured him that it was resolved next day to make use of the noise of that meeting, and to seize on the tower, and do all such things as could be managed by a popular fury. The advertisements came to him from so many hands, that he was inclined to believe there was somewhat in it : some pressed him to send soldiers into the tower and to the other parts of the city. He would not take the alarm so hot, but he sent to the lieutenant of the tower to be on his guard : and

he ordered some companies to be drawn up in Covent Garden and in Lincoln's Inn Fields: and he had two hundred men ready, and barges prepared to carry them to the tower, if there should have been the least shadow of tumult: but he would not seem to fear a disorder too much, lest perhaps that might have produced one: yet after all the affrightening stories that had been brought him, the next day passed over very calmly, it not appearing by the least circumstance that any thing was designed, besides the business for which the common hall was summoned. He often reflected on this matter: those mercenary spies are very officious, that they may deserve their pay; and they shape their story to the tempers of those whom they serve: and to such creatures, and to their false intelligence, I imputed a great deal of the jealousy that I found the king possessed with. Both the dukes went now beyond sea: and that enmity which was more secret before, and was covered with a court civility, did now break out open and barefaced^q. But it seemed that the

^q The duke writes, in a letter from Brussels, "I see his majesty has been much misinformed as to some things concerning the duke of Monmouth; for lord chancellor Hyde never went about to put any jealousies into my head of my nephew: what he did about the patent was only what any man that understood the law was obliged to, and I do not remember he ever opened his mouth to me of it. And till he spake to me himself, at Windsor, five or six years ago, of his having a mind to be general,

"I never took any thing ill of him, nor grew jealous of him: but after what I had said to him upon that subject, of my reasons against it, and that I told him then, freely, he was not to expect my friendship if ever he pretended to it, or had it; one cannot wonder if I was against any thing that did increase his power in military affairs, as his being colonel of foot guards would have done, especially when I saw he used all little arts by degrees to compass his point of being general."

D.

1679. duke of York had prevailed with the king not to call the parliament that winter, in hope that the heat the nation was in would with the help of some time grow cooler, and that the party that began now to declare more openly for the right of succession would gain ground. There was also a pretended discovery now ready to break out, which the duke might be made believe could carry off the plot from the papists, and cast it on the contrary party.

A pretended
plot discovered,
called the meal-
tub plot.

Dangerfield, a subtle and dexterous man, who had gone through all the shapes and practices of roguery, and in particular was a false coiner, undertook now to coin a plot^r for the ends of the papists. He was in gaol for debt, and was in an ill intrigue with one Cellier, a popish midwife, who had a great share of wit, and was abandoned to lewdness. She got him to be brought out of prison, and carried him to the countess of Powis, a zealous managing papist. He, after he had laid matters with her, as will afterwards appear, got into all companies, and mixed with the hottest men of the town, and studied to engage others with himself to swear, that they had been invited to accept of commissions, and that a new form of government was to be set up, and that the king and the royal family were to be sent away. He was carried with this story, first to the duke, and then to the king, and had a weekly allowance of money, and was very kindly used by many of that side; so that a whisper run about town, that some extraordinary thing would quickly break out: and he having some correspondence with one colonel Mansel, he made up a bundle of seditious but ill contrived letters, and laid them in a

^r Witty. S.

dark corner of his room: and then some searchers 1679.
 were sent from the custom house to look for some
 forbidden goods, which they heard were in Mansel's 476
 chamber. There were no goods found: but as it
 was laid, they found that bundle of letters: and
 upon that a great noise was made of a discovery:
 but upon inquiry it appeared the letters were coun-
 terfeited, and the forger of them was suspected; so
 they searched into all Dangerfield's haunts, and in
 one of them they found a paper that contained the
 scheme of this whole fiction, which, because it was
 found in a meal-tub, came to be called the meal-tub
 plot. Dangerfield was upon that clapt up, and he
 soon after confessed how the whole matter was laid
 and managed: in which it is very probable he mixed
 much of his own invention with truth, for he was a
 profligate liar. This was a great disgrace to the
 popish party, and the king suffered much by the
 countenance he had given him: the earls of Essex
 and Halifax were set down in the scheme to be
 sworn against with the rest ^s.

Upon this they pressed the king vehemently ^{Great jea-}
 to call a parliament immediately. But the king ^{lousies of}
 thought that if a parliament should meet while all ^{the king.}
 men's spirits were sharpened by this new discovery,
 he would find them in worse temper than ever:
 when the king could not be prevailed on to do that,
 lord Essex left the treasury. The king was very
 uneasy at this. But lord Essex was firm in his re-
 solution not to meddle in that post more, since a

^s (But see North's Examen, from the commons to the house
 p. 256—271. This egregious of lords, accused the duke of
 villain, Dangerfield, in the next York of having proposed to
 year, just on the eve of the bill him to kill the king.)
 of exclusion's being brought up

1679. parliament was not called: yet, at the king's earnest desire, he continued for some time to go to council. Lord Halifax fell ill, much from a vexation of mind: his spirits were oppressed, a deep melancholy seizing him: for a fortnight together I was once a day with him, and found then that he had deep (deeper) impressions of religion on him [than those who knew the rest of his life would have thought him capable of.] Some foolish people gave it out that he was mad: but I never knew him so near a state of true wisdom as he was at that time. He was much troubled at the king's forgetting his promise to hold a parliament that winter; and expostulated severely upon it with some that were sent to him from the king: he was offered to be made secretary of state, but he refused it. Some gave it out that he pretended to be lord lieutenant of Ireland, and was uneasy when that was denied him: but he said to me that it was offered him, and he had refused it. He did not love, he said, a new scene, nor to dine with sound of trumpet and thirty-six dishes of meat on his table. He likewise saw that lord Essex had a mind to be again there; and he was confident he was better fitted for it than he himself was. My 477 being much with him at that time was reflected on: it was said, I had heightened his disaffection to the court: [and Hyde, made then a lord, objected it to me.] I was with him only as a divine.

The court went on in their own pace: lord Tweeddale being then at London moved the earl of Peterborough, that it would be more honourable, and more for the duke's interest, instead of living beyond sea, to go and live in Scotland. Lord Peterborough went immediately with it to the king, who

approved of it. So notice was given the duke : 1679.
and he was appointed to meet the king at Newmarket in October. Lord Tweedale saw, that since the duke of Monmouth had lost his credit with the king, duke Lauderdale would again be continued in his posts ; and that he would act over his former extravagances : whereas he reckoned that this would be checked by the duke's going to Scotland : and that he would study to make himself acceptable to that nation, and bring things among them into order and temper. The duke met the king at Newmarket, as it was ordered : but upon that the earl of Shaftsbury, who was yet president of the council, though he had quite lost all his interest in the king, called a council at Whitehall, and represented to them the danger the king was in by the duke's being so near him ; and pressed the council to represent this to the king. But they did not agree to it : and upon the king's coming to London he was turned out, and lord Roberts, made then earl of Radnor, was made lord president.

The duke went to Scotland soon after : and upon that the duke of Monmouth grew impatient, when ^{Monmouth's} _{disgrace.} he found he was still to be kept beyond sea. He begged the king's leave to return : but when he saw no hope of obtaining it, he came over without leave. The king upon that would not see him, and required him to go back ; on which his friends were divided. Some advised him to comply with the king's pleasure : but he gave himself fatally up to the lord Shaftsbury's conduct, who put him on all the methods imaginable to make himself popular. He went round many parts of England, pretending it was for hunting and horse matches, many thousands

1679. coming together in most places to see him : so that
 ——— this looked like the mustering up the force of the
 party : but it really weakened it : many grew jea-
 lous of the design, and fancied here was a new civil
 war to be raised. Upon this they joined in with the
 duke's party. Lord Shaftsbury set also on foot pe-
 titions for a parliament, in order to the securing the
 king's person and the protestant religion. These
 were carried about and signed in many places, not-
 478 withstanding the king set out a proclamation against
 them : upon that a set of counter-petitions was pro-
 moted by the court, expressing an abhorrence of all
 seditious practices, and referring the time of calling
 a parliament wholly to the king. There were not
 such numbers that joined in the petitions for the
 parliament as had been expected : so this shewed
 rather the weakness than the strength of the party :
 and many well meaning men began to dislike those
 practices, and to apprehend that a change of govern-
 ment was designed.

Petitions
for a par-
liament

Some made a reflection on that whole method of
 proceeding, which may deserve well to be remem-
 bered : in the intervals of parliament, men that
 complain of the government by keeping themselves
 in a sullen and quiet state, and avoiding cabals and
 public assemblies, grow thereby the stronger, and
 more capable to make a stand when a parliament
 comes : whereas by their forming of parties out of
 parliament, unless in order to the managing of elec-
 tions, they do both expose themselves to much dan-
 ger, and bring an ill character on their designs over
 the nation ; which naturally loves parliamentary
 cures, but is jealous of all other methods.

Great dis-

The king was now wholly in the duke's interest,

and resolved to pass that winter without a parliament. Upon which the lords Russel and Cavendish, ^{1679.}
 sir Henry Capel and Mr. Powel, four of the new ^{content on}
 counsellors, desired to be excused from their attendance in council. Several of those who were put in ^{all sides.}
 the admiralty and in other commissions, desired likewise to be dismissed: with this the king was so highly offended, that he became more sullen and intractable than he had ever been before.

The men that governed now were the earl of Sunderland, lord Hyde, and Godolphin: the last of ^{Godol-}
 these was a younger brother of an ancient family in ^{phin's cha-}
 Cornwall, that had been bred about the king from a ^{racter.}
 page, and was now considered as one of the ablest men that belonged to the court: he was the silentest and modestest man that was perhaps ever bred in a court. He had a clear apprehension, and despatched business with great method, and with so much temper, that he had no personal enemies: but his silence begot a jealousy, which has hung long upon him. His notions were for the court: but his incorrupt and sincere way of managing the concerns of the treasury created in all people a very high esteem for him. He loved gaming the most of any man of business I ever knew; and gave one reason for it, because it delivered him from the obligation to talk much: he had true principles of religion ^t 479
 and virtue, and was free from all vanity, and never heaped up wealth: so that all things being laid to-

^t Sir Thomas Dyke told me, said every day in the king's
 in king James the second's chapel for his conversion: to
 reign, Ellis, one of the four which he answered, "If he is
 popish bishops, told him, that "in doubt with you, he is out
 lord Godolphin was in doubts, "of doubt with me." D.
 and that there were masses

1679. gether, he was one of the worthiest and wisest men that has been employed in our time^u: and he has had much of the confidence of four of our succeeding princes^x.

1680. In the spring of the year eighty the duke had leave to come to England; and continued about the king till next winter, that (when) the parliament was to sit. Foreign affairs seemed to be forgot by our court. The prince of Orange had projected an alliance against France: and most of the German princes were much disposed to come into it: for the French had set up a new court at Metz, in which many princes were, under the pretence of dependencies, and some old forgot or forged titles, judged to belong to the new French conquests. This was a mean as well as a perfidious practice, in which the court of France raised much more jealousy and hatred against themselves, than could ever be balanced by such small accessions as were adjudged by that mock court. The earl of Sunderland entered into a particular confidence with the prince of Orange, which he managed by his uncle Mr. Sidney, who was sent envoy to Holland: the prince seemed con-

An alliance
projected
against
France.

^u All this very partial to my knowledge. S. (Yet in the character of lord Godolphin drawn by Swift himself, in his History of the Four last Years of queen Anne, p. 18, there is nothing very inconsistent with this account of him.)

^x King Charles gave him a short character when he was page, which he maintained to his life's end, of being never *in* the way, nor *out* of the way.

His great skill lay in finding out what were his prince's inclinations, which he was very ready to comply with; but had a very morose, haughty behaviour to every body else, and could disoblige people by his looks, more than he could have done by any thing he could have said to them; though his answers were commonly very short and shocking. D.

fident, that if England would come heartily into it, 1680.
 a strong confederacy might then have been formed
 against France. Van Beuning was then in England:
 and he wrote to the town of Amsterdam, that they
 could not depend on the faith or assistance of Eng-
 land. He assured them the court was still in the
 French interest: he also looked on the jealousy be-
 tween the court and the country party as then so
 high, that he did not believe it possible to heal mat-
 ters so as to encourage the king to enter into any
 alliance that might draw on a war: for the king
 seemed to set that up for a maxim, that his going
 into a war was the putting himself into the hands of
 his parliament: and was firmly resolved against it.
 Yet the project of a league was formed: and the
 king seemed inclined to go into it, as soon as mat-
 ters could be well adjusted at home.

There was this year at Midsummer a new prac-
 tice begun in the city of London, that produced very
 ill consequences. The city of London has by char-
 ter the shrivalry of Middlesex, as well as of the
 city: and the two sheriffs were to be chosen on
 Midsummer day. But the common method had
 been for the lord mayor to name one of the sheriffs
 by drinking to him on a public occasion: and that
 nomination was commonly confirmed by the com-
 mon hall: and then they named the other sheriff.
 The truth was, the way in which the sheriffs lived
 made it a charge of about 5000*l.* a year: so they
 took little care about it, but only to find men that
 would bear the charge; which recommended them
 to be chosen aldermen upon the next vacancy, and
 to rise up according to their standing to the mayor-
 alty, which generally went in course to the senior

The elec-
 tion of the
 sheriffs of
 London.

1680. alderman. When a person was set up to be sheriff that would not serve, he compounded the matter for 400*l.* fine. All juries were returned by the sheriffs: but they commonly left that wholly in the hands of their under sheriffs: so it was now pretended that it was necessary to look a little more carefully after this matter. The under sheriffs were generally attorneys, and might be easily brought under the management of the court: so it was proposed, that the sheriffs should be chosen with more care, not so much that they might keep good tables, as that they should return good juries. The person to whom the present mayor had drunk was set aside: and Bethel and Cornish were chosen sheriffs for the ensuing year. Bethel was a man of knowledge, and had writ a very judicious book of the interests of princes^y: but as he was a known republican in principle, so he was a sullen and wilful man; and turned from the ordinary way of a sheriff's living into the extreme of sordidness, which was very unacceptable to the body of the citizens, and proved a great prejudice to the party. Cornish, the other sheriff, was a plain, warm, honest man; and lived very nobly all his year: the court was very jealous of this, and understood it to be done on design to pack juries: so that the party should be always safe, whatever they might engage in^z. It was said, that the king would not have common justice done him hereafter against any of them, how guilty soever. The setting up Bethel gave a great colour to this

^y (The Interests of Princes and States. Lond. 1680. 8vo. anonymous.)

^z See the reasons of the par-

ty for packing juries, in Mr. North's Examen of bishop Kennett's Compleat History of England. *Cole.*

jealousy; for it was said, he had expressed his approving the late king's death in very indecent terms. 1680.
 These two persons had never before received the sacrament in the church, being independents: but they did it now to qualify themselves for this office, which gave great advantages against the whole party: it was said that the serving an end was a good resolver of all cases of conscience, and purged all scruples.

Thus matters went on till the winter eighty, in which the king resolved to hold a session of parliament. He sent the duke to Scotland a few days before their meeting: and upon that the duchess of 481 Portsmouth declared openly for the exclusion; and so did lord Sunderland and Godolphin. Lord Sunderland assured all people, that the king was resolved to settle matters with his parliament on any terms, since the interest of England and the affairs of Europe made a league against France indispensably necessary at that time; which could not be done without a good understanding at home. Lord Sunderland sent lord Arran for me: I declined this new acquaintance as much as I could: but it could not be avoided: he seemed then very zealous for a happy settlement: and this I owe him in justice, that though he went off from the measures he was in at that time, yet he still continued personally kind to my self: now the great point was, whether the limitations should be accepted, and treated about, or the exclusion be pursued. Lord Halifax assured me, that any limitations whatsoever that should leave the title of king to the duke, though it should be little more than a mere title, might be obtained of the king: but that he was positive and fixed

The bill of exclusion again taken up.

1680. against the exclusion. It is true, this was in a great
 ————— measure imputed to his management, and that he
 had wrought the king up to it.

The most specious handle for recommending the limitations was this: the duke declared openly against them: so if the king should have agreed to them, it must have occasioned a breach between him and the duke: and it seemed to be very desirable to have them once fall out; since, as soon as that was brought about, the king of his own accord and for his own security might be moved to promote the exclusion. The truth is, lord Halifax's hatred of the earl of Shaftsbury, and his vanity in desiring to have his own notion preferred, sharpened him at that time to much indecency in his whole deportment: but the party depended on the hopes that lady Portsmouth and lord Sunderland gave them: many meetings were appointed^a between lord Halifax and some leading men; in which as he tried to divert them from the exclusion, so they studied to persuade him to it, both without effect. The majority had engaged themselves to promote the exclusion; lord Russel moved it first in the house of commons, and was seconded by Capel, Mountague, and Winnington: Jones came into the house a few days after this, and went with great zeal into it: Jenkins, now made secretary of state in Coventry's place, was the chief manager for the court. He was a man of an exemplary life, and considerably
 482 learned: but he was dull and slow: he was suspected of leaning to popery, though very unjustly: but he was set on every punctilio of the church of

^a I got many meetings to be appointed. Bowyer's Transcript of the Suppressed Passages.

England to superstition, and was a great assertor of the divine right of monarchy, and was for carrying the prerogative high: he neither spoke nor writ well: but being so eminent for the most courtly qualifications, other matters were the more easily dispensed with. All his speeches and arguments against the exclusion were heard with indignation: so the bill was brought into the house. It was moved by those who opposed it, that the duke's daughters might be named in it, as the next in the succession: but it was said, that was not necessary; for since the duke was only personally disabled, as if he had been actually dead, that carried the succession over to his daughters: yet this gave a jealousy, as if it was intended to keep that matter still undetermined; and that upon another occasion it might be pretended, that the disabling the duke to succeed did likewise disable him to derive that right to others, which was thus cut off in himself. But though they would not name the duke's daughters, yet they sent such assurances to the prince of Orange, that nothing thus proposed could be to his prejudice; that he believed them, and declared his desire, that the king would fully satisfy his parliament: the States sent over memorials to the king, pressing him to consent to the exclusion. The prince did not openly appear in this: but it being managed by Fagel, it was understood that he approved of it: and this created a hatred in the duke to him, which was never to be removed. Lord Sunderland, by Sidney's means, engaged the States into it: and he fancied that it might have some effect ^b.

1680.

 Passed by
the com-
mons.

^b (Although sir William Temple in his Memoirs expresses a contrary opinion respecting lord Sunderland's concern in this

1680.

But re-
jected by
the lords.

The bill of exclusion was quickly brought up to the lords. The earls of Essex and Shaftsbury argued most for it: and the earl of Halifax was the champion on the other side: he gained great honour in the debate; and had a visible superiority to lord Shaftsbury in the opinion of the whole house: and that was to him triumph enough. In conclusion, the bill was thrown out upon the first reading: the country party brought it nearer an equality^c than was imagined they could do, considering the king's earnestness in it, and that the whole bench of the bishops was against it^d. The commons were in-

memorial, yet our author is perhaps right in his account of it. See Temple's Works, vol. II. p. 542. Dr. Lingard says, that the "tone of this instrument was "offensive to the feelings and "injurious to the character of "the king. He complained of "it in strong and resentful language to the States, by whom "it was immediately disowned; and Charles, after some "investigation, believed that "he had traced it to its real "authors, Sunderland and Sidney on the one part, and the "prince, and Fagel the pensionary on the other." *Hist. of England*, vol. VIII. chap. 7. p. 192.)

^c 63 to 30. O.

^d Except three. See Echard. The three, it has been said, were, Compton, Pearson, and Lamplugh. qu. the Journal of the Lords as to those three bishops being that day in the house. They were of London, Chester, and Exeter. O. (The bishop of Chester, at that time

the most learned Dr. Pearson, is not in the number of those who were present or voted on this occasion. Neither does it appear from the Journal of the House of Lords, who voted on one side, or who on the other, when the bill was rejected. But Chandler, in his History and Proceedings, reports, as well as Echard, that the contents for its rejection were 63: and the not contents 30, the bishops being all for rejecting it except three. It is now however practicable to correct the above statement, which is admitted into general history, that three of the bishops voted for the exclusion of the duke of York; a list of those peers who voted for the bill of exclusion having been lately found by the head librarian of the Bodleian library, Dr. Bandinel, among the Ormonde papers bequeathed to the library by Carte the historian. They are all temporal peers, thirty in number, and to the list of their

flamed, when they saw the fate of their bill: they voted an address to the king to remove lord Halifax from his counsels and presence for ever: which was an unparliamentary thing; since it was visible that it was for his arguing as he did in the house of lords, though they pretended it was for his advising the dissolution of the last parliament: but that was a thin disguise of their anger: yet without destroying the freedom of debate, they could not found their address on that which was the true cause of it. Russel and Jones, though formerly lord Halifax's friends, thought it was enough not to speak against him in the house of commons: but they sat silent. Some called him a papist: others said he was an atheist. Chichely, that had married his mother, moved, that I might be sent for to satisfy the house as to the truth of his religion. I wish I could have said as much to have persuaded them that he was a

1680.

483

names this note is subjoined; "Thus all the fourteen bishops, and forty-nine temporal peers, (63 in the whole,) voted for its being rejected." So MS. Carte. J. J. J. But, as Chandler above cited asserts, that "upon the first reading of the bill, it was carried in the affirmative that it should be committed by two voices only," it is probable, that three of the bishops were for its committal; which gave rise to the other report. That bishop Pearson ever voted for this bill, was always highly improbable. The conduct indeed of the duke of York after his accession to the throne, when he abused the royal prerogative to the subversion of the legally

established religion, afforded a triumph to the exclusionists; but Pearson would never have consented to set aside the next heir of an hereditary monarchy, and to ruin an individual, on account of that religion, which he had protested should be a matter solely between God and his own soul. The intrigues with France were at that time either not credited, or at least the professed object of them known to few; although it must be acknowledged, that the wise and good had long been apprehensive of "the secret machinations of the papal faction," to use the words of the same bishop in the conclusion of a scarce sermon preached by him in 1673.)

1680. good Christian, as that he was no papist: I was at that time in a very good character in that house: the first volume of the History of the Reformation was then out; and was so well received, that I had the thanks of both houses for it, and was desired by both to prosecute that work. The parliament had made an address to the king for a fast day. Dr. Sprat and I were ordered to preach before the house of commons: my turn was in the morning: I mentioned nothing relating to the plot, but what appeared in Coleman's letters: yet I laid open the cruelties of the church of Rome in many instances that happened in queen Mary's reign, which were not then known: and I aggravated, though very truly^e, the danger of falling under the power of that religion. I pressed also a mutual forbearance among ourselves in lesser matters: but I insisted most on the impiety and vices that had worn out all sense of religion, and all regard to it among us. Sprat in the afternoon went further into the belief of the plot than I had done: but [as it was much the worse sermon I ever heard him preach, so] he insinuated his fears of their undutifulness to the king in such a manner, that they were highly offended at him: so the commons did not send him thanks, as they did to me; which raised his merit at court, as it increased the displeasure against me. Sprat had studied a polite style much: but there was little strength in it: he had the beginnings of learning laid well in him: but he has allowed himself in a course of some years in much sloth, and too many liberties^f.

^e A bull. S.

^f Very false. S. Sprat was chaplain to the duke of Buckingham, and had assisted him

very much in writing the Rehearsal. He was highly valued by men of wit, and little by those of his own profession. D.

The king sent many messages to the house of commons, pressing for a supply, first for preserving Tangier, he being then in a war with the king of Fez, which by reason of the distance put him to much charge; but chiefly, for enabling him to go into alliances necessary for the common preservation. 1680.

The house upon that made a long representation 484 to the king of the dangers that both he and they were in; and assured him, they would do every thing that he could expect of them, as soon as they were well secured: by which they meant, as soon as the exclusion should pass, and that bad ministers and ill judges should be removed. They renewed their address against lord Halifax; and made addresses both against the marquis of Worcester, soon after made duke of Beaufort, and against lord Clarendon and Hide, as men inclined to popery. Hide spoke so vehemently to vindicate himself from the suspicions of popery, that he cried in his speech: and Jones, upon the score of old friendship, got the words relating to popery to be struck out of the address against him. The commons also impeached several of the judges and Mr. Seymour: the judges were accused for some illegal charges and judgments; and Seymour, for corruption and mal-administration in the office of treasurer of the navy. They impeached Scroggs for high treason: but it was visible that the matters objected to him were only misdemeanors: so the lords rejected the impeachment; which was carried chiefly by the earl of Danby's party, and in favour to him. The commons did also assert the right of the people to petition for a parliament: and because some in their

The house of commons proceeded against some with severity.

1680. counter-petitions had expressed their abhorrence of this practice, they voted these abhorrrers to be betrayers of the liberties of the nation. They expelled one Withins out of their house for signing one of these, though he with great humility confessed his fault, and begged pardon for it. The merit of this raised him soon to be a judge; for indeed he had no other merit: they fell also on sir George Jefferies, a furious declaimer at the bar: but he was raised by that, as well as by this prosecution^g. The house did likewise send their sergeant to many parts of England to bring up abhorrrers as delinquents: upon which the right that they had to imprison any besides their own members came to be much questioned, since they could not receive an information upon oath, nor proceed against such as refused to appear before them. In many places, those for whom they sent their sergeant refused to come up. It was found, that such practices were grounded on no law, and were no elder than queen Elizabeth's time: while the house of commons used that power gently, it was submitted to in respect to it: but now it grew to be so much extended, that many resolved not to submit to it. The former parliament had passed a very strict act for the due execution of the
485 habeas corpus; which was indeed all they did: it was carried by an odd artifice in the house of lords. Lord Grey and lord Norris were named to be the tellers: lord Norris, being a man subject to vapours, was not at all times attentive to what he was doing: so a very fat lord coming in, lord Grey counted him for ten, as a jest at first: but seeing lord Norris had

^g But see an account of this as to Jefferies in Mr. Roger North's Examen. O.

not observed it, he went on with this misreckoning of ten : so it was reported to the house, and declared that they who were for the bill were the majority, though it indeed went on the other side : and by this means the bill passed^h. There was a bold forward man, Sheredon, a native of Ireland, whom the commons committed : and he moved for his habeas corpus : some of the judges were afraid of the house, and kept out of the way : but baron Weston had the courage to grant it. The session went yet into a higher strain ; for they voted, that all anticipations on any branches of the revenue were against law, and that whosoever lent any money upon the credit of those anticipations were public enemies to the kingdom. Upon this it was said, that the parliament would neither supply the king themselves, nor suffer him to make use of his credit, which every private man might do. They said, on the other hand, that they looked on the revenue as a public treasure, that was to be kept clear of all anticipations, and not as a private estate that might be mortgaged : and they thought, when all other means of supply except by parliament were stopped, that must certainly bring the king to their terms. Yet the clamour raised on this, as if they had intended to starve the king, and blast his credit, was a great load on them : and their vote had no effect, for the king continued to have the same credit that he had before. Another vote went much higher ; it was for an association, copied from that in queen Eliza-

An association proposed.

^h See Minute Book of the House of Lords with regard to this bill, and compare there the number of lords that day in the house with the number reported to be in the division, which agrees with this story. O.

1680. beth's time, for the revenging the king's death upon all papists, if he should happen to be killed. The precedent of that time was a specious colour: but this difference was assigned between the two cases: queen Elizabeth was in no danger but from papists: so that association struck a terror into that whole party, which did prove a real security to her; and therefore her ministers set it on. But now, it was said, there were many republicans still in the nation, and many of Cromwell's officers were yet alive, who seemed not to repent of what they had done: so some of these might by this means be encouraged to attempt on the king's life, presuming that both the
486 suspicions and revenges of it would be cast upon the duke and the papists. Great use was made of this to possess all people, that this association was intended to destroy the king, instead of preserving him.

Expedients
offered in
the house
of lords.

There was not much done in the house of lords after they threw out the bill of exclusion. Lord Halifax indeed pressed them to go on to limitations: and he began with one, that the duke should be obliged to live five hundred miles out of England during the king's life. But the house was cold and backward in all that matter. Those that were really the duke's friends abhorred all those motions: and lord Shaftsbury and his party laughed at them: they were resolved to let all lie in confusion, rather than hearken to any thing besides the exclusion. The house of commons seemed also to be so set against that project, that very little progress was made in it. Lord Essex made a motion, which was agreed to in a thin house: but it put an end to all discourses of that nature: he moved, that an asso-

ciation should be entered into to maintain those ex- 1680.

pedients, and that some cautionary towns should be put into the hands of the associators during the king's life to make them good after his death. The king looked on this as a deposing of himself. He had read more in Davila than in any other book of history: and he had a clear view into the consequences of such things, and looked on this as worse than the exclusion. So that, as lord Halifax often observed to me, this whole management looked like a design to unite the king more entirely to the duke, instead of separating him from him: the king came to think that he himself was levelled at chiefly, though for decency's sake his brother was only named. The truth was, the leading men thought they were sure of the nation, and of all future elections, as long as popery was in view. They fancied the king must have a parliament, and money from it very soon, and that in conclusion he would come into them. He was much beset by all the hungry courtiers, who longed for a bill of money: they studied to persuade him, from his father's misfortunes, that the longer he was in yielding, the terms would grow the higher.

They relied much on the lady Portsmouth's interest, who did openly declare her self for the house of commons: and they were so careful of her, that when one moved that an address should be made to the king for sending her away, he could not be heard, though at another time such a motion would have been better entertained. Her behaviour in this matter was unaccountable: and the duke's behaviour to her afterwards looked liker an acknowledgment than a resentment. Many refined upon it, and

Duchess of
Ports-
mouth's
conduct
in this
matter lit-
tle under-
stood.

1680. thought she was set on as a decoy to keep the party up to the exclusion, that they might not hearken to the limitations. The duke was assured, that the king would not grant the one: and so she was artificially managed to keep them from the other, to which the king would have consented, and of which the duke was most afraid. But this was too fineⁱ: she was hearty for the exclusion: of which I had this particular account from Mountague, who I believe might be the person that laid the bait before her. It was proposed to her, that if she could bring the king to the exclusion, and to some other popular things, the parliament would go next to prepare a bill for securing the king's person; in which a clause might be carried, that the king might declare the successor to the crown, as had been done in Henry the Eighth's time. This would very much raise the king's authority, and would be no breach with the prince of Orange, but would rather oblige him to a greater dependence on the king. The duke of Monmouth and his party would certainly be for this clause, since he could have no prospect any other way; and he would please himself with the hopes of being preferred by the king to any other person. But since the lady Portsmouth found she was so absolutely the mistress of the king's spirit, she might reckon, that if such an act could be carried the king would be prevailed on to declare her son his successor: and it was suggested to her, that, in order to the strengthening her son's interest, she ought to

ⁱ Many of the duke's letters testify, that he was upon very ill terms with her at that time, and looked upon her and her cabal as the most dangerous enemies he had, and thinks nothing will be well till Godolphin and all the rotten sheep at the end of the gallery are turned out. D.

treat for a match with the king of France's natural daughter, now the duchess of Bourbon. And thus the duke of Monmouth and she were brought to an agreement to carry on the exclusion, and that other act pursuant to it: and they thought they were making tools of one another to carry on their own ends. The nation was possessed with such a distrust of the king, that there was no reason to think they could ever be brought to so entire a confidence in him, as to deliver up themselves and their posterity so blindfold into his hands. Mountague assured me, that she not only acted heartily in this matter, but she once drew the king to consent to it, if she^k might have had 800,000*l.* for it; and that was afterwards brought down to 600,000*l.* But the jealousies upon the king himself were such, that the managers in the house of commons durst not move for giving money till the bill of exclusion should pass, lest they should have lost their credit by such a motion: and the king would not trust them. So near was this point brought to an agreement, if Mountague told me true^l. 1680.

That which reconciled the duke to the duchess of Portsmouth was, that the king assured him, she did all by his order, that so she might have credit with the party, and see into their designs: upon which

^k (The greatness of the sum, as well as the remaining part of the story, makes it probable that *he*, instead of *she*, was originally written.)

^l (Salmon, in his Examination of this History, p. 857, observes, that the king might have had much greater sums given him openly, if he had consented to the exclusion.

Cole also, in a MS. note, intimates his disbelief of this account. But in Dr. Lingard's words, gradually the king was brought, or at least pretended, to listen to these terms. Hist. of England, VIII. 6. p. 161. See also p. 167. Of the duchess of Portsmouth's intrigues with the exclusionists there does not exist a doubt.)

1680. the duke saw it was necessary to believe this, or at least to seem to believe it.

Stafford's
trial.

The other great business of this parliament was the trial of the viscount of Stafford, who was the younger son of the old earl of Arundell, and so was uncle to the duke of Norfolk. He was a weak, but a fair conditioned man: he was in ill terms with his nephew's family: and had been guilty of great vices in his youth, which had almost proved fatal to him: he married the heiress of the great family of the Staffords. He thought the king had not rewarded him for his former services as he had deserved: so he often voted against the court, and made great applications always to the earl of Shaftsbury. He was in no good terms with the duke; for the great consideration the court had of his nephew's family made him to be the most neglected: when Oates deposed first against him, he happened to be out of the way: and he kept out a day longer. But the day after he came in, and delivered himself: which, considering the feebleness of his temper, and the heat of that time, was thought a sign of innocence. Oates and Bedlow swore, he had a patent to be paymaster general to the army; Dugdale swore, that he offered him 500*l.* to kill the king. Bedlow had died the summer before at Bristol. It was in the time of the assizes: North, lord chief justice of the common pleas, being there, he sent for him, and by oath confirmed all that he had sworn formerly, except that which related to the queen and to the duke. He also denied upon oath, that any person had ever practised upon him, or corrupted him: his disowning some of the particulars which he had sworn had an appearance of sincerity, and gave

much credit to his former depositions. I could 1680.
 never hear what sense he expressed of the other ill
 parts of his life, for he vanished soon out of all
 men's thoughts^m.

Another witness appeared against lord Stafford, one Turbervill; who swore, that in the year seventy-five the lord Stafford had taken much pains to persuade him to kill the king: he began the proposition to him at Paris: and sent him by the way of Diep over to England, telling him that he in-489
 tended to follow by the same road: but he wrote afterwards to him that he was to go by Calais. But he said he never went to see him upon his coming to England. Turbervill swore the year wrong at first: but upon recollection he went and corrected that error. This, at such a distance of time, seemed to be no great matter: it seemed much stranger, that after such discourses once begun, he should never go near the lord Stafford; and that lord Stafford should never inquire after him. But there was a much more material objection to him. Turbervill, upon discourse with some in St. Martin's parish, seemed inclined to change his religion: they brought him to Dr. Lloyd, then their minister: and he convinced him so fully, that he changed upon it: and after that he came often to him, and was

^m (North, p. 252—255, *Examen of Crit. Hist.* says, that the tendency of Bedloe's oath was to accuse the queen and the duke of York; but that nothing express or positive was declared. He thinks that Bedloe went to Bristol, where he fell sick and died, for the purpose of trepanning the lord

chief justice into danger, which by his good fortune and prudence he avoided. It appears, however, by the chief justice's account in his *Narrative*, published at the time, that Bedloe cleared both the duke and queen of conspiring the king's death.)

1680. chiefly supported by him: for some months he was constantly at his table. Lloyd had pressed him to recollect all that he had heard among the papists relating to plots and designs against the king or the nation. He said that which all the converts at that time said often, that they had it among them that within a very little while their religion would be set up in England; and that some of them said, a great deal of blood would be shed before it could be brought about: but he protested that he knew no particulars. After some months' dependance on Lloyd, he withdrew entirely from him; and he saw him no more, till he appeared now an evidence against lord Stafford: Lloyd was in great difficulties upon that occasion. It had been often declared, that the most solemn denials of witnesses before they make discoveries did not at all invalidate their evidence; and that it imported no more, but that they had been so long firm to their promise of revealing nothing: so that this negative evidence against Turbervill could have done lord Stafford no service. On the other hand, considering the load that already lay on Lloyd on the account of Berry's businessⁿ, and that his being a little before this time promoted to be bishop of St. Asaph was imputed to that, it was visible that his discovering this against Turbervill would have aggravated those censures, and very much blasted him. In opposi-

ⁿ (See before, p. 447, folio edit. Was this load on him, by his having professed his belief in Berry's innocence? Higgons, in his Remarks, p. 211, relates, that Dr. Lloyd refused the sacrament to Berry, when

he passionately desired it, although, according to Burnet, he believed Berry's solemn and repeated declarations of his being innocent of the charge brought against him.)

tion to all this, here was a justice to be done, and a service to truth, towards the saving a man's life: 1680. _____ and the question was very hard to be determined. He advised with all his friends, and with my self in particular. The much greater number were of opinion that he ought to be silent^o. I said, my own behaviour in Staley's affair shewed what I would do if I was in that case: but his circumstances were 490 very different: so I concurred with the rest as to him. He had another load on him: he had writ a book with very sincere intentions, but upon a very tender point: he proposed, that a discrimination should be made between the regular priests that were in a dependance and under directions from Rome, and the secular priests that would renounce the pope's deposing power and his infallibility^p: he thought this would raise heats among themselves, and draw censures from Rome on the seculars, which in conclusion might have very good effects. This was very plausibly writ, and designed with great sincerity: but angry men said, all this was intended only to take off so much from the apprehensions that the nation had of popery, and to give a milder idea of a great body among them: and as soon as it had that effect, it was probable that all the missionaries would have leave given them to put on that disguise, and to take those discriminating tests till they had once prevailed: and then they would throw them off. Thus the most zealous man against popery that I ever yet knew, and the man

^o Damned advice. S.

^p See *Athenæ Oxon.* vol. II. col. 1090. And see *State Trials*, for sir F. Winnington's speech, at the beginning of lord

Stafford's trial, which might perhaps determine Lloyd not to give this evidence, and might deter him from it. O.

1680. of the most entire sincerity, was so heavily censured
 ——— at this time, that it was not thought fit, nor indeed
 safe ^q, for him to declare what he knew concerning
 Turbervill.

The trial was very august: the earl of Nottingham was the lord high steward: it continued five days. On the first day the commons brought only general evidence to prove the plot: Smith swore some things that had been said to him at Rome of killing the king: an Irish priest, that had been long in Spain, confirmed many particulars in Oates's narrative: then the witnesses deposed all that related to the plot in general. To all this lord Stafford said little, as not being much concerned in it: only he declared, that he was always against the pope's power of deposing princes. He also observed a great difference between the gunpowder plot and that which was now on foot: that in the former all the chief conspirators died confessing the fact; but that now all died with the solemnest protestations of their innocence. On the second day the evidence against himself was brought: he urged against Oates, that he swore he had gone in among them on design to betray them: so that he had been for some years taking oaths and receiving sacraments in so treacherous a manner, that no credit could be given to a man that was so black by his own confession. On the third day he brought his evidence to discredit
 491 the witnesses: his servant swore, that while he was at the lord Aston's, Dugdale never was in his chamber but once; and that was on the account of a foot

^q But he ought to have done it. O. (So says every other honest man. See this business set in its proper light, in Salmon's *Lives of the English Bishops*, p. 149—155.)

race. Some deposed against Dugdale's reputation: 1680.
and one said, that he had been practising on himself
to swear as he should direct him. The minister of
the parish and another gentleman deposed, that they
heard nothing from Dugdale concerning the killing
a justice of peace in Westminster, which, as he had
sworn, he had said to them. As to Turbervill, who
had said that the lord Stafford was at that time in
a fit of the gout, his servants said they never knew
him in a fit of the gout: and he himself affirmed,
he never had one in his whole life. He also proved
that he did not intend to come to England by Diep;
for he had writ for a yacht which met him at Calais.
He also proved by several witnesses, that both Dug-
dale and Turbervill had often said that they knew
nothing of any plot; and that Turbervill had lately
said, he would set up for a witness, for none lived
so well as witnesses did: he insisted likewise on the
mistake of the year, and on Turbervill's never com-
ing near him after he came over to England. The
strongest part of his defence was, that he made it
out unanswerably, that he was not at the lord As-
ton's on one of the times that Dugdale had fixed on;
for at that time he was either at Bath or at Bad-
minton. For Dugdale had once fixed on a day;
though afterwards he said it was about that time:
now that day happened to be the marquis of Wor-
cester's wedding-day: and on that day it was fully
proved that he was at Badminton, that lord's house,
not far from the Bath. On the fourth day proofs
were brought to support the credit of the witnesses:
it was made out, that Dugdale had served the lord
Aston long, and with great reputation. It was now
two full years since he began to make discoveries:

1680. and in all that time they had not found any one particular to blemish him with ; though no doubt they had taken pains to examine into his life. His publishing the news of Godfrey's death was well made out, though two persons in the company had not minded it : many proofs were brought that he was often in lord Stafford's company, of which many more affidavits were made after that lord's death. Two women that were still papists swore, that upon the breaking out of the plot he searched into many papers, and burnt them : he gave many of these to one of the women to fling in the fire ; but finding a book of accounts, he laid that aside, saying, There is
492 no treason here ; which imported that he thought the others were treasonable. He proved that one of the witnesses brought against him was so infamous in all respects, that lord Stafford himself was convinced of it. He said, he had only pressed a man, who now appeared against him, to discover all he knew : he said, at such a distance of time he might mistake as to time or a day ; but could not be mistaken as to the things themselves. Turbervill described both the street and the room in Paris in which he saw lord Stafford. He found a witness that saw him at Diep, to whom he complained, that a lord for whom he looked had failed him : and upon that he said he was no good staff to lean on ; by which, though he did not name the lord, he believed he meant lord Stafford. Dugdale and he both confessed they had denied long that they knew any thing of the plot, which was the effect of the resolution they had taken, to which they adhered long, of discovering nothing : it was also proved that lord Stafford was often lame, which Turbervill took for the gout. On

the fifth day lord Stafford resumed all his evidence, 1680.
 and urged every particular very strongly. Jones, in
 the name of the commons, did on the other hand re-
 sume the evidence against him with great force: he
 said indeed nothing for supporting Oates; for the
 objection against him was not to be answered. He
 made it very clear that Dugdale and Turbervill were
 two good witnesses, and were not at all discredited
 by any thing that was brought against them. When
 it came to the giving of judgment, above fifty of the
 peers gave it against lord Stafford, and above thirty
 acquitted him: four of the Howards, his kinsmen,
 condemned him: lord Arundell ^r, afterwards duke
 of Norfolk, though in enmity with him, did acquit
 him. Duke Lauderdale condemned him: and so
 did both the earls of Nottingham ^s and Anglesey;
 [though the last of these very imprudently (impu-
 dently, *Bowyer's Transcript*) said, he did not be-
 lieve the witnesses.] Lord Halifax acquitted him.
 Lord Nottingham, when he gave judgment, delivered
 it with one of the best speeches he had ever made.
 But he committed one great indecency in it: for he
 said, who can doubt any longer that London was
 burnt by papists? though there was not one word
 in the whole trial relating to that matter. Lord
 Stafford behaved himself during the whole time, and
 at the receiving his sentence, with much more con-
 stancy than was expected from him ^t.

He was con-
demned.

^r Then of the house of lords, as lord Mowbray, called up by writ to that barony of his father. O.

^s (See speaker Onslow's note below, at p. 261. vol. II. folio edit.)

^t The duke, in one of his let-

ters, says, " I was informed by
 " Fielding of lord Stafford's be-
 " ing condemned, which sur-
 " prised me, though I knew
 " the malice of some against
 " him and the government,
 " would make them press it to
 " the utmost. And besides all

1680.

He sent for
me, and em-
ployed me
to do him
service.

Within two days after he sent a message to the lords, desiring that the bishop of London and I might be appointed to come to him. We waited on him: his design seemed to be only to possess us with an opinion of his innocence, of which he made very solemn protestations. He heard us speak of the points in difference between us and the church of Rome with great temper and attention. At parting, he desired me to come back to him next day; for he had a mind to be more particular with me. When I came to him, he repeated the protestations of his innocence; and said, he was confident the villany of the witnesses would soon appear: he did not doubt I should see it in less than a year. I pressed him in several points of religion; and urged several things, which he said he had never heard before. He said, these things on another occasion would have made some impression upon him; but he had now little time, therefore he would lose none in controversy: so I let that discourse fall. I talked to him of those preparations for death in which all Christians agree: he entertained these very seriously: [much above what I expected from him.] He had a mind to live, if it was possible: he said, he could discover nothing with relation to the king's life, protesting that there was not so much as an intimation about it that had ever passed among them. But he added, that he could discover many other things,

“ other considerations, am very
“ sorry his majesty will be so
“ hard put to it; for I hope he
“ will remember the continual
“ trouble it was to the king his
“ father, the having consented
“ to the death of the earl of

“ Strafford, and not have such
“ a burden on his conscience;
“ and on the other hand, I
“ know he will be hard prest
“ to sign the warrant against
“ this unfortunate lord.” D.

that were more material than any thing that was yet known, and for which the duke would never forgive him: and of these, if that might save his life, he would make a full discovery. I stopt him when he was going on to particulars; for I would not be a confident in any thing in which the public safety was concerned. He knew best the importance of those secrets; and so he could only judge, whether it would be of that value as to prevail with the two houses to interpose with the king for his pardon. He seemed to think it would be of great use, chiefly to support what they were then driving on with relation to the duke: he desired me to speak to lord Essex, lord Russel, and sir William Jones. I brought him their answer the next day; which was, that if he did discover all he knew concerning the papists' designs, and more particularly concerning the duke, they would endeavour that it should not be insisted on, that he must confess those particulars for which he was judged. He asked me, what if he should name some who had now great credit, but had once engaged to serve their designs: I said, nothing could be more acceptable than the discovering such disguised papists, or false protestants: yet upon this I charged him solemnly not to think of redeeming his own life by accusing any other falsely, but to tell the truth, and all the truth, as far as the common safety was concerned in it. As we were discoursing of these matters, the earl of Carlisle came in: [who had been in great favour with Cromwell, and was captain of his guards, and had then run into a high profession of religion, to the pitch of praying and preaching in their meetings. But after the restoration he shook that off, and run into a course of vice. He loved to be popu-

1680. 494

1680. lar, and yet to keep up an interest at court ; and so was apt to go forward and backward in public affairs.] In his hearing, by lord Stafford's leave, I went over all that had passed between us, and did again solemnly adjure him to say nothing but the truth. Upon this he desired the earl of Carlisle to carry a message from him to the house of lords, that whensoever they would send for him he would discover all that he knew : upon that he was immediately sent for. And he began with a long relation of their first consultations after the restoration about the methods of bringing in their religion, which they all agreed could only be brought about by a toleration. He told them of the earl of Bristol's project ; and went on to tell who had undertaken to procure the toleration for them : and then he named the earl of Shaftsbury. When he named him, he was ordered to withdraw : and the lords would hear no more from him^u. It was also given out, that in this I was a tool of lord Halifax's to bring him thither to blast lord Shaftsbury. He was sent back to the tower :

^u " After this (lord Stafford
" said) the opposition of lord
" Clarendon and the bishops
" to the declaration of indul-
" gence extinguished his hopes
" (of it), which, however, were
" subsequently rekindled by
" the report of the conversion
" of the duke of York to the
" catholic faith. It was then
" proposed to form a coalition
" between the catholics and
" the country party, for the pur-
" pose of procuring in the first
" place the dissolution of the
" parliament, and in the next
" the toleration of the catholic
" worship. This plan obtained

" the approbation of all to
" whom he had submitted it,
" of the duke of York, of the
" lord chancellor, and of lord
" Shaftesbury. But the mo-
" ment Shaftesbury was men-
" tioned, the house interrupted
" his discourse. He was brought
" there, not to defame the great
" champion of protestantism,
" but to disclose the particu-
" lars of the plot ; and on his
" solemn protestation that he
" had never any knowledge of
" the plot, he was remanded to
" the tower." Lingard's *Hist.*
of England, vol. VIII. chap. 6.
p. 186.

and then he composed himself in the best way he 1680.
 could to suffer, which he did with a constant and un-
 disturbed mind: he supped and slept well the night His execu-
 before his execution, and died without any shew of tion.
 fear or disorder. He denied all that the witnesses
 had sworn against him. And this was the end of the
 plot^x. I was very unjustly censured on both hands.
 The earl of Shaftsbury railed so at me, that I went
 no more near him. And the duke was made believe
 that I had persuaded lord Stafford to charge him,
 and to discover all he knew against him: which was
 the beginning of the implacable hatred he shewed
 on many occasions against me. Thus the inno-
 centest and best meant parts of a man's life may be
 misunderstood and highly censured.

The house of commons had another business before 1681.
 them in this session: there was a severe act passed Motions in
 in the end of queen Elizabeth's reign, when she the favour
 was highly provoked with the seditious behaviour of of the non-
 the Puritans, by which those who did not conform to conformists.
 the church were required to abjure the kingdom un-
 der the pain of death: and for some degrees of non-
 conformity they were adjudged to die, without the
 favour of banishment. Both houses passed a bill for
 repealing this act: it went indeed heavily in the
 house of lords; for many of the bishops, though they
 were not for putting that law in execution, which

^x ("My lord Danby's tryal gave
 " the five catholick lords in the
 " tower more time to prepare,
 " and their innocency to appear;
 " whereby none but my lord
 " Stafford, to whom they gave
 " no respite, felt the weight of
 " that merciless and bloody
 " faction." Life of King James
 II. published from the Stuart
 Papers, vol. I. p. 543.)

1681. had never been done but in one single instance^y,

495 yet they thought the terror of it was of some use, and that the repealing it might make the party more insolent. On the day of the prorogation the bill ought to have been offered to the king, but the clerk of the crown, by the king's particular order, withdrew the bill. The king had no mind openly to deny it : but he had less mind to pass it. So this indiscreet method was taken, which was a high offence in the clerk of the crown. There was a bill of comprehension offered by the episcopal party in the house of commons, by which the presbyterians would have been taken into the church. But to the amazement of all people, their party in the house did not seem concerned to promote it : on the contrary, they neglected it. This increased the jealousy, as if they had hoped they were so near the carrying all before them, that they despised a comprehension : there was no great progress made in this bill. But in the morning before they were prorogued two votes were carried in the house, of a very extraordinary nature : the one was, that the laws made against recusants ought not to be executed against any but those of the church of Rome. That was indeed the primary intention of the law : yet all persons who came not to church, and did not receive the sacrament once a year, were within the letter of the law. The other vote was, that it was the opinion of that house, that the laws against dissenters ought not to be executed. This was thought a great invasion of the legislature, when one house pretended to suspend the execution of laws : which was to act

^y (That of Penry.)

like dictators in the state; for they meant that courts and juries should govern themselves by the opinion that they now gave^z: which, instead of being a kindness to the nonconformists, raised a new storm against them over all the nation. When the king saw no hope of prevailing with the commons on any other terms, but his granting the exclusion, he resolved to prorogue the parliament. And it was dissolved in a few days after, in January eighty one. 1681.

The king resolved to try a parliament once more: but apprehending that they were encouraged, if not inflamed by the city of London, he summoned the next parliament to meet at Oxford. It was said, men were now very bold about London, by their confidence in the juries that the sheriffs took care to return. Several printers were indicted for scandalous libels that they had printed: but the grand juries returned an *ignoramus* upon the bills against them, on this pretence, that the law only condemned the printing such libels maliciously and seditiously, and that it did not appear that the printers had any ill intentions in what they did; whereas, if it was found that they printed such libels, the construction of law made that to be malicious and seditious. The elections over England for the new parliament went generally for the same persons that had served in the former parliament: and in many places it was

^z (To this it was answered by the defenders of these votes, that they were not intended to restrain judges and juries, but to deter prosecutors by the consideration, that so wise and great a body as the house of commons had pointed out the

pernicious effects of such measures. Still the less exceptionable method would have been for the friends of the dissenters to have brought in a bill to repeal the acts prohibiting the exercise of their religion.)

1681. given as an instruction to the members to stick to the bill of exclusion.

A new expedient of a prince regent.

The king was now very uneasy: he saw he was despised all Europe over, as a prince that had neither treasure nor power: so one attempt more was to be made, which was to be managed chiefly by Littleton, who was now brought into the commission of the admiralty. I had once, in a long discourse with him, argued against the expedients, because they did really reduce us to the state of a commonwealth. I thought a much better way was, that there should be a protector declared, with whom the regal power should be lodged; and that the prince of Orange should be the person^a. He approved the notion: but thought that the title protector was odious, since Cromwell had assumed it, and that therefore regent would be better: we dressed up a scheme of this for near two hours: and I dreamt no more of it. But some days after, he told me the notion took with some, and that both lord Halifax and Seymour liked it: but he wondered to find lord Sunderland did not go into it. He told me after the parliament was dissolved, but in great secrecy, that the king himself liked it. Lord Nottingham talked in a general and odd strain about it. He gave it out, that the king was resolved to offer one expedient, which was beyond any thing that the parliament could have the confidence to ask. Littleton pressed me to do what I could to promote it; and said, that as I was the first that had suggested it, so I should have the honour of it, if it proved so successful as to procure the quieting of the nation. I argued upon it with Jones:

^a (This plan is noticed in the abovementioned Life of King James II. vol. I. p. 658.)

but I found they had laid it down for a maxim, to 1681.
 hearken to nothing but the exclusion. All the duke
 of Monmouth's party looked on this as that which
 must put an end to all his hopes. Others thought, in
 point of honour, they must go on as they had done
 hitherto: Jones stood upon a point of law, of the
 unseparableness of the prerogative from the person
 of the king^b. He said an infant or a lunatic was in
 a real incapacity of struggling with his guardians:
 but that if it was not so, the law that constituted 497
 their guardians would be of no force. He said, if
 the duke came to be king, the prerogative would by
 that vest in him; and the prince regent and he must
 either strike up a bargain, or it must end in a civil
 war, in which he believed the force of law would
 give the king the better of it. It was not to be de-
 nied but that there was some danger in this: but in
 the ill circumstances in which we were, no remedies
 could be proposed that were without great inconve-
 niences, and that were not liable to much danger^c.

^b A lawyer's way of arguing, very weak. S.

^c So much, that I am persuaded, from having read the debates upon this matter, at the different times it was agitated in the house of commons, either scheme would have been impracticable, or have produced a civil war: the condition of this country was undoubtedly very deplorable; but things were not yet brought to a crisis, to engage the body of the nation in such a change of government. The reverence for the old constitution would have withstood all the attempts to put the expedients into execution. And

if the duke of York should have had a son at any time afterwards, as it was allowed he would have been king immediately, how could the exclusion of the father have been supported? Who would have done it? And then all things would have run back into the regular succession, and in the confusion or heat of that, the crown would have become arbitrary. If a civil war had happened, it is very probable the case had been the same, whichever side had prevailed; nothing but the particular circumstances of the revolution, and the wise provisions made upon it for

1681. In the mean while both sides were taking all the pains they could to fortify their party: and it was very visible, that the side which was for the exclusion was like to be the strongest.

Fitzharris
was taken.

A few days before the king went to Oxford, Fitzharris, an Irish papist, was taken up for framing a malicious and treasonable libel against the king and his whole family. He had met with one Everard, who pretended to make discoveries, and, as was thought, had mixed a great deal of falsehood with some truth: but he held himself in general terms, and did not descend to so many particulars as the witnesses had done. Fitzharris and he had been acquainted in France: so on that confidence he shewed him his libel: and he made an appointment to come to Everard's chamber, who thought he intended to trepan him, and so had placed witnesses to overhear all that passed. Fitzharris left the libel with him, all writ in his own hand: Everard went with the paper and with his witnesses, and informed against Fitzharris, who upon that was committed. But seeing the proof against him was like to be full, he said, the libel was drawn by Everard, and only copied by himself: but he had no sort of proof to support this. Cornish the sheriff going to see him, he desired he would bring him a justice of peace; for he could make a great discovery of the plot, far beyond all that was yet known. Cornish, in the simplicity of his heart, went and acquainted the king with this; for which he was much blamed; for it was said, by this means that discovery might have

establishing the new government, could have brought on or maintained the change, and the last has been almost miraculous. God grant it a continuance! O.

been stopped: but his going first with it to the court proved afterwards a great happiness both to himself and to many others. The secretaries and some privy counsellors were upon that sent to examine Fitzharris; to whom he gave a long relation of a practice to kill the king, in which the duke was concerned, with many other particulars which need not be mentioned; for it was all a fiction. The secretaries came to him a second time, to examine him farther: he boldly stood to all he had said: and he desired that some justices of the city might be brought to him. So Clayton and Treby went to him: and he made the same pretended discovery to them over again; and insinuated, that he was glad it was now in safe hands that would not stifle it. The king was highly offended with this, since it plainly shewed a distrust of his ministers: and so Fitzharris was removed to the tower; which the court resolved to make the prison for all offenders, till there should be sheriffs chosen more at the king's devotion. Yet the deposition made to Clayton and Treby was in all points the same that he had made to the secretaries: so that there was no colour for the pretence afterward put on this, as if they had practised on him.

The parliament met at Oxford in March: the king opened it with severe reflections on the proceedings of the former parliament. He said, he was resolved to maintain the succession of the crown in the right line: but for quieting his people's fears he was willing to put the administration of the government into protestants' hands. This was explained by Ernley and Littleton to be meant of a prince regent, with whom the regal prerogative should be

1681.

The parliament of Oxford was soon dissolved.

1681. lodged during the duke's life. Jones and Littleton managed the debate on the grounds formerly mentioned: but in the end the proposition was rejected; and they resolved to go again to the bill of exclusion, to the great joy of the duke's party, who declared themselves more against this than against the exclusion itself. The commons resolved likewise to take the management of Fitzharris's affair out of the hands of the court^d: so they carried to the lords' bar an impeachment against him, which was rejected by the lords upon a pretence with which lord Nottingham furnished them. It was this^e: Edward the third had got some commoners to be condemned by the lords: of which when the house of commons complained, an order was made, that no such thing should be done for the future. Now that related only to proceedings at the king's suit: but it could not be meant, that an impeachment from the commons did not lie against a commoner. Judges, secretaries of state, and the lord keeper were often commoners: so if this was good law, here was a certain method offered to the court, to be troubled no more with impeachments, by employing only commoners. In short, the peers saw the design of this impeachment, and were resolved not to receive it: and so made use of this colour to reject it. Upon that the commons passed a vote,
499 that justice was denied them by the lords: and they also voted, that all those who concurred in any sort in trying Fitzharris in any other court, were betrayers of the liberties of their country. By these

^d See the Journal of the Lords as to this matter; and the State Trials for that of Fitzharris. O.

^e See the Journal of the Lords, 26. 27. 29th of June, 2d of July, 1689. O.

steps which they had already made, the king saw 1681.
 what might be expected from them: so very suddenly, and not very decently, he came to the house of lords, the crown being carried between his feet in a sedan^f: and he put on his robes in haste, without any previous notice, and called up the commons, and dissolved the parliament; and went with such haste to Windsor, that it looked as if he was afraid of the crowds that this meeting had brought to Oxford^g.

Immediately upon this the court took a new ply; and things went in another channel: of which I go A great change in affairs.
 next to give as impartial an account as I have hitherto given of the plot, and of all that related to it. At this time the distinguishing names of *whig* and *tory* came to be the denominations of the parties. I have given a full account of all errors during this time with the more exactness, to warn posterity from falling into the like excesses, and to make it appear how mad and fatal a thing it is to run violently into a torrent, and in a heat to do those things which may give a general disgust, and to set precedents to others, when times turn, to justify their excesses, by saying they do only follow the steps of those who went before them. The shedding so much blood upon such doubtful evidence

^f ("The truth of the matter was, that the crown was put in the bag with the robes, and sent privately before, to prevent any suspicion of the dissolution." *Higgon's Remarks*, p. 223. Compare North's *Examen*, p. 105. where a similar account is given.)

^g I have been told by several

of the whigs themselves, that the meeting had more the air of a Polish diet than an English parliament, and that Shaftsbury and his party made their public entry with great numbers of horsemen, as well armed as the guards. D. (Compare Ralph's *History of England*, vol. I. p. 467.)

1681. was like to have proved fatal to him who drove all these things on with the greatest fury : I mean the earl of Shaftsbury himself. And the strange change that appeared over the nation with relation to the duke, from such an eager prosecution of the exclusion to an indecent courting and magnifying him, not without a visible coldness towards the king in comparison of him, shewed how little men could build on popular heats, which have their ebbings and flowings, and their hot and cold fits, almost as certainly as seas or fevers have. When such changes happen, those who have been as to the main with the side that is run down, will be charged with all the errors of their side, how much soever they may have opposed them. I who had been always in distrust of the witnesses, and dissatisfied with the whole method of proceedings, yet came to be fallen on, not only in pamphlets and poems, but even in sermons, as if I had been an incendiary, and a main stickler against the court, and in particular against the duke. So upon this I went into a closer
500 retirement : and to keep my mind from running after news and affairs, I set my self to the study of philosophy and algebra. I diverted my self with many processes in chemistry : and I hope I went into the best exercises, from which I had been much diverted by the bustling of a great town in so hot a time. I had been much trusted by both sides : and that is a very dangerous state ; for a man may come upon that to be hated and suspected by both. I withdrew much from all conversation : only I lived still in a particular confidence with the lords Essex and Russel.

The king's
declaration.

The king set out a declaration for satisfying his

people. He reckoned up in it all the hard things that had been done by the three last parliaments; and set out their undutiful behaviour to himself in many instances: yet in conclusion he assured his good subjects, that nothing should ever alter his affection to the protestant religion as established by law, nor his love to parliaments: for he would have still frequent parliaments. When this passed in council, the archbishop of Canterbury moved, that an order should be added to it, requiring the clergy to publish it in all the churches of England: this was looked on as a most pernicious precedent, by which the clergy were made the heralds to publish the king's declarations, which in some instances might come to be not only indecent but mischievous. An answer was writ to the king's declaration with great spirit and true judgment. It was at first penned by Sidney^h. But a new draught was made by Somers, and corrected by Jones. The spirit of that side was now spent: so that this, though the best writ paper in all that time, yet had no great effect. The declaration raised over England a humour of making addresses to the king, as it were in answer to it. The grand juries and the bench of justices in the counties, the cities and boroughs, the franchises and corporations, many manors, the companies in towns, and at last the very apprentices, sent up addresses. Of these some were more modestly penned, and only expressed their joy at the assurances they saw in the king's declaration; and concluded, that they upon that dedicated their lives and fortunes to his service. But the greater number, and the most acceptable, were those who de-

1681.

Addresses
to the king
from all
parts of
England.

^h Algernoon Sidney. O.

1681. clared they would adhere to the unalterable succes-
— sion of the crown in the lineal and legal descent,
and condemned the bill of exclusion. Others went
higher, and arraigned the late parliaments as guilty
of sedition and treason. Some reflected severely on
501 the nonconformists; and thanked the king for his
not repealing that act of the thirty-fifth of queen
Elizabeth, which they prayed might be put in exe-
cution. Some of the addresses were very high pa-
negyrics, in which the king's person and govern-
ment were much magnified. Many of those who
brought these up were knighted upon it: and all
were well treated at court. Many zealous healths
were drunk among them: and in their cups the old
valour and the swaggerings of the cavaliers seemed
to be revived. The ministers saw through this, and
that it was an empty noise and a false shew. But
it was thought necessary then to encourage it.
Though lord Halifax could not restrain himself
from shewing his contempt of it, in a saying that
was much repeated: he said, the petitioners for a
parliament spit in the king's face, but the ad-
dressers spit in his mouth. As the country sent up
addresses, so the town sent down pamphlets of all
sorts, to possess the nation much against the late
parliament: and the clergy struck up to a higher
note, with such zeal for the duke's succession, as if
a popish king had been a special blessing from hea-
ven, to be much longed for by a protestant church.
They likewise gave themselves such a loose against
nonconformists, as if nothing was so formidable as
that party: so that in all their sermons popery was
quite forgot, and the force of their zeal was turned
almost wholly against the dissenters; who were now

by order from the court to be proceeded against according to law. There was also a great change made in the commissions all England over: none were left either on the bench or in the militia, that did not with zeal go into the humour of the court. And such of the clergy as would not engage in that fury were cried out upon as the betrayers of the church, and as secret favourers of the dissenters. The truth is, the numbers of these were not great: one observed right, that according to the proverb in the gospel, *where the carcase is, the eagles will be gathered together*: the scent of preferment will draw aspiring men after it.

Fitzharris's trial came on in Easter term: Scroggs was turned out, and Pemberton was made chief justice. His rise was so particular, that it is worth the being remembered: in his youth he mixed with such lewd company, that he quickly spent all he had; and ran so deep in debt, that he was cast into a gaol, where he lay many years: but he followed his studies so close in the gaol, that he became one of the ablest men of his profession. He was not wholly for the court: he had been a judge before, and was turned out by Scroggs's means: and now 502 he was raised again, and was afterwards made chief justice of the other bench: but not being compliant enough, he was turned out a second time, when the court would be served by none but by men of a thoroughpaced obsequiousness. Fitzharris pleaded the impeachment in parliament: but since the lords had thrown that out, it was overruled. He pretended he could discover the secret of Godfrey's murder: he said, he heard the earl of Danby say at Windsor, that it must be done: but when the judge

Fitzharris's
trial.

1681. told the grand jury, that what was said at Windsor did not lie before them, Fitzharris immediately said, he had heard him say the same thing at Whitehall. This was very gross: yet upon so slight an evidence they found the bill against the lord Danby. And when they were reproached with it, they said a dubious evidence was a sufficient ground for a grand jury: yet another doctrine was set up by the same sort of men within a few months.

Plunket, an
Irish bi-
shop, con-
demned and
executed.

Plunket, the popish primate of Armagh, was at this time brought to his trial. Some lewd Irish priests, and others of that nation, hearing that England was at that time disposed to hearken to good swearers, thought themselves well qualified for the employment: so they came over to swear, that there was a great plot in Ireland, to bring over a French army, and to massacre all the English. The witnesses were brutal and profligate men: yet the earl of Shaftsbury cherished them much: they were examined by the parliament at Westminster: and what they said was believed. Upon that encouragement, it was reckoned that we should have witnesses come over in whole companies. Lord Essex told me, that this Plunket was a wise and sober man, who was always in a different interest from the two Talbotsⁱ; the one of these being the titular archbishop of Dublin, and the other raised afterwards to be duke of Tirconnell. These were meddling and factious men; whereas Plunket was for their living quietly, and in due submission to the government, without engaging into intrigues of state. Some of these priests had been censured by him for their lewdness: and they drew others to swear as they di-

ⁱ (They were brothers.)

rected them. They had appeared the winter before 1681.
 upon a bill offered to the grand jury: but as the
 foreman of the jury, who was a zealous protestant,
 told me, they contradicted one another so evidently,
 that they would not find the bill. But now they
 laid their story better together; and swore against
 Plunket, that he had got a great bank of money to
 be prepared, and that he had an army listed, and 503
 was in a correspondence with France to bring over
 a fleet from thence. He had nothing to say in his
 own defence, but to deny all: so he was condemned;
 and suffered very decently, expressing himself in
 many particulars as became a bishop. He died de-
 nyng every thing that had been sworn against
 him ^k.

Fitzharris was tried next: and the proof was so
 full, that he was cast. He moved in court that I
 might be ordered to come to him, upon what reason
 I could never imagine: a rule was made that I
 might speak to him in the presence of the lieutenant
 of the tower. I went to him, and pressed him ve-
 hemently to tell the truth, and not to deceive him-
 self with false hopes. I charged him with the im-
 probabilities of his discovery; and laid home to him
 the sin of perjury, chiefly in matters of blood, so
 fully, that the lieutenant of the tower made a very
 just report of it to the king, as the king himself told
 me afterwards. When he saw there was no hope,

^k (When the earl of Essex, who had been lord lieutenant of Ireland, solicited his pardon, declaring from his own knowledge that the charge against him could not be true, the king indignantly replied, “ Then, “ my lord, be his blood on “ your own conscience. You “ might have saved him, if you “ would. I cannot pardon him, “ because I dare not.” Lingard’s History of England, vol. VIII. c. 7. p. 216.)

1681. he said the lord Howard was the author of the libel.
Howard was so ill thought of, that, it being known that there was a familiarity between Fitzharris and him, it was apprehended from the beginning that he was concerned in it. I had seen him in lord Howard's company, and had told him how indecent it was to have such a man about him: he said he was in want, and was as honest as his religion would suffer him to be. I found out afterwards, that he was a spy of the lady Portsmouth's: and that he had carried lord Howard to her: and, as lord Howard himself told me, she brought the king to talk with him twice or thrice. The king, as he said, entered into a particular scheme with him of the new frame of his ministry in case of an agreement, which seemed to him to be very near. As soon as I saw the libel, I was satisfied that lord Howard was not concerned in it: it was so ill drawn, and so little disguised in the treasonable part, that none but a man of the lowest form could be capable of making it. The report of lord Howard's being charged with this was over the whole town a day before any warrant was sent out against him; which made it appear, that the court had a mind to give him time to go out of the way. He came to me, and solemnly vowed he was not at all concerned in that matter: so I advised him not to stir from home. He was committed that night: I had no liking to the man's temper: yet he insinuated himself so into me, that without being rude to him, it was not possible to
504 avoid him. He was a man of a pleasant conversation: but he railed so indecently both at the king and the clergy, that I was very uneasy in his company: yet now, during his imprisonment, I did him

all the service I could. But Algernoon Sidney took 1681.
 his concerns and his family so to heart, and managed every thing relating to him with that zeal and that care, that none but a monster of ingratitude could have made him the return that he did afterwards. When the bill against lord Howard was brought to the grand jury, Fitzharris's wife and maid were the two witnesses against him: but they did so evidently forswear themselves, that the attorney general withdrew it. Lord Howard lay in the tower till the Michaelmas term; and came out by the habeas corpus. I went no more to Fitzharris: but Hawkins, the minister of the tower, took him into his management; and prevailed with him not only to deny all his former discovery, but to lay it on Clayton, Treby, and the sheriffs, as a subornation of theirs, though it was evident that was impossible to be true. Yet at the same time he writ letters to his wife, who was not then admitted to him, which I saw and read, in which he told her, how he was practised upon with the hopes of life. He charged her to swear falsely against none: one of these was writ that very morning in which he suffered: and yet before he was led out, he signed a new paper containing the former charge of subornation, and put it in Hawkins's hands. And at Tyburn he referred all he had to say to that paper, which was immediately published: but the falsehood of it was so very notorious, that it shewed what a sort of man Hawkins was: yet he was soon after rewarded for this with the deanery of Chichester¹.

Practices
upon Fitz-
harris at
his death.

¹ (He was not made dean of Chichester before the year 1688, and was probably the person of that name who had been suspended by king James's commissioners for refusing to

1681. But when the court heard what letters Fitzharris had writ to his wife, they were confounded: and all further discourse about him was stifled. But the court practised on her by the promise of a pension so far, that she delivered up her husband's letters to them. But so many had seen them before that, that this base practice turned much to the reproach of all their proceedings^m.

A Protestant plot.

Soon after this, Dugdale, Turbervill, Smith, and the Irish witnesses came under another management; and they discovered a plot laid against the king to be executed at Oxford. The king was to be killed, and the government was to be changed. One Colledge, a joiner by trade, was an active and hot man, and came to be known by the name of the Protestant joiner. He was first seized on: and the

read the declaration for liberty of conscience, whilst the prosecution of the bishops was carrying on. Dean Hawkins married the worthy Isaac Walton's daughter, and was father of the author of the Pleas of the Crown, and grandfather of Dr. William Hawkins, professor of poetry in Oxford.)

^m She was recommended for some provision to king William by the house of commons. See their Journal of 15th of June, 1689, where there is a report of her case by a committee. O. (See Echard's account of Fitzharris's behaviour when he suffered, pp. 1010, 1011. of his History of England. Higgons observes, that "if the court " through the influence of Dr. " Hawkins had prevailed on " Fitzharris to accuse the she-

" riffs falsely of subornation, " they must at least have " tempted him with a promise " of life; afterwards, when " they broke their word, and " he came to die, if it were " only in revenge, he would " certainly have told the truth, " and discovered the knavery."

Remarks on this Hist. p. 230. But compare Hume's History of England, Charles II. p. 157, 8vo. edition, where it is suggested that Fitzharris hoped some favour might be shewn to his family, his wife being connected with the favourite maid of the duchess of Portsmouth. And indeed no reliance is to be placed on the testimony of such a notorious rogue either living or dying. See also Ralph's Hist. of England, vol. I. p. 604.)

witnesses swore many treasonable speeches against him: he was believed to have spoken oft with great indecency of the king, and with a sort of threatening, that they would make him pass the bill of exclusion. But a design to seize on the king was so notorious a falsehood, that, notwithstanding all that the witnesses swore, the grand jury returned *ignoramus* upon the bill. Upon this the court cried out against the juries now returned, that they would not do the king justice, though the matter of the bill was sworn by witnesses whose testimony was well believed a few months before: it was commonly said, these juries would believe every thing one way, and nothing the other. If they had found the bill, so that Colledge had been tried upon it, he would have been certainly saved: but since the witnesses swore that he went to Oxford on that design, he was triable there. North went to Oxford, Colledge being carried thither: and he tried him there. North's behaviour in that whole matter was such, that probably, if he had lived to see an impeaching parliament, he might have felt the ill effects of itⁿ. The witnesses swore several treasonable words against Colledge, and that his coming to Oxford was in order to the executing these: so here was an over-act. Colledge was upon a negative: so he had nothing to say for himself, but to shew how little credit was due to the witnesses. He was condemned, and suffered with great constancy, and with appearances of devotion. He denied all the treasonable matter that had been sworn against him, or that he knew of any plot against the king. He confessed, that a great heat of temper had carried

1681.

505

Colledge
condemned,
and died
upon it.

ⁿ (Compare Ralph's History of England, vol. I. p. 632.)

1681. him to many undutiful expressions of the king : but
 ——— he protested he was in no design against him. And
 now the court intended to set the witnesses to swear
 against all the hot party; which was plainly murder
 in them, who believed them false witnesses, and yet
 made use of them to destroy others. One passage
 happened at Colledge's trial which quite sunk Dug-
 dale's credit : it was objected to him by Colledge, to
 take away his credit, that, when by his lewdness he
 had got the French pox, he to cover that gave it
 out that he was poisoned by papists : upon which
 he, being then in court, protested solemnly that he
 never had that disease ; and said, that if it could be
 proved by any physician that he ever had it, he was
 content that all the evidence he had ever given
 should be discredited for ever. And he was taken
 at his word : for Lower, who was then the most
 celebrated physician in London, proved at the coun-
 cil-board that he had been under cure in his hands
 for that disease ; which was made out both by his
 506 bills, and by the apothecary that served them. So
 he was never more heard of.

Shaftsbury
 sent to the
 tower.

The earl of Shaftsbury was committed next, and
 sent to the tower upon the evidence of the Irish
 witnesses. His papers were at the same time seized
 on and searched : nothing material was found among
 them, but a draught of an association, by which the
 king, if it had taken place, would have reigned only
 at the discretion of the party. This was neither
 writ nor marked in any place with his hand : but,
 when there was a talk of an association, some had
 formed this paper, and brought it to him ; of which
 he always professed, after the matter was over, that
 he remembered nothing at all. So it is probable,

that, as is ordinary when any great business is before the parliament, that zealous men are at the doors with their several draughts, this was one of these cast carelessly by, and not thought on by him when he had sent his more valuable papers out of the way. There was likewise but one witness that could swear to its being found there: and that was the clerk of the council, who had perused those papers without marking them in the presence of any witness, as taken among lord Shaftsbury's papers. 1681.

There was all this summer strange practising with witnesses to find more matter against him: Wilkin-^{Practices upon witnesses.}son, a prisoner for debt that had been often with him, was dealt with to accuse him. The court had found out two solicitors to manage such matters, Burton and Graham, who were indeed fitter men to have served in a court of inquisition than in a legal government. It was known, that lord Shaftsbury was apt to talk very freely, and without discretion: so the two solicitors sought out all that had frequented his company; and tried what they could draw from them, not by a barefaced subornation, but by telling them, they knew well that lord Shaftsbury had talked such and such things, which they named, that were plainly treasonable; and they required them to attest it, if they did ever hear such things from him: and they made them great promises upon their telling the truth. So that they gave hints and made promises to such as by swearing boldly would deserve them, and yet kept themselves out of danger of subornation, having witnesses in some corner of their chambers that overheard all their discourse. This was their common practice, of which I had a particular account from some whom they examined

1681. with relation to my self. In all this foul dealing the
 507 king himself was believed to be the chief director:
 and lord Halifax was thought deep in it, though he
 always expressed an abhorrence of such practices
 to me.

I was then
 offered pre-
 ferment.

His resentments wrought so violently on him,
 that he seemed to be gone off from all his former
 notions. He pressed me vehemently to accept of
 preferment at court; and said, if I would give him
 leave to make promises in my name, he could obtain
 for me any preferment I pleased. But I would enter
 into no engagements. I was contented with the
 condition I was in, which was above necessity,
 though below envy: the mastership of the temple
 was like to fall, and I liked that better than any
 thing else. So both lord Halifax and lord Clarendon
 moved the king in it. He promised I should have
 it. Upon which lord Halifax carried me to the
 king. I had reason to believe that he was highly
 displeased with me for what I had done a year be-
 fore. Mrs. Roberts, whom he had kept for some
 time, sent for me when she was a dying: I saw her
 often for some weeks, and among other things I de-
 sired her to write a letter to the king, expressing
 the sense she had of her past life: and at her de-
 sire I drew such a letter, as might be fit for her to
 write: but she never had strength enough to write
 it: so upon that I resolved to write a very plain let-
 ter to the king: I set before him his past life, and
 the effects it had on the nation, with the judgments
 of God that lay on him, which was but a small part
 of the punishment that he might look for: I pressed
 him upon that earnestly to change the whole course
 of his life: I carried this letter to Chiffinch's on the

twenty-ninth of January; and told the king in the letter, that I hoped the reflections on what had be-
 fallen his father on the thirtieth of January, might
 move him to consider these things more carefully °. 1681.
 Lord Arran happened to be then in waiting: and
 he came to me next day, and told me, he was sure
 the king had a long letter from me; for he held the
 candle to him while he read it: he knew at all that
 distance that it was my hand: the king read it
 twice over, and then threw it into the fire: and not
 long after lord Arran took occasion to name me:
 and the king spoke of me with great sharpness: so
 he perceived that he was not pleased with my letter.
 Nor was the king pleased with my being sent for by
 Wilmot earl of Rochester, when he died: he fan-
 cied, that he had told me many things, of which I
 might make an ill use: yet he had read the book
 that I writ concerning him, and spoke well of it.
 In this state I was in the king's thoughts, when lord
 Halifax carried me to him, and introduced me with
 a very extraordinary compliment, that he did not
 bring me to the king to put me in his good opinion,
 so much as to put the king in my good opinion:
 and added, he hoped that the king would not only
 take me into his favour, but into his heart. The
 king had a peculiar faculty of saying obliging things
 with a very good grace: among other things he
 said, he knew that, if I pleased, I could serve him
 very considerably; and that he desired no service
 from me longer than he continued true to the church
 and to the law. Lord Halifax upon that added,

508
 Halifax
 carried me
 to the king.

° (This letter to the king the bishop, affixed to this His-
 was printed by his son, sir tory, p. 686.)
 Thomas Burnet, in his life of

1681. that the king knew he served him on the same terms, and was to make his stops. The king and he fell into some discourse about religion. Lord Halifax said to the king, that he was the head of *his* church : to which the king answered, that he did not desire to be the head of nothing ; for indeed he was of no church. From that the king run out into much discourse about lord Shaftsbury, who was shortly to be tried : he complained with great scorn of the imputation of subornation that was cast on himself. He said, he did not wonder that the earl of Shaftsbury, who was so guilty of those practices, should fasten them on others. [And he used upon that a Scots proverb very pleasantly, “ At dooms-day we shall see whose a— is blackest.”] The discourse lasted half an hour very hearty and free : so I was in favour again. But I could not hold it. I was told I kept ill company : the persons lord Halifax named to me were the earl of Essex, lord Russel, and Jones. But I said, I would upon no consideration give over conversing with my friends : so I was where I was before.

Shaftsbury
was acquitted
by the
grand jury.

A bill of indictment was presented to the grand jury against lord Shaftsbury. The jury was composed of many of the chief citizens of London. The witnesses were examined in open court, contrary to the usual custom : the witnesses swore many incredible things against him, mixed with other things that looked very like his extravagant way of talking. The draught of the association was also brought as a proof of his treason, though it was not laid in the indictment, and was proved only by one witness. The jury returned *ignoramus* upon the bill. Upon this the court did declaim with open mouth against

these juries; in which, they said, the spirit of the party did appear, since men even upon oath shewed they were resolved to find bills (true) or *ignoramus*, as they pleased, without regarding the evidence. And upon this a new set of addresses went round the kingdom, in which they expressed their abhor-
 509
 rence of that association found in lord Shaftsbury's cabinet^P; and complained, that justice was denied the king; which were set off with all the fulsome rhetoric that the penners could varnish them with. [These were generally believed to be penned by the clergy: among whom the duke's health was always drunk with repeated shouts and huzzas: to which another health, "To the confusion of all his enemies," was commonly added.] It was upon this occasion said, that the grand jury ought to find bills even upon dubious evidence, much more when plain treason was sworn; since all they did in finding a bill was only to bring the person to his trial, and then the falsehood of the witnesses was to be detected. But in defence of these *ignoramus* juries it was said, that by the express words of their oath they were bound to make true presentments of what should appear true to them: and therefore, if they did not believe the evidence, they could not find a bill, though sworn to. A book was writ to support that, in which both law and reason were brought to confirm it: it passed as writ by lord Essex, though

1681.

^P (See an account of this association for the purpose of excluding the duke of York from the succession to the crown, and of another paper purporting to be a list of the most considerable individuals in every shire, divided under two heads into 'worthy men' and 'men worthy,' interpreted to mean, worthy of trust, and worthy to be hanged, in Lingard's History of England, vol. VIII. ch. 7. p. 221.)

1681. I understood afterwards it was writ by Somers^q,
 ——— who was much esteemed and often visited by lord
 Essex, and who trusted himself to him, and writ
 the best papers that came out in that time. It is
 true, by the practice that had generally prevailed,
 grand juries were easy in finding bills upon a slight
 and probable evidence. But it was made out, that
 the words of their oath, and the reason of the law,
 seemed to oblige them to make no presentments
 but such as they believed to be true. On the other
 hand, a private ill opinion of a witness, or the look-
 ing on a matter as incredible, did not seem to war-
 rant the return of an *ignoramus*: that seemed to
 belong to the jury of life and death. The chief
 complaint that was made in the addresses was
 grounded on their not finding the bill on the ac-
 count of the draught of the association: and this
 was in many respects very unreasonable. For as
 that was not laid in the bill, so there was but one
 witness to prove it: nor did the matter of the paper
 rise up to the charge of high treason. And now
 Dugdale and Turbervill, who had been the witnesses
 upon whose evidence lord Stafford was condemned,
 being within a year detected, or at least suspected
 of this villany, I could not but reflect on what he
 said to me, that he was confident I should see within
 a year that the witnesses would be found to be
 rogues.

1682. As to Turbervill, what happened soon after this
 Turber- will perhaps mitigate the censure: he was taken
 vill's death. with the small pox in a few days after lord Shaft-
 bury's trial. The symptoms were so bad, that the

^q Lord Somers. S.

physician told him he had no hope of his recovery : 1682.

upon which he composed himself to die as became

a Christian, and sent for Mr. Hewes, the curate of 510

St. Martin's, who was a very worthy man, and from whom I had this account of him. Turbervill looked on himself as a dead man at the first time he came to him : but his disease did no way affect his understanding or his memory. He seemed to have a real sense of another state, and of the account that he was to give to God for his past life. Hewes charged him to examine himself ; and if he had sworn falsely against any man, to confess his sin, and glorify God, though to his own shame. Turbervill, both in discourse, and when he received the sacrament, protested that he had sworn nothing but the truth, in what he deposed both against lord Stafford and the earl of Shaftsbury ; and renounced the mercies of God, and the benefit of the death of Christ, if he did not speak the plain and naked truth without any reservation : and he continued in the same mind to his death. So here were the last words of dying men against the last words of those that suffered. To this may well be added, that one who died of sickness, and under a great depression in his spirits, was less able to stifle his conscience, and resist the impressions that it might then make on him, than a man who suffers on a scaffold, where the strength of the natural spirits is entire, or rather exalted by the sense of the cause he suffers for. And we know that confession and absolution in the church of Rome give a quiet, to which we do not pretend, where these things are said to be only ministerial, and not authoritative^r. About a year be-

^r (Compare what is said before of Turbervill, p. 489. fol. ed.)

1682. fore this, Tonge had died, who first brought out Oates. They quarrelled afterwards: and Tonge came to have a very bad opinion of Oates; upon what reason I know not^s. He died with expressions of a very high devotion: and he protested to all who came to see him, that he knew of no subornation in all that matter, and that he was guilty of none himself. These things put a man quite in the dark: and in this mist matters must be left till the great revelation of all secrets. And there I leave it: and from the affairs of England turn to give an account of what passed in Scotland during this disorder among us here.

The affairs
of Scotland.

The duke behaved himself upon his first going to Scotland in so obliging a manner, that the nobility and gentry, who had been so long trodden on by duke Lauderdale and his party, found a very sensible change: so that he gained much on them all. He continued still to support that side: yet things
511 were so gently carried, that there was no cause of complaint. It was visibly his interest to make that nation sure to him, and to give them such an essay of his government, as might dissipate all the hard thoughts of him with which the world was possessed: and he pursued this for some time with great temper and as great success. He advised the bishops to proceed moderately, and to take no notice of conventicles in houses; and that would put an end to those in the fields. In matters of justice he shewed an impartial temper, and encouraged all propositions

^s (Higgon's transcribes an account from Echard of a quarrel between Tonge and Oates, at which Dr. Burnet is supposed to have been present. Remarks, p. 231. This curious and not improbable anecdote is to be found in Echard's Hist. p. 949.)

relating to trade: and so, considering how much that nation was set against his religion, he made a greater progress in gaining upon them than was expected^t. He was advised to hold a parliament there in summer eighty-one, and to take the character of the king's commissioner upon himself. 1682.

A strange spirit of fury had broke loose on some of the presbyterians, called Cargillites, from one Cargill that had been one of the ministers of Glasgow in the former times, and was then very little considered, but now was much followed, to the great reproach of the nation. These held that the king had lost the right of the crown by his breaking the covenant, which he had sworn at his coronation: so they said, he was their king no more: and by a formal declaration they renounced all allegiance to him, which a party of them affixed to the cross of Dunfreis, a town near the west border. [They also taught, that it was lawful for any to kill him; and that all his party, chiefly those who were episcopal, by adhering to him, had forfeited their lives; so that it was lawful to kill them likewise.] The guards fell upon a party of them, whom they found

^t In a letter (to the first lord Dartmouth) dated the 14th of December, the duke says, "I live here as cautiously as I can, and am very careful to give offence to none, and to have no partialities, and preach to them laying aside all private animosities, and serving the king his own way. None shall have reason to complain of me; and though some of either party here might have hoped I should have shewed my partiality for them, and some of my friends have been of opinion it had been best for me to have done so, and by it have secured one side to me, yet I am convinced it was not fit for me to do it, it being no way good for his majesty's service, which I can make out by many reasons which would be too long for a letter." D.

1682. in arms, where Cameron, one of their furious teachers, (from whom they were also called Cameronians,) was killed: but Hackston, that was one of the archbishop's murderers, and Cargill, were taken. Hackston, when brought before the council, would not own their authority, nor make any answer to their questions. He was so low by reason of his wounds, that it was thought he would die in the question if tortured: so he was in a very summary way condemned to have both his hands cut off, and then to be hanged. All this he suffered with a constancy that amazed all people: he seemed to be all the while as in an enthusiastical rapture, and insensible of what was done to him. When his hands were cut off, he asked, like one unconcerned, if his feet must be cut off likewise: and he had so strong a heart, that notwithstanding all the loss of blood by his wounds, and the cutting off his hands, yet when he was hanged up, and his heart cut out, it continued to palpitate some time after it was on the hangman's knife, as some eye-witnesses assured me^u.

512 Cargill, and many others of that mad sect, both men and women, suffered with an obstinacy that was so particular, that though the duke sent the offer of pardon to them on the scaffold, if they would only say God bless the king, it was refused with great neglect: one of them, a woman, said very calmly,

^u (Compare Ralph's History of England, vol. I. p. 526. where it is related, that having at first refused to answer the questions of the privy council, Hackstone at length gave way, but would not sign his examination. And Cruikshank in his History of the Church of Scotland reports

that the executioner being long in cutting off his right hand, Hackstone desired him to strike in the joint of the left, but adds, that he spake no such words as Burnet represents him to have done. Vol. I. chap. 5. p. 103.)

she was sure God would not bless him, and that 1682.
 therefore she would not take God's name in vain :
 another said more sullenly, that she would not wor-
 ship that idol, nor acknowledge any other king but
 Christ : and so both were hanged. About fifteen or
 sixteen died under this delusion, which seemed to
 be a sort of madness : for they never attempted any
 thing against any person : only they seemed glad to
 suffer for their opinions^x. The duke stopped that
 prosecution, and appointed them to be put in a house
 of correction, and to be kept at hard labour. Great
 use was made of this by profane people to dispa-
 rage the suffering of the martyrs for the Christian
 faith, from the unshaken constancy which these
 frantic people expressed. But this is undeniable,
 that men who die maintaining any opinion, shew
 that they are firmly persuaded of it : so from this
 the martyrs of the first age, who died for asserting a
 matter of fact, such as the resurrection of Christ, or
 the miracles that they had seen, shewed that they
 were well persuaded of the truth of those facts.
 And that is all the use that is to be made of this
 argument.

Now the time of the sitting of the parliament A parlia-
ment in
Scotland.
 drew on. The duke seeing how great a man the
 earl of Argyle was in Scotland, concluded it was ne-
 cessary for him either to gain him or to ruin him.
 Lord Argyle gave him all possible assurances that
 he would adhere to his interest in every thing, ex-

^x (Salmon, in his Examination of this History, p. 896, observes, that the author had told us, that this harmless sort of people had assembled in arms, publicly renounced their allegiance to the king, and that one of them was a murderer of the archbishop of St. Andrew's. But this examiner is silent respecting the systematic persecution, by which these people were goaded on to rebellion.)

1682.

cept in the matters of religion: but added, that if he went to meddle with these, he owned to him freely that he would oppose him all he could. This was well enough taken in shew: but lord Argyle said, he observed ever after that such a visible coldness and distrust, that he saw what he might expect from him. Some moved the excepting against the duke's commission to represent the king in parliament, since by law no man could execute any office without taking the oaths: and above forty members of parliament promised to stick to duke Hamilton if he would insist on that. But Lockhart and Cunningham, the two lawyers on whose opinion they depended chiefly, said, that a commission to represent the king's person fell not under the notion of an office: and since it was not expressly named in the acts of parliament, they thought it did not fall within the general words of *all places and offices of*
513 *trust*. So this was laid aside: and many who were offended at it complained of duke Hamilton's cowardice^y. He said for himself, he had been in a storm of seven years' continuance by his opposing duke Lauderdale, and that he would not engage in a new one with a stronger party, unless he was sure of the majority: and they were far from pretending to be able to bring matters to near an equality. The first act that passed was one of three lines, confirming all the laws formerly made against popery: the duke thought it would give a good grace to all that

^y The duke (of York,) in a letter dated the 28th of Nov. says, "I believe you will have heard of a difficulty made by some here, about my sitting in council. I had not time to write to you of it till now, " and hope before this can come to you that his majesty will have settled it as I desire, and I believe that those that made that difficulty are sorry to have done it." D.

should be done afterwards, to begin with such a general and cold confirmation of all former laws. Some moved, that a committee might be appointed to examine all the former laws, (since some of them seemed unreasonably severe, as passed in the first heat of the reformation,) that so they might draw out of them all such as might be fit, not only to be confirmed, but to be executed by better and properer methods than those prescribed in the former statutes, which had been all eluded. But it was not intended that this new confirmation should have any effect: and therefore this motion was not hearkened to. But the act was hurried on, and passed.

The next act was for the unalterableness of the succession of the crown. It was declared high treason ever to move for any alterations in it. Lord Argyle ran into this with zeal: so did duke Hamilton: and all others that intended to merit by it made harangues about it. Lord Tweeddale was the only man that ventured to move, that the act might be made as strict as was possible with relation to the duke: but he thought it not necessary to carry it further; since the queen of Spain stood so near the succession, and it was no amiable thing to be a province to Spain. Many were so ignorant, as not to understand the relation of the queen of Spain to the king, though she was his niece, and thought it an extravagant motion. He was not seconded: and the act passed without one contradictory vote. There was an additional revenue given for some years for keeping up more troops. Some complaints were also made of the lords of regalities, who have all the forfeitures and the power of life and death within their regalities. It was upon that promised, that there

1682. should be a regulation of these courts, as there was
 — indeed great cause for it, these lords being so many
 tyrants up and down the country: so it was intended
 to subject these jurisdictions to the supreme judica-
 514 tories. But the act was penned in such words, as
 imported that the whole course of justice all over
 the kingdom was made subject to the king's will
 and pleasure: so that instead of appeals to the su-
 preme courts, all was made to end in a personal ap-
 peal to the king: and by this means he was made
 master of the whole justice and property of the king-
 dom. There was not much time given to consider
 things: for the duke, finding that he was master of
 a clear majority, drove on every thing fast, and put
 bills on a very short debate to the vote, which went
 always as he had a mind to it. An accident hap-
 pened, that begot in many a particular zeal to merit
 at his hands: lord Rothes, who had much of his
 confidence, and was chiefly trusted by him, and was
 made a duke by his means, [fell under a perpetual
 coldness in his stomach, which was the effect of
 thirty years' intemperance to a degree beyond what
 had ever been known in that country. He] died the
 day before the opening of the parliament: so upon
 the hopes of succeeding him, as there were many
 pretenders, they tried who could deserve it best by
 the most compliant submission and the most active
 zeal.

Several ac-
 cusations of
 perjury sti-
 fled by the
 duke.

As they were going on in public business, one
 stood up in parliament and accused lord Halton,
 duke Lauderdale's brother, of perjury, on the ac-
 count of Mitchell's business^z: he had in his hands
 the two letters that lord Halton had writ to the earl

^z (See before, p. 412—417. fol. edit.)

of Kincardin, mentioning the promise of life that 1682.
 was made him: and, as was told formerly, lord Hal-
 ton swore at his trial that no promise was made.
 The lord Kincardin was dead a year before this:
 but his lady had delivered those letters to be made
 use of against lord Halton. Upon reading them, the
 matter appeared plain. The duke was not ill pleased
 to have both duke Lauderdale and him thus at
 mercy: yet he would not suffer the matter to be de-
 termined in a parliamentary way: so he moved, that
 the whole thing might be referred to the king;
 which was immediately agreed to. So that infama-
 nous business was made public, and yet stifled at
 the same time: and no censure was ever put on that
 base action^a. Another discovery was made of as
 wicked a conspiracy, though it had not such bad

^a (In p. 416, fol. edit. of this work, where mention is made of Mitchell's unhappy business, it is related, that lord Kincardine sent a bishop to duke Lauderdale, desiring him to consider better, before he denied upon oath the promise of life which had been given to Mitchell, because lord Kincardine had letters from the duke and the duke's brother in his possession, which requested him to ask the king to make good the promise. On which place of bishop Burnet's History the late lord Auchinlech, judge Boswell, who was grandson of the earl of Kincardine, has written the following observation, inserted here by the favour of his lordship's grandson, James Boswell, esq. of the Inner Temple, a gentleman well known by

his own and his father's merits.

“ The bishop who was sent by
 “ my lord Kincardine was Pa-
 “ terson, bishop of Edinburgh,
 “ and those very letters were
 “ the cause of Lauderdale's dis-
 “ grace. For when the duke
 “ of York was in Scotland, he
 “ sent for my lady Kincardine,
 “ and asked these letters of her.
 “ My lady told the duke, she
 “ would not part with the ori-
 “ ginals; but that, if his grace
 “ pleased, he might take a copy
 “ of them. Which he did, and
 “ shewed them to his brother
 “ the king, who was stunned at
 “ the villany, and ashamed he
 “ had employed such a minis-
 “ ter; and immediately order-
 “ ed all his posts and prefer-
 “ ments to be taken from
 “ him.”)

1682. effects, because the tools employed in it could not be wrought up to such a determined pitch of wickedness. The lord Bargeny, who was nephew to duke Hamilton, had been clapt up in prison, as concerned in the rebellion of Bothwell-bridge. Several days were fixed on for his trial : but it was always put off. And at last he was let out without having any one thing ever objected to him. When he was at liberty, he used all possible endeavours to find out on what grounds he had been committed. At last he discovered a conspiracy, in which Halton and some
 515 others of that party were concerned : they had practised on some, who had been in that rebellion, to swear that he and several others were engaged in it, and that they had sent them out to join in it. They promised these witnesses a large share of the confiscated estates, if they went through in the business. Depositions were prepared for them : and they promised to swear them : upon which a day was fixed for their trial. But the hearts of those witnesses failed them, or their consciences rose upon them : so that when the day came on, they could not bring themselves to swear against an innocent man : and plainly refused to do it : yet, upon new practices and new hopes, they again resolved to swear boldly : upon which new days had been set twice or thrice : and, their hearts turning against it, they were still put off. Lord Bargeny had full proofs of all this ready to be offered : but the duke prevailed to have this likewise referred to the king : and it was never more heard of. This shewed what duke Lauderdale's party were capable of. It likewise gave an ill character of the duke's zeal for justice, and against false swearing; though that had been the chief topic

of discourse with him for above three years. He 1682.
 was angry at a supposed practice with witnesses,
 when it fell upon his own party : but now that there
 were evident proofs of perjury and subornation, he
 stopt proceedings under pretence of referring it to
 the king : who was never made acquainted with it,
 or at least never inquired after the proof of these alle-
 gations, nor ordered any proceedings upon them.

The main business of this parliament was the act A test en-
acted in
parliament. concerning the new test that was proposed. It had
 been promised in the beginning of the session, that
 as soon as an act for maintaining the succession
 should pass, they should have all the security that
 they could desire for the protestant religion. So,
 many zealous men began to call for some more ef-
 fectual security for their religion : upon which a test
 was proposed for all that should be capable of any
 office in church or state, or of electing, or being
 elected, members of parliament, that they should ad-
 here firmly to the protestant religion ; to which the
 court party added, the condemning of all resistance
 in any sort, or under any pretence, the renouncing
 the covenant, and an obligation to defend all the
 king's rights and prerogatives, and that they should
 never meet to treat of any matter, civil or ecclesiasti-
 cal, but by the king's permission, and never endea-
 vour any alteration in the government in church or 516
 state ; and they were to swear all this according to
 the literal sense of the words. The test was thus
 loaded at first to make the other side grow weary
 of the motion, and let it fall, which they would
 willingly have done. But the duke was made to
 apprehend, that he would find such a test as this
 prove much for his service : so it seems that article

1682. of the protestant religion was forgiven for the service that was expected from the other parts of the test. There was a hot debate upon the imposing it on all that might elect or be elected members of parliament: it was said, that was the most essential of all the privileges of the subjects, therefore they ought not to be limited in it. The bishops were earnest for this, which they thought would secure them for ever from a presbyterian parliament. It was carried in the vote: and that made many of the court more zealous than ever for carrying through the act^b. Some proposed that there should be two tests: one for papists with higher incapacities: and another for presbyterians with milder censures. But that was rejected with much scorn, some making their court by saying, they were more in danger from the presbyterians than from the papists: and it was reported that Paterson, then bishop of Edinburgh, said to the duke, that he thought the two religions, popish and protestant, were so equally stated in his mind, that a few grains of loyalty, in which the protestants had the better of the papists, turned the balance with him. Another clause in the bill was liable to great objections: all the royal family were excepted out of it. Lord Argyle spoke zealously against this: he said, the only danger we could apprehend as to popery was, if any of the royal family should happen to be perverted: therefore he thought it was better to have no act at all than such a clause in it. Some few seconded him: but it was carried without any considerable opposition. The nicest point of all was, what definition or standard should be made for fixing the sense of so general

^b And it was very reasonable. S.

a term, as the protestant religion. Dalrymple proposed the confession of faith agreed on in the year 1682. one thousand five hundred fifty-nine, and enacted in parliament in one thousand five hundred sixty-seven, which was the only confession of faith that had then the sanction of a law. That was a book so worn out of use, that scarce any one in the whole parliament had ever read it: none of the bishops had, as appeared afterwards. For these last thirty years the only confession of faith that was read in Scotland, 517 was that which the assembly of divines at Westminster, anno 1648, had set out, which the Scottish kirk had set up instead of the old one: and the bishops had left it in possession, though the authority that enacted it was annulled. So here a book was made the matter of an oath, (for they were to swear that they would adhere to the protestant religion, as it was declared in the confession of faith enacted in the year 1567, that contained a large system of religion, that was not so much as known to those who enacted it,) yet the bishops went all into it. Dalrymple, who had read it, thought there were propositions in it, which being better considered of would make the test be let fall: for in it the repressing of tyranny is reckoned a duty incumbent on good subjects. And the confession being made after the Scots had deposed the queen regent, and it being ratified in parliament after they had forced their queen Mary to resign, it was very plain what they who made and enacted this confession meant by the repressing of tyranny. But the duke and his party set it on so earnestly, that upon one day's debate the act passed, though only by a majority of seven voices. There was some appearance of security to the pro-

1682. testant religion by this test : but the prerogative of the crown in ecclesiastical matters had been raised so high by duke Lauderdale's act, that the obliging all people to maintain that with the rest of the prerogative might have made way for every thing. All ecclesiastical courts subsisted now by this test only upon the king's permission, and at his discretion.

The parliament of Scotland was dissolved soon after this act passed : and Hyde was sent down from the king to the duke immediately upon it. It was given out, that he was sent by the king to press the duke upon this victory to shew, that what ill usage could not extort from him, he would now do of his own accord, and return to the church of England. I was assured, that lord Halifax had prevailed with the king to write to him to that purpose : the letter was writ, but was not sent : but lord Hyde had it in charge to manage it as a message^c. How much of this is true I cannot tell : one thing is certain, that if it was true it had no effect^d.

^c I have a letter of the duke's, dated Dec. 14th, in which he says, " Besides that in conscience I cannot do what you so press me to, it would not be of that use or advantage to his majesty as some think. For the Shaftsburian and republican party would say it was only a trick, that I had a dispensation, and that I was still a catholic in my heart ; and say, that there was more reason to be affeared of popery than ever. The reasons are obvious ; besides, I will never be brought to do it, and therefore am glad to see that the thoughts of his ma-

esty's writing to me upon that subject is laid aside ; for should he be prevailed upon to do it, one might easily guess what must soon follow after. Therefore let my friends see to hinder such a letter, and put the thoughts of my complying with them in that point of changing my religion quite out of their heads." D.

^d I have a letter of the duke's, in which are these words : " What you hint to me in your letter, and what lord Halifax in his has more plainly said, and has been pressed by lord Hyde, concerning my going

As soon as the test with the confession of faith 1682.
 was printed, there was a universal murmuring among
 the best of the clergy. Many were against the
 swearing to a system made up of so many proposi-
 tions, of which some were at least doubtful ; though 518

it was found to be much more moderate in many
 points, than could have been well expected, consider-
 ing the heat of that time. There was a limitation
 put on the duty of subjects in the article, by which
 they were required not to resist any whom God had
 placed in authority, in these words, *while they pass
 not the bounds of their office*: and in another they
 condemned those who resist the supreme power
doing that thing which appertaineth to his charge.

These were propositions now of a very ill sound: Objections
 they were also highly offended at the great extent of made to the
 the prerogative in the point of supremacy, by which test.
 the king turned bishops out at pleasure by a letter.
 It was hard enough to bear this: but it seemed in-
 tolerable to oblige men by oath to maintain it. The
 king might by a proclamation put down even episco-
 pacy itself, as the law then stood: and by this oath
 they would be bound to maintain that. All meet-
 ing in synods, or for ordinations, were hereafter to
 be held only by permission: so that all the visible
 ways of preserving religion depended now wholly
 on the king's good pleasure: and they saw that this
 would be a very feeble tenure under a popish king.
 The being tied to all this by oath seemed very hard.
 And when a church was yet in so imperfect a state,

| | |
|---|--|
| “ to church, has mortified me “ very much ; since I cannot “ do it ; for indeed I see no- “ thing but ruin when such | “ measures are taken, as pro- “ duced such a message to me, “ when there was no reason to “ believe I would comply.” D. |
|---|--|

1682. without liturgy or discipline, it was a strange imposition to make people swear, never to endeavour any alteration either in church or state. Some or all of these exceptions did run so generally through the whole body of the clergy, that they were all shaking in their resolutions. To prevent this, an explanation was drawn by bishop Paterson, and passed in council. It was by it declared, that it was not meant that those who took the test should be bound to every article in the confession of faith, but only in so far as it contained the doctrine upon which the protestant churches had settled the reformation: and that the test did not cut off those rights, which were acknowledged to have been in the primitive church for the first three hundred years after Christ: and an assurance was given, that the king intended never to change the government of the church. By this it was pretended that the greatest difficulties were now removed. But to this it was answered, that they were to swear they took the oath in the literal sense of the words. So that, if this explanation was not conform to the literal sense, they would be perjured who took it upon this explanation. The imposers of an oath could only declare the sense of it: but that could not be done by any other, much less by a lower
 519 authority, such as the privy council's was confessed to be. Yet when men are to be undone if they do not submit to a hard law, they willingly catch at any thing that seems to resolve their doubts.

Many turned out for not taking it.

About eighty of the most learned and pious of their clergy left all, rather than comply with the terms of this law: and these were noted to be the best preachers, and the most zealous enemies to popery, that belonged to that church. The bishops,

who thought their refusing the test was a reproach to those who took it, treated them with much contempt, and put them to many hardships. About twenty of them came up to England^e: I found them men of excellent tempers, pious and learned, and I esteemed it no small happiness that I had then so much credit by the ill opinion they had of me at court, that by this means I got most of them to be well settled in England; where they have behaved themselves so worthily, that I have great reason to rejoice in being made an instrument to get so many good men, who suffered for their consciences, to be again well employed and well provided for. Most of them were formed by Charteris, who had been always a great enemy to the imposing of books and systems as tests that must be signed and sworn by such as are admitted to serve in the church. He had been for some years divinity professor at Edinburgh, where he had formed the minds of many of the young clergy both to an excellent temper and to a set of very good principles. He upon this retired, and lived private for some years: he writ to me, and gave me an account of this breach that was like to be in the church: and desired that I would try, by all the methods I could think of, to stop the proceedings upon the test. But the king had put the affairs of Scotland so entirely in the duke's hands, and the bishops here were so pleased with those clauses in the test that renounced the covenant and all endeavours for any alteration in church and state, that I saw it was in vain to make any attempt at court. [I therefore wished, that they in Scotland would go as far as they could with a good

1682.

^e Enough to corrupt England. S.

1682. conscience in compliance with the law, and not bring a church already rent with schisms under new distractions, if it was possible to avoid them. At the same time duke Hamilton wrote to me, for my opinion concerning the test. I answered him, that I thought the objections to it were managed with too much subtilty. I did not carry these things so far as others did. If it was against his conscience, I prayed him to have no regard to his interest, and upon no account take any oath, till he was satisfied it was lawful. But if he had no scruple in his own mind about it, and only pretended that to gratify a party, I said that, as that would be a mocking of God, so he would be made uneasy in it. For lord Halifax assured me, that he was looked on as a man that was setting himself at the head of the party in opposition to the government, and he might easily foresee what the consequence of that would be. He stood in suspense for some months; yet took it at last. And for that I was much blamed by the party. It was said my letter determined him. I also wrote a paper to answer the objections raised to the test, which was sent about among my friends. For though I did not like it, and should never have consented to the making of it; yet I wished that all bad ^f (all who had) scruples about it might have been satisfied, and that these worthy clergymen, who were turned out upon it, and who were the ablest men in that church, and the fittest to make a stand against popery, might return to their labours. Yet so ill was I represented upon that occasion, that the duke was made believe, that I was a great stickler in all the

^f *bad* is omitted in Bowyer's Transcript.

opposition that was made to the test, and he possessed the king with it.] 1682.

Upon this matter an incident of great importance happened: the earl of Argile was a privy counsellor, and one of the commissioners of the treasury: so when the time limited was near lapsing, he was forced to declare himself^g. He had once resolved to retire from all employments, but his engagements with duke Lauderdale's party, and the entanglements of his own affairs, overcame that. His main objection lay to that part which obliged them to endeavour no alteration in the government in church or state, which he thought was a limitation of the legislature. He desired leave to explain himself in that point: and he continued always to affirm, that the duke was satisfied with that which he proposed: so being called on the next day at the council table to take the test, he said, he did not think that the parliament did intend an oath that should have any contradictions in one part of it to another; therefore he took the test, as it was consistent with it self: (this related to the absolute loyalty in the test, and the limitations that were on it in the confession :) and he added, that he did not intend to bind himself up by it from doing any thing in his station for the amending of any thing in church or state, so far as was consistent with the protestant religion and the duty of a good subject: and he

^g In a letter of the duke's, dated Nov. 1st, he says, " Lord Argile is here, and has not yet taken it, (the test,) but by Thursday next he must; or lose all his places, which he will be unwilling to do." In another of the 5th, " You

" will hear from lord Hyde, of lord Argile's having taken the test, and spoiled all again by not taking it yesterday as one of the lords of the treasury." On the 12th, " People seem little concerned for lord Argile's being put into the castle." D.

1682. took that as a part of his oath. The thing passed, and he sat that day in council; and went next day to the treasury chamber, where he repeated the same words. Some officious people upon this came and suggested to the duke, that great advantage might be taken against him from these words. So at the treasury chamber he was desired to write them down, and give them to the clerk, which he did, and was immediately made a prisoner in the castle of Edinburgh upon it. It was said, this was high treason, and the assuming to himself the legislative power, in his giving a sense of an act of parliament, and making that a part of his oath. It was also said, that his saying that he did not think the parliament intended an oath that did contradict it self, was a tacit way of saying that he did think it, and was a defaming and a spreading lies of the proceedings of parliament, which was capital. The liberty that he reserved to himself was likewise called treasonable, in assuming a power to act against law: these were such apparent stretches, that for some days it was believed all this was done only to affright him to a more absolute submission, and to surrender up some of those great jurisdictions over the Highlands that were in his family. He desired he might be admitted to speak with the duke in private: but that was refused. He had let his old correspondence with me fall for some years: but I thought it became me in this extremity to serve him all I could. And I prevailed with lord Halifax to speak so oft to the king about it, that it came to be known: and lord Argyle writ me some letters of thanks upon it. Duke Lauderdale was still in a firm friendship with him, and tried his

He was
committed
upon it.

whole strength with the king to preserve him: but 1682.
 he was sinking both in body and mind, and was 521
 like to be cast off in his old age. Upon which I
 also prevailed with lord Halifax to offer him his
 service, for which duke Lauderdale sent me very
 kind messages. I thought these were the only re-
 turns that I ought to make him for all the injuries
 he had done me, thus to serve him and his friends
 in distress. But the duke of York took this, as he
 did every thing from me, by the worst handle pos-
 sible. He said, I would reconcile my self to the
 greatest enemies I had in opposition to him. Upon
 this it was not thought fit upon many accounts that
 I should go and see duke Lauderdale, which I had
 intended to do. It was well known I had done
 him acts of friendship: so the scandal of being in
 enmity with him was over: for a Christian is no
 man's enemy: and he will always study to over-
 come evil with good.

Lord Argile was brought to a trial for the words Argile is
 he had spoke. The fact was certain: so the debate tried and
 lay in a point of law, what guilt could be made out condemned.
 of his words ^h. Lockhart pleaded three hours for
 him, and shewed so manifestly that his words had

^h Dec. 13th, the duke says,
 " Lord Argile's trial began yes-
 " terday, and their forms in the
 " justice court are so tedious,
 " that they could not make an
 " end of it then, but will, as
 " I believe, this evening; and
 " have reason to believe the
 " jury will find the bill, and
 " not *ignoramus*, and that that
 " little lord will be once again
 " at his majesty's mercy."
 " Since I wrote this, I have

" had an account that the ju-
 " ry, of which the marquis of
 " Montrose was chancellor, as
 " they call them here, have
 " found lord Argile guilty of
 " treason, and other crimes,
 " so that he is absolutely in his
 " majesty's hands." D. (This
 extract has been already pub-
 lished by sir John Dalrymple
 in his *Memoirs*, vol. II. Ap-
 pendix, p. 67.)

1682. no sort of criminousness, much less of treason in them, that, if his cause had not been judged before his trial, no harm could have come to him. The court that was to judge the point of law (or the relevancy of the libel, as it is called in Scotland) consisted of a justice general, the justice clerk, and of five judges. The justice general does not vote, unless the court is equally divided. One of the judges was deaf, and so old that he could not sit all the while the trial lasted, but went home and to bed. The other four were equally divided: so the old judge was sent for: and he turned it against lord Argileⁱ. The jury was only to find the fact proved: but yet they were officious, and found it treason: and, to make a shew of impartiality, whereas in the libel he was charged with perjury for taking the oath falsely, they acquitted him of the perjury. No sentence in our age was more universally cried out on than this. All people spoke of it, and of the duke who drove it on, with horror: all that was said to lessen that was, that duke Lauderdale had restored the family with such an extended jurisdiction, that he was really the master of all the Highlands: so that it was fit to attaint him, that by a

ⁱ (Lockhart, of Carnwarth, in his Letter on the bishop of Salisbury's History, published lately with the *Lockhart* Papers, remarks on this account, that if the justice general did not vote, as indeed is the practice of chairmen or presidents in all courts, and the infirm deaf judge was absent, there still remained five voting judges, the court consisting of seven judges, and consequently there

could not be an equality, that is, two and two of a side, as the bishop affirms. Lockhart relates, that the justice clerk, so called from having been originally a clergyman, voted in all other cases with the other judges, except when the justice general is absent, on which occasion he presides, and does not vote, except on an equality amongst the other judges. Vol. I. p. 599.)

new restoring him these grants might be better 1682.
 limited. This, as the duke wrote to the king, was
 all he intended by it, as lord Halifax assured me.
 But lord Argile was made believe, that the duke in-522
 tended to proceed to execution. Some more of the
 guards were ordered to come to Edinburgh. Rooms
 were also fitted for him in the common gaol, to
 which peers use to be removed a few days before
 their execution. And a person of quality, whom
 lord Argile never named, affirmed to him on his ho-
 nour, that he heard one who was in great favour
 say to the duke, The thing must be done, and that
 it would be easier to satisfy the king about it after
 it was done, than to obtain his leave for doing it.
 It is certain, many of the Scottish nobility did be-
 lieve that it was intended he should die ^k.

Upon these reasons lord Argile made his escape ^{He made his escape.}
 out of the castle in a disguise. Others suspected
 those stories were sent to him on purpose to frighten
 him to make his escape; as that which would jus-
 tify further severities against him. He came to
 London, and lurked for some months there. It was
 thought I was in his secret. But though I knew
 one that knew it, and saw many papers that he
 then writ, giving an account of all that matter, yet
 I abhorred lying: and it was not easy to have kept

^k “Jan. 5. I find by yours of
 “the 27th of last month, that
 “people take all the pains they
 “can to tax me with severity
 “in this affair of lord Argile:
 “it is not the first wrong of
 “that kind which has been
 “done me, as those who are
 “acquainted with the laws of
 “this country know very well:
 “and has but to thank himself
 “for what has happened to
 “him; and to shew you what
 “wrong is done me, if I had
 “not hindered his being fallen
 “on in parliament, they had
 “brought him there, in as ill a
 “condition as to his fortune, as
 “he is now.” (Duke of York’s
 letter to lord Dartmouth.) D.

1682. out of the danger of that, if I had seen him, or known where he was: so I avoided it by not seeing him. One that saw him knew him, and went and told the king of it: but he would have no search made for him, and retained still very good thoughts of him. In one of lord Argile's papers he writ, that, if ever he was admitted to speak with the king, he could convince him how much he merited at his hands by that which had drawn the duke's indignation on him. He that shewed me this explained it, that at the duke's first being in Scotland, when he apprehended that the king might have consented to the exclusion, he tried to engage lord Argile to stick to him in that case; who told him, he would always be true to the king, and likewise to him when it should come to his turn to be king, but that he would go no farther, nor engage himself in case the king and he should quarrel.

I had lived many years in great friendship with the earl of Perth: I lived with him as a father with a son for above twelve years: and he had really the submissions of a child to me. So, he having been on lord Argile's jury, I writ him a letter about it with the freedom that I thought became me: he, to merit at the duke's hands, shewed it to him, as he himself confessed to me. I could very easily forgive him, but could not esteem him much after so unworthy an action. He was then aspiring to
523 great preferment, and so sacrificed me to obtain favour: but he made greater sacrifices afterwards. The duke now seemed to triumph in Scotland. All stooped to him. The presbyterian party was much depressed. The best of the clergy were turned out. Yet, with all this, he was now more hated there

than ever. Lord Argile's business made him be 1682.
 looked on as one that would prove a terrible master
 when all should come into his hands. He had pro-
 mised to redress all the merchants' grievances with
 relation to trade, that so he might gain their con-
 currence in parliament: but, as soon as that was
 over, all his promises were forgotten. The accusa-
 tions of perjury were stifled by him. And all the
 complaints of the great abuse lord Halton was guilty
 of in the matter of the coin ended in turning him
 out of all his employments, and obliging him to
 compound for his pardon, by paying 20,000*l.* to two
 of the duke's creatures: [one of whom he advanced
 soon after to be chancellor of Scotland, Aberdeen:]
 so that all the reparation the kingdom had for the
 oppression of so many years, and so many acts of
 injustice, was, that two new oppressors had a share
 of the spoils, who went into the same tract, or ra-
 ther invented new methods of oppression, [in which
 the new chancellor exceeded all that had gone be-
 fore him. He had a small estate which he resolved
 to raise up, till it should hold a proportion to his
 new title: for he was made earl of Aberdeen.] All
 these things, together with a load of age and of a
 vast bulk, sunk duke Lauderdale so, that he died
 that summer. His heart seemed quite spent: there
 was not left above the bigness of a walnut of firm
 substance: the rest was spongy, liker¹ the lungs
 than the heart.

The duke had leave given him to come to the
 king at Newmarket: and there he prevailed for
 leave to come up, and live again at court. As he

The duke
 comes to
 court.

¹ Anglice, more like. S.

1682. was going back to bring the duchess, the Gloucester frigate, that carried him, struck on a bank of sand. The duke got into a boat: and took care of his dogs, and some unknown persons who were taken from that earnest care of his to be his priests: the long boat went off with very few in her, though she might have carried off above eighty more than she did^m. One hundred and fifty persons perished: some of them men of great quality. But the duke

^m (“ Sir John Berry the commander was cleared of being in any fault by his majesty and the council. But captain Ayres the pilot was sentenced to perpetual imprisonment for his negligence.” *Complete History of England*, vol. III. p. 395. See also an account of this sad disaster in the *Life of king James II.* vol. I. p. 731. where it is said, that only Mr. Churchill and one or two more were invited by the duke to go into the shallop; and that the perishing sailors gave a loud huzza, when they saw his royal highness in safety. Among the letters published by Mr. Ellis, there is one, which Dalrymple however had already printed, from the lord provost of Edinburgh after escaping from this shipwreck. It is dated a few days afterwards. He says, that “ when the duke got his clothes on and inquired how things stood, she had nine feet water in her hold, and the sea fast coming in at the gun-ports; the seamen and passengers were not at command, every man studying his own safety. This forced the duke to go

“ out at the large window of the cabin where his little boat was ordered quietly to attend him, lest the passengers and seamen should have thronged so in upon him, as to upset his boat. This was accordingly so conducted as that none but earl Winton and the president of the session, with two of the bed-chamber men, went with him. They were forced to draw their swords to hold people off.” Vol. IV. of the *Second Series*, p. 68. Compare sir Egerton Brydges’ note on Collins’s *Peerage*, vol. IV. p. 119. Mr. Pepys also, who was accompanying the duke in another vessel, has related several circumstances of this accident. Vol. II. of his *Memoirs*, pp. 57. 621. where it appears, that colonel Legge after saving the duke saved himself by going aboard the vessel in which Pepys was. The duke of York gave eleven months’ pay to the widow of every seaman who perished, and a sum of money to each child of such seaman. See Lingard’s *History of England*, vol. VIII. ch. 7. p. 239.)

took no notice of this cruel neglect, which was laid 1682.
chiefly to Leg's chargeⁿ.

ⁿ The ground of this reflection was, that he stood with his sword drawn, to hinder the crowd from oversetting the boat the duke was in; which the bishop thought was a fault. But he had forgot a famous story, of a struggle between sir Charles Scarborough and the duke's dog Mumper, which would have convinced him that the dogs took care of themselves. D. See a letter from the earl of Dartmouth to Erasmus Lewis, esq. in which this charge is refuted, p. 826. (Burnet, Dartmouth copy.) H. L. (Henry Legge.) The letter is here subjoined, although it has been already published by sir John Dalrymple in his Memoirs, Appendix, p. 71.

To Erasmus Lewis, Esq.

Sir, Sandwell,
Jan. 25, 1723-4.

This is only in answer to the last paragraph in your's of the 21st. My father was on board the Gloucester, but so little deserved to have the drowning 150 men (which the bishop has so liberally bestowed upon him) laid chiefly to his charge, that it was in great measure owing to him that any escaped. After the ship had struck, he several times pressed the duke to get into the boat, who refused to do it, telling him, that if he were gone, nobody would take care of the ship, which he had hopes might be saved, if she were not abandoned. But my father finding

she was ready to sink, told him if he staid any longer they should be obliged to force him out; upon which the duke ordered a strong box to be lifted into the boat, which besides being extremely weighty, took up a good deal of time, as well as room. My father asked him with some warmth, if there was any thing in it worth a man's life. The duke answered, that there were things of so great consequence, both to the king and himself, that he would hazard his own, rather than it should be lost. Before he went off, he enquired for lord Roxburgh, and lord Obrian, but the confusion and hurry was so great, that they could not be found. When the duke and as many as she would hold with safety were in the boat, my father stood with his sword drawn, to hinder the crowd from oversetting of her, which, I suppose, was what the bishop esteemed a fault: but the king thanked him publicly for the care he had taken of the duke; and the duchess, who was not apt to favour him much upon other occasions, said upon this, that she thought herself more obliged to him, than to any man in the world, and should do so as long as she lived. I cannot guess what induced the bishop to charge my father with the long boat's not being sufficiently manned; for if that were true, (which I much doubt,) it was not under his direction, he being on board in no other capacity

1682.

A new ministry in Scotland.

In Scotland the duke declared the new ministers : Gordon, now earl of Aberdeen, was made chancellor : and Queensbury was made treasurer : and the care of all affairs was committed to them. [But they both were very proud and very covetous men ; so that it was not probable that their friendship could last long.]

The duke at parting recommended to the council to preserve the public peace, to support the church, and to oblige all men to live regularly in obedience to the laws. The bishops made their court to him with so much zeal, that they wrote a letter to the
524 archbishop of Canterbury, to be communicated to the rest of the English bishops, setting forth in a very high strain his affection to the church, and his care of it : and, lest this piece of merit should have been stifled by Sancroft, they sent a copy of it to the press ; which was a greater reproach to them than a service to the duke, who could not but despise such abject and indecent flattery. The proceedings against conventicles were now like to be severer than ever : all the fines, that were set so high by law that they were never before levied but on some particular instances, were now ordered to be levied without exception. All people upon that saw, they must either

but as a passenger, and the duke's servant. And I believe his reflection upon the duke for his care of the dogs, to be as ill grounded, for I remember a story, (that was in every body's mouth at that time,) of a struggle that happened for a plank between sir Charles Scarborough, and the duke's dog Mumper, which convinces me that the dogs were left to take

care of themselves, (as he did,) if there were any more on board ; which I never heard until the bishop's story book was published. This is all in relation to that affair that ever came to the knowledge of,

Sir,

Your most faithful,

humble servant,

DARTMOUTH.

conform or be quite undone. The chancellor laid 1682.
down a method for proceeding against all offenders
punctually: and the treasurer was as rigorous in or-
dering all the fines to be levied.

When the people saw this, they came all to church
again: and that in some places where all sermons
had been discontinued for many years. But they
came in so awkward a manner, that it was visible
they did not mean to worship God, but only to stay
some time within the church walls: and they were
either talking or sleeping all the while. Yet most of
the clergy seemed to be transported with this change
of their condition, and sent up many panegyrics of
the glorious services that the duke had done their
church. [This compliance shewed how soon the
presbyterians could overcome all their scruples;
when they saw what they were to suffer for them,
so that the enemies of religion gained their point,
by observing^o] the ill nature of the one side, and
the cowardliness of the other, and pleased them-
selves in censuring them both. And by this means
an impious and atheistical leaven began to corrupt
most of the younger sort. This has since that time
made a great progress in that kingdom, which was
before the freest from it of any nation in Christen-
dom. The beginnings of it were reckoned from the
duke's stay among them, and from his court, which
have been cultivated since with much care, and but
too much success.

About the end of the year two trials gave all peo-
ple sad apprehensions of what they were to look for.
One Home was charged by a kinsman of his own for

^o In the printed copy was substituted, *The enemies of religion observed.*

1682. having been at Bothwell-bridge. All gentlemen of estates were excepted out of the indemnity: so he, having an estate, could have no benefit by that. One swore, he saw him go into a village, and seize on some arms: another swore, he saw him ride towards the body of the rebels: but none did swear that they saw him there. He was indeed among them: but there was no proof of it. And he proved, that he 525 was not in the company where the single witness swore he saw him seize on arms, and did evidently discredit him: yet he was convicted and condemned on that single evidence, that was so manifestly proved to be infamous. Many were sensible of the mischievousness of such a precedent: and great applications were made to the duke for saving his life: but he was not born under a pardoning planet ^P. Lord Aberdeen, the chancellor, prosecuted Home with the more rigour, because his own grandfather had suffered in the late times for bearing arms on the king's side, and Home's father was one of the jury that cast him. The day of his execution was set to be on the same day of the year on which lord Stafford had suffered; which was thought done in compliment to the duke, as a retaliation for his blood. Yet Home's infamous kinsman, who had so basely sworn against him, lived not to see his execution; for he died before it full of horror for what he had done. Another trial went much deeper: and the consequences of it struck a terror into the whole country.

One Weir, of Blakewood, that managed the marquess of Douglass's concerns, was accused of treason for having kept company with one that had been in

the business of Bothwell-bridge. Blakewood [had at that time no good character; which is the common fate of all that govern other men's affairs; though upon this occasion, his accounts being exactly looked into, they discovered an extraordinary degree of fidelity and exactness. He] pleaded for himself, that the person on whose account he was now prosecuted as an abettor of traitors, had never been marked out by the government by process or proclamation. It did not so much as appear that he had ever suspected him upon that account. He had lived in his own house quietly for some years after that rebellion before he employed him: and if the government seemed to forget his crime, it was no wonder if others entered into common dealings with him. All the lawyers were of opinion, that nothing could be made of this prosecution: so that Blakewood made use of no secret application, thinking he was in no danger. But the court came to a strange sentence in this matter, by these steps: they judged, that all men who suspected any to have been in the rebellion were bound to discover such their suspicion, and to give no harbour to such persons: that the bare suspicion made it treason to harbour the person suspected, whether he was guilty or not: that if any person was under such a suspicion, it was to be presumed that all the neighbourhood knew it: so that there was no need of proving that against any particular person, since the presumption of law did prove it: and it being proved that the person with whom 526 Blakewood had conversed lay under that suspicion, Blakewood was upon that condemned as guilty of high treason. This was such a constructive treason, that went upon so many unreasonable suppositions,

1682. that it showed the shamelessness of a sort of men
— who had been for forty years declaiming against a parliamentary attainder for a constructive treason in the case of the earl of Strafford, and did now in a common court of justice condemn a man upon a train of so many inferences, that it was not possible to make it look even like a constructive treason. The day of his execution was set : and though the marquis of Douglas writ earnestly to the duke for his pardon, that was denied. He only obtained two months' reprieve, for making up his accounts. The reprieve was renewed once or twice : so Blakewood was not executed. This put all the gentry in a great fright : many knew they were as obnoxious as Blakewood was : and none could have the comfort to know that he was safe. This revived among them a design, that Lockhart had set on foot ten years before, of carrying over a plantation to Carolina. All the presbyterian party saw they were now disinherited of a main part of their birthright^q, of choosing their representatives in parliament : and upon that they said, they would now seek a country where they might live undisturbed, as freemen and as Christians. The duke encouraged the motion : he was glad to have many untoward people sent far away, who, he reckoned, would be ready upon the first favourable conjuncture to break out into a new rebellion. Some gentlemen were sent up to treat with the patentees of Carolina : they did not like the government of those *palatinates*, as they were called : yet the prospect of so great a colony obtained to them all the conditions they proposed. I was made acquainted with all the steps they made ;

^q As much of papists as of presbyterians. S.

for those who were sent up were particularly recom- 1682.
 mended to me ; [and seemed to depend much on the
 advices I gave him (them.)] In the negotiation this
 year there was no mixing with the malecontents in
 England : only they who were sent up went among
 them, and informed them of the oppressions they
 lay under ; in particular of the terror with which
 this sentence against Blakewood had struck them
 all. The court resolved to prosecute that farther :
 for a proclamation was issued out in the beginning
 of the year eighty-three, by which the king ordered
 circuit courts to be sent round the western and
 southern counties, to inquire after all who had been
 guilty of harbouring or conversing with those who
 had been in rebellion, even though there had been
 neither process nor proclamation issued out against 527
 them. He also ordered, that all who were found
 guilty of such converse with them should be pro-
 secuted as traitors. This inquisition was to last
 three years : and at the end of that time all was to
 conclude in a full indemnity to such as should not
 be then under prosecution. But the indemnity was
 to take place immediately to all such as should take
 the test. This was perhaps such a proclamation as
 the world had not seen since the days of the duke of
 Alva. Upon it great numbers run in to take the
 test, declaring at the same time that they took it
 against their consciences : but they would do any
 thing to be safe. Such as resolved not to take it
 were trying how to settle or sell their estates ; and
 resolved to leave the country, which was now in a
 very oppressed and desperate state.

But I must next turn again to the affairs of Eng-
 land. The court was every where triumphant. The

Affairs in
 England.

1682. duke was highly complimented by all, and seemed to have overcome all difficulties. The court, not content with all their victories, resolved to free themselves from the fears of troublesome parliaments for the future. The cities and boroughs of England were invited and prevailed on, to demonstrate their loyalty, by surrendering up their charters, and taking new ones modelled as the court thought fit. It was much questioned, whether those surrenders were good in law or not: it was said, that those who were in the government in corporations, and had their charters and seals trusted to their keeping, were not the proprietors nor masters of those rights: they could not extinguish those corporations, nor part with any of their privileges. Others said, that whatever might be objected to the reason and equity of the thing, yet, when the seal of a corporation was put to any deed, such a deed was good in law.^r The matter goes beyond my skill in law to determine it; this is certain, that whatsoever may be said in law, there is no sort of theft or perfidy more criminal, than for a body of men, whom their neighbours have trusted with their concerns, to steal away their charters, and affix their seals to such a deed, betraying in that their trust and their oaths. In former ages, corporations were jealous of their privileges and customs to excess and superstition. So that it looked like a strange degeneracy, when all these were now delivered up; and this on design to pack a parliament that might make way for a popish king. So that, instead of securing us from popery under such a prince, these persons were now con-

All charters
of towns
were sur-
rendered to
the king.

^r What does he think of the surrenders of the charters of ab- byes? S. (See what is said to this objection below, p. 534. fol. ed.)

triving ways to make all easy to him. Popery at all times has looked odious and cruel: yet what the emperor had lately done in Hungary, and what the king of France was then doing against protestants in that kingdom, shewed that their religion was as perfidious and as cruel in this age as it had been in the last; and by the duke's government of Scotland, all men did see what was to be expected from him. All this laid together, the whole looked like an extravagant fit of madness: yet no part of it was so unaccountable, as the high strains to which the universities and most of the clergy were carried. The nonconformists were now prosecuted with much eagerness. This was visibly set on by the papists: and it was wisely done of them; for they knew how much the nonconformists were set against them^s; and therefore they made use of the indiscreet heat of some angry clergymen to ruin them: this they knew would render the clergy odious, and give the papists great advantages against them, if ever they should strike up into an opposition to their designs.

At midsummer a new contest discovered how little the court resolved to regard either justice or decency. The court had carried the election of sir John Moor to be mayor of the city of London at Michaelmas eighty-one. He was the alderman on whom the election fell in course. Yet some who knew him well were for setting him aside, as one whom the court would easily manage. He had been a nonconformist himself, till he grew so rich that he had a mind to go through the dignities of the city: but though he conformed to the church, yet he was still

The dispute concerning the sheriffs of London.

^s Not so much as they are against the church. S.

1682. looked on as one that in his heart favoured the secretaries : and upon this occasion he persuaded some of their preachers to go among their congregations to get votes for him. Others, who knew him to be a flexible and faint-hearted man, opposed his election : yet it was carried for him. The opposition that was made to his election had sharpened him so much, that he became in all things compliant to the court, in particular to secretary Jenkins, who took him into his own management. When the day came in which the mayor used to drink to one, and to mark him out for sheriff, he drank to North, a merchant that was brother to the chief justice^t. Upon that it was pretended, that this ceremony was not a bare nomination, which the common hall might receive or refuse as they had a mind to it : but that this made the sheriff, and that the common hall was bound to receive and confirm him in course, as the king did the mayor. On the other hand it was said, that the right was to be determined by the charter, which granted the election of the sheriffs to the citizens of London : and that, whatever customs had crept in among them, the right still lay where the charter had lodged it among the citizens. But the court was resolved to carry this point : and they found orders that had been made in the city concerning this par-

^t (Harris, in his *Life of Charles II.* p. 343, says, his lordship pretended a right, for many years disused, whatever the old practice might have been, to nominate one of the sheriffs by drinking to him. Lord John Russell, in his *Life of Lord Russell*, p. 172, adds, " That the letter of the charter

" and various precedents demonstrate, beyond all doubt, " that this right of election resided in the citizens at large, " and that the choice allowed " to the lord mayor was only a " matter of courtesy between " the city and its chief magistrate.")

ticular, which gave some colour to this pretension of the mayor's. So he claimed it on midsummer-day : and said, the common hall were to go and elect one sheriff, and to confirm the other that had been declared by him. The hall on the other hand said, that the right of choosing both was in them. The old sheriffs put it, according to custom, to a poll : and it was visible, the much greater number was against the lord mayor. The sheriffs were always understood to be the officers of that court : so the adjourning it belonged to them : yet the mayor adjourned the court ; which they said he had no power to do, and so went on with the poll. There was no disorder in the whole progress of the matter, if that was not to be called one, that they proceeded after the mayor had adjourned the poll. But though the mayor's party carried themselves with great insolence towards the other party, yet they shewed on this occasion more temper than could have been expected from so great a body, who thought their rights were now invaded. The mayor upon this resolved to take another poll, to which none should be admitted but those who were contented to vote only for one, and to approve his nomination for the other. And it was resolved, that his poll should be that by which the business should be settled : and though the sheriffs' poll exceeded his by many hundreds, yet order was given to return those on the mayor's poll, and that they should be sworn ; and so those of the sheriffs' poll should be left to seek their remedy by law, where they could find it. Box, who was chosen by the mayor's party, and joined to North, had no mind to serve upon so doubtful an election, where so many actions would lie, if it was judged against them at

1682.

1682. law: and he could not be persuaded to hold it. So
 — it was necessary to call a new common hall, and to
 proceed to a new election: and then, without any
 proclamation made as was usual, one in a corner
 near the mayor named Rich, and about thirty more
 applauded it, those in the hall, that was full of peo-
 ple and of noise, hearing nothing of it. Upon this it

530 was said, that Rich was chosen without any contra-
 diction: and so North and Rich were returned, and

Carried by
 the court.

sworn sheriffs for the ensuing year. The violence
 and the injustice with which this matter was ma-
 naged, shewed that the court was resolved to carry
 that point at any rate: and this gave great occasions
 of jealousy, that some wicked design was on foot, for
 which it was necessary in the first place to be sure of
 favourable juries^u.

Lord Shaftsbury upon this, knowing how obnoxious he was, went out of England. His voyage was fatal to him: he just got to Amsterdam to die in it. Of the last parts of his life I shall have some occasion to make mention afterwards. When Michaelmas-day came, those who found how much they had been deceived in Moor, resolved to choose a mayor that might be depended on. The poll was closed when the court thought they had the majority: but upon casting it up, it appeared they had lost it: so they fell to canvass it: and they made such exceptions to

^u (“ That much irregularity
 “ occurred in these proceed-
 “ ings cannot be doubted; but
 “ the presumption is, that the
 “ election of the court candi-
 “ dates was legal, because, af-
 “ ter the revolution, when men
 “ were eager in pursuit of ven-

“ geance, and the question was
 “ brought by petition before
 “ parliament, each house, after
 “ a separate examination of
 “ Moore and North, deemed it
 “ advisable to drop the inqui-
 “ ry.” Lingard’s Hist. of Eng-
 land, vol. VIII. ch. 7. p. 241.)

those of the other side, that they discounted as many voices as gave them the majority. This was also managed in so gross a manner, that it was visible the court was resolved by fair or foul means to have the government of the city in their own hands. But because they would not be at this trouble, nor run this hazard every year, it was resolved that the charter of the city must either be given up, or be adjudged to the king. The former was much the easier way: so great pains was taken to manage the next election of the common council, so as that they might be tractable in this point. There was much injustice complained of in many of the wards of the city, both in the poll and in the returns that were made. In order to the disabling all the dissenters from having a vote in that election, the bishop and clergy of London were pressed by the court to prosecute them in the church courts, that so they might excommunicate them; which some lawyers thought would render them incapable to vote, though other lawyers were very positively of another opinion. It is certain it gave at least a colour to deny them votes. The bishop of London began to apprehend, that things were running too fast, and was backward in the matter. The clergy of the city refused to make presentments: the law laid that on the church-wardens: and so they would not meddle officiously. The king was displeased with them for their remissness: but after all the practices of the court, in the returns of the common council of the city, they could not bring it near an equality for delivering up their charter. Jenkins managed the whole business of the city with so many indirect practices, that the reputation he

1682.

1682. had for probity was much blemished by it^x: he seemed to think it was necessary to bring the city to a dependence on the court in the fairest methods he could fall on; and, if these did not succeed, that then he was to take the most effectual ones, hoping that a good intention would excuse bad practices^y.

Changes in
the minis-
try, and
quarrels a-
mong them.

The earl of Sunderland had been disgraced after the exclusion parliaments, as they were now called, were dissolved: but the king had so entire a confidence in him, and lady Portsmouth was so much in his interests, that upon great submissions made to the duke he was again restored to be secretary this winter. Lord Hide was the person that disposed the duke to it: upon that, lord Halifax and he fell to be in ill terms: for he hated lord Sunderland beyond expression, though he had married his sister^z. From lord Sunderland's returning to his post all men concluded, that his declaring as he did for the exclusion was certainly done by direction from the king, who naturally loved craft and a double game, that so he might have proper instruments to work by, which way soever he had turned himself in that affair. The king was the more desirous to have lord Sunderland again near him, that he might have

^x (Of the proceedings in the city at the election of lord mayor and sheriffs, a different account from the above is given, both in Echard's Hist. of England, pp. 1021, 1022, and in North's Examen of the Critical History of England, p. 587—618. Compare Ralph's Hist. of England, vol. I. p. 684—698.)

^y But since this history came out, there has been published

the life of Jenkins, in which there is a letter of his to the duke of York, very strongly and honestly dissuading him from the extremity of prosecuting the city for a forfeiture of their charter, or seizing their liberties. O.

^z Who married whose sister? S. (Lord Halifax had married lord Sunderland's sister.)

somebody about him who understood foreign affairs. 1682.

Jenkins understood nothing^a: but he had so much credit with the high church party, that he was of great use to the court. Lord Conway was brought in to be the other secretary, who was so very ignorant of foreign affairs, that his province being the north, when one of the foreign ministers talked to him of the circles of Germany, it amazed him: he could not imagine what circles had to do with affairs of state. He was now dismissed. Lord Halifax and lord Hide fell to be in an open war, and were both much hated. Lord Halifax charged Hide, who was at this time made earl of Rochester, of bribery, for having farmed a branch of the revenue much lower than had been proffered for it. Lord Halifax acquainted the king first with it: and, as he told me, he desired lord Rochester himself to examine into it, he being inclined to think it was rather an abuse put on him, than corruption in himself. But he saw lord Rochester was cold in the matter, and instead of prosecuting any for it, protected all concerned in it. He laid the complaint before the king in council: and to 532 convince the king how ill a bargain he had made, the complainers offered, if he would break the bargain, to give him 40,000*l.* more than he was to have from the farmers. He looked also into the other branches of the revenue, and found cause to suspect much corruption in every one of them: and he got undertakers to offer at a farm of the whole revenue. In this he had all the court on his side: for the king

^a (Consult sir Leoline Jenkins' Life, p. xxxii, prefixed to his Negotiations, published in 1724. Ralph, in the first volume of his History, p. 257, remarks, that the reflection on sir Leoline Jenkins more exposes him that made it, than him it was intended to asperse.)

1682. being now resolved to live on his revenue, without putting himself on a parliament, he was forced on a great reduction of expense: so that many payments run in arrear: and the whole court was so ill paid, that the offering any thing that would raise the revenue, and blemish the management of the treasury, was very acceptable to all in it. Lord Rochester [was become so outrageous and insolent, that he] was also much hated: but the duke and the lady Portsmouth both protected the earl of Rochester so powerfully, that even propositions to the king's advantage, which blemished him, were not hearkened to^b. This touched in too tender a place to admit of a reconciliation: the duke forgot all lord Halifax's service in the point of the exclusion^c. And the dearness that was between them was now turned upon this to a coldness, and afterwards to a most violent enmity. Upon this occasion lord Halifax sent for me, (for I went no more near any that belonged to the court,) and he told me the whole matter. I asked him how he stood with the king: he answered, that neither he nor I had the making of the king: God had made him of a particular composition. He said, he knew what the king said to himself: I asked him, if he knew likewise what he said to others; for he was apt to say to his several ministers whatsoever he

^b (See Ralph's Hist. of England, vol. I. p. 704—706, concerning these disputes between the lords Halifax and Rochester.)

^c It appears by many of the duke's letters, that he always looked upon lord Halifax as the most dangerous enemy he had, though in one he makes

great acknowledgments for his behaviour in the bill of exclusion: but he thinks if he had been really his friend, he would not have proposed the next day his banishment and other limitations, which he understood were of worse consequence to himself and the monarchy, than even the bill itself. D.

thought would please them, as long as he intended to make use of them. By the death of the earl of Nottingham the seals were given to North, who was made lord Guilford^d. He had not the virtues of his predecessor: but he had parts far beyond him: they were turned to craft: so that whereas the former seemed to mean well even when he did ill, this man was believed to mean ill even when he did well^e. The court finding that the city of London could not be wrought on to surrender their charter, resolved to have it condemned by a judgment in the king's bench. Jones had died in May^f: so now Pollex-

1682.

^d He was not made lord Guilford till the year after; which I take notice of, because this mistake led the bishop to expose himself very much, before a very large assembly. The last lord Guilford and I were appointed with him in a commission of delegates, to try the validity of the old earl of Macclesfield's will. When we came to sign the decree, the bishop, after he had signed it himself, thrust it to lord Guilford, who very civilly put it back to me. Burnet said he ought to sign first, for he was an elder baron. Lord Guilford told him he knew that was not so, and that lord Stawell was between him and me. The bishop said he could venture to be very positive that he was in the right. Chief baron Ward seeing him persevere in his impertinence, desired I would end the dispute, for I was first named in the commission, which would not have been, if it were not my due. Upon which I took the

pen, and said, I supposed his lordship would give us leave to know our own rank, but hoped that he did not think either of us looked upon every body that went before us, to be our betters; which occasioned a very universal laugh, and the bishop was as much out of countenance as he was capable of being. D.

^e (See more in a note concerning the lord keeper Guilford at p. 665. fol. edit.)

^f He died at Hampden, in Bucks, of a cold he took there by unaired sheets. The old lord Trevor, who was well known to him, and related to Mr. Hampden, and acquainted with many of the party, told me that it was thought a great felicity to sir William Jones, by his nearest friends, that he died at this time: for as he was privy to the consultations and designs of the lord Russel and the others of his set, and having made himself as obnoxious to the court as any of them, and

1682. phen and Treby were chiefly relied on by the city in
 ——— this matter. Sawyer was the attorney general, a
 dull hot man, and forward to serve all the designs of
 533 the court. He undertook, by the advice of Sanders,
 a learned but a very immoral man, to overthrow
 the charter^g.

The argu-
 ments for
 and against
 the charter
 of London.

The two points upon which they rested the cause
 were, that the common council had petitioned the
 king upon a prorogation of parliament that it might
 meet on the day to which it was prorogued, and had
 taxed the prorogation as that which occasioned a de-
 lay of justice: this was construed to be the raising
 sedition, and the possessing the people with an ill
 opinion of the king and his government. The other
 point was, that the city had imposed new taxes on
 their wharfs and markets, which was an invasion of
 the liberty of the subject, and contrary to law. It
 was said, that all that the crown gave was forfeitable
 back to the crown again upon a maleversation of

because of his superior abili-
 ties, more dangerous; it was
 very likely he would have fallen
 under the suspicion at least of
 being engaged in the plot my
 lord Russel suffered for, and
 have been treated with a par-
 ticular severity, which his ti-
 mid nature could not have
 borne, and might have drawn
 confessions from him, injuri-
 ous to his friends and his
 own character. O. (Compare
 North's Examen of Kennett's
 Complete History, p. 509. Sir
 William Temple, in his Me-
 moirs, says of sir William Jones,
 that "he having the name of the
 " greatest lawyer in England,
 " and commonly of a very wise
 " man, besides this, very rich,

" and of a wary, and rather
 " timerous nature, made peo-
 " ple generally conclude, that
 " the thing (the exclusion of
 " the duke of York) was cer-
 " tain and safe." Temple's
 Works, vol. II. p. 532.)

^g See (and it is worth while)
 the character of Saunders in
 R. North's Life of the Lord
 Keeper Guildford, as also that
 of Sawyer, in the same book,
 which does Sawyer more jus-
 tice than this author has done
 here. He was not so con-
 temptible a man. See his ar-
 gument upon the *Quo Warranto*
 against the city of London,
 (which *all* lawyers deem a great
 performance.) &c. O.

the body; and that as the common council was the 1682.
body of the city, chosen by all the citizens, so they
were all involved in what the common council did:
and they inferred, that since they had both scandal-
ized the king's government, and oppressed their
fellow subjects, they had thereupon forfeited their
liberties: many precedents were brought of the seiz-
ing on the liberties of towns and other corporations,
and of extinguishing them.

The arguments against this were made by Treby,
then the recorder of London, and Pollexphen, who
argued about three hours a piece. They laid it
down for a foundation, that trading corporations
were immortal bodies for the breeding a succession
of trading men, and for perpetuating a fund of pub-
lic chambers for the estates of orphans and trusts,
and for all pious endowments: that crimes commit-
ted by persons entrusted in the government of them
were personal things, which were only chargeable on
those who committed them, but could not affect the
whole body: the treason of a bishop, or a clerk,
only forfeited his title, but did not dissolve the bi-
shopric, or benefice: so the magistrates only were to
be punished for their own crimes: an entailed estate,
when a tenant for life was attainted, was not for-
feited to the king, but went to the next in remain-
der upon his death. The government of a city,
which was a temporary administration, vested no
property in the magistrates: and therefore they had
nothing to forfeit, but what belonged to themselves:
there were also express acts of parliament made in
favour of the city, that it should not be punished for
the misdemeanors of those who bore office in it:
they answered the great objection that was brought

1682. from the forfeitures of some abbeys on the attainder
534 of their abbots in king Henry the eighth's time,
that there were peculiar laws made at that time,
upon which those forfeitures were grounded, which
had been repealed since that time: all those forfeit-
ures were confirmed in parliament: and that purged
all defects. The common council was a selected
body, chosen for particular ends: and if they went
beyond these, they were liable to be punished for it:
if the petition they offered the king was seditious,
the king might proceed against every man that was
concerned in it: and those upon whom those taxes
had been levied, might bring their actions against
those who had levied them: but it seemed very
strange, that when none of the petitioners were pro-
ceeded against for any thing contained in that peti-
tion, and when no actions were brought on the ac-
count of those taxes, that the whole body should
suffer in common for that, which none of those who
were immediately concerned in it had been so much
as brought in question for in any court of law: if
the common council petitioned more earnestly than
was fitting for the sitting of the parliament, that
ought to be ascribed to their zeal for the king's
safety, and for the established religion: and it ought
not to be strained to any other sense than to that
which they profess in the body of their petition,
much less to be carried so far as to dissolve the
whole body on that account: and as for the tolls
and taxes, these were things practised in all the
corporations of England, and seemed to be exactly
according to law: the city since the fire had, at a
vast charge, made their wharfs and markets much
more noble and convenient than they were before:

and therefore they might well deny the benefit of 1682.
them to those who would not pay a new rate, that they set on them for the payment of the debt contracted in building them : this was not the imposing a tax, but the raising a rent out of a piece of ground, which the city might as well do, as a man who rebuilds his house may raise the rent of it : all the precedents that were brought were examined and answered : some corporations were deserted, and so upon the matter dissolved themselves ; judgments in such cases did not fit this in hand : the seizing on the liberties of a corporation did not dissolve the body ; for when a bishop dies, the king seizes the temporalities ; but the corporation still subsists ; and they are restored to the next incumbent. There were indeed some very strange precedents made in Richard the second's time : but they were followed by as strange a reverse : the judges 535 were hanged for the judgments they gave : they also insisted on the effects that would follow on the forfeiting the charter : the custom of London was thereby broken : all the public endowments and charities lodged with the city must revert to the heirs of the donors. This is the substance of the argument, as I had it from Pollexphen. As for the more intricate points of law, I meddle not with them, but leave them to the learned men of that profession. When the matter was brought near judgment, Sanders, who had laid the whole thing, was made chief justice. Pemberton, who was not satisfied in the point, being removed to the common pleas upon North's advancement. Dolben, a judge of the king's bench, was found not to be clear : so he was turned out, and Withins came in his room.

1682. When sentence was to be given, Sanders was struck with an apoplexy: [upon which great reflections were made:] so he could not come into court: but he sent his judgment in writing, and died a few days after. The sentence was given without the solemnity that was usual upon great occasions: the judges were wont formerly in delivering their opinions to make long arguments, in which they set forth the grounds of law on which they went, which were great instructions to the students and barristers: but that had been laid aside ever since Hale's time.

Judgment
given in
the matter.

The judgment now given was, that a city might forfeit its charter; that the maleversations of the common council were the acts of the whole city, and that the two points set forth in the pleadings were just grounds for the forfeiting of a charter. Upon which premises the proper conclusion seemed to be, that therefore the city of London had forfeited their charter: but the consequences of that were so much apprehended, that they did not think fit to venture on it: so they judged, that the king might seize the liberties of the city. The attorney general moved, contrary to what is usual in such cases, that the judgment might not be recorded. And upon that, new endeavours were used to bring the common council to deliver up their charter: yet that could not be compassed, though it was brought much nearer in the numbers of the voices than was imagined could ever be done^h.

^h (See Ralph's Hist. of England, vol. I. p. 716, where it is observed, that it does not appear, that any question of this nature was ever put to the common council. According to North, "after judgment was pronounced, the common council thought fit to agree that an humble pe-

There were other very severe proceedings at this 1682.
time with relation to particular persons. Pilkinton ^{Some other}
was sheriff of London the former year; an honest ^{severe judgments.}
but an indiscreet man, that gave himself great liber-
ties in discourse. He being desired to go along 536
with the mayor and aldermen to compliment the
duke upon his return from Scotland, declined going,
and reflected on him as one concerned in the burn-
ing of the city. Two aldermen said they heard
that, and swore it against him. Sir Patience Ward,
the mayor of the former year, seeing him go into
that discourse, had diverted him from it, but heard
not the words which the others swore to: and he
deposed, that to the best of his remembrance he
said not those words. Pilkinton was cast in an
100,000*l.* damages, the most excessive that had ever
been givenⁱ. But the matter did not stop there:
Ward was indicted of perjury, it being said, that
since he swore that the words were not spoken, and
that the jury had given a verdict upon the evidence
that they were spoken, by consequence he was guilty
of perjury. It was said on the other side, that when
two swear one way, and a third swears another way,
a jury may believe the two better than the one:
but it is not certain from thence that he is perjured:
if that were law, no man would be a witness; if, be-
cause they of the other side were believed, he should
be therefore convicted of perjury. A man's swearing

“tition should be presented to
“the king. It was conceived
“in general terms, begging
“his majesty's pardon and fa-
“vour to the distressed city.”
Examen of the Critical History,
p. 633. Compare Ralph's His-

tory, vol. I. p. 717.)

ⁱ (“By the law of England
“ratified in the great charter,
“no fine ought to extend to
“the total ruin of a criminal.”
Hume's History of England,
Charles II. p. 350.

1682. to a negative, that such words were not spoken, did only amount to this, that he did not hear them : and it would be hard to prove that he who swore so had heard them. But Ward proved by him that took the trial in short hand, as he had done some others with great approbation, that he had said, *to the best of his remembrance these words were not spoken by Pilkinton*: upon which Jefferies had said, that his invention was better than his memory : and the attorney general, in summing up the evidence to the jury, had said, they ought to have no regard to Ward's evidence, since he had only deposed upon his memory. Yet that jury returned Ward guilty of perjury : and it was intended, if he had not gone out of the way, to have set him on the pillory^k. The truth is, juries became at that time the shame of the nation, as well as a reproach to religion^l: for they were packed, and prepared to bring in verdicts as they were directed, and not as matters appeared on the evidence.

1683.
All people
possessed
with great
fears.

Thus affairs were going on all the year eighty-two, and to the beginning of eighty-three. The earl of Shaftsbury had been for making use of the heat the city was in during the contest about the sheriffs ; and thought they might have created a

^k (Ralph, in his Hist. of England, observes, that, if any evidence in such times as these is to be credited, sir Patience Ward swore first, that Pilkington was not in the room, when the duke was talked of, and afterwards, that when Hooker took exception to Pilkington's words, he, Ward, laid his hand

on Pilkington's mouth, which latter part of his evidence falsified the former, and furnished matter for a charge of perjury against him. Ralph also remarks, that " the juries are to " be blamed only for their rigour, not for the injustice of " their verdicts." p. 697.)

^l So they are now. S.

great disturbance, and made themselves masters of the tower: and he believed, the first appearance of the least disorder would have prevailed on the king to yield every thing. The duke of Monmouth, who understood what a rabble was, and what troops were, looked on this as a mad exposing of themselves and of their friends. The lords Essex and Russel were of the same mind. So lord Shaftsbury, seeing they could not be engaged into action, flew out against them. He said, the duke of Monmouth was sent into the party by the king for this end, to keep all things quiet, till the court had gained its point: he said, lord Essex had also made his bargain, and was to go to Ireland; and that among them lord Russel was deceived. With this he endeavoured to blast them in the city: they studied to prevent the ill effects that those jealousies which he was infusing into the citizens might have among them. So the duke of Monmouth gave an appointment to lord Shaftsbury or some of his friends to meet him, and some others that he should bring along with him, at Shepherd's, a wine merchant in whom they had an entire confidence. The night before this appointment, lord Russel came to town on the account of his uncle's illness. The duke of Monmouth went to him, and told him of the appointment, and desired he would go thither with him: he consented, the rather because he intended to taste some of that merchant's wine. At night, they went with lord Grey and sir Thomas Armstrong. When they came, they found none there but Rumsey and Ferguson, two of lord Shaftsbury's tools that he employed: upon which they, seeing no better company, resolved immediately to go back. But lord Russel called for a taste

1683.

Monmouth
and Russel
at Shep-
herd's.

537

1683. of the wines : and while they were bringing it him up, Rumsey and Armstrong fell into a discourse of surprising the guards. Rumsey fancied it might have been easily done : Armstrong, that had commanded them, shewed him his mistakes. This was no consultation about what was to be done, but only about what might have been done. Lord Russel spoke nothing upon the subject : but as soon as he had tasted his wines they went away^m. It may seem that this is too light a passage to be told so copiously : but much depends on it. Lord Shaftsbury had one meeting with the earls of Essex and Salisbury before he went out of England. Fear, anger, and disappointment had wrought so much on him, that lord Essex told me he was much broken in his thoughts : his notions were wild and impracticable : and he was glad that he was gone out of England : but said, that he had done them already a great
538 deal of mischief, and would have done more if he had stayed. As soon as he was gone, the lords and all the chief men of the party saw their danger from forward sheriffs, willing juries, mercenary judges, and bold witnesses. So they resolved to go home, and be silent, to speak and to meddle as little as might be in public business, and to let the present ill temper the nation was fallen into wear out : for they did not doubt but the court, especially as it was now managed by the duke, would soon bring the nation again into its wits by their ill conduct

^m (“ The marquess of Winchester is not named in the bishop’s History, or in Echard’s, and the common writers. But he came to Shepherd’s house, and looking

“ through the keyhole saw Rumsey there, so he went away, and would not be seen with him.” Oldmixon’s *Hist. of the Stuarts*, p. 679.)

and proceedings. All that was to be done was to keep up as much as they could a good spirit with relation to elections of parliament, if one should be called ⁿ. 1683.

The duke of Monmouth resolved to be advised chiefly by lord Essex. He would not be alone in that, but named lord Russel, against whom no objection could lie: and next to him he named Algonoon Sidney, brother to the earl of Leicester, a man of most extraordinary courage, a steady man, even to obstinacy, sincere, but of a rough and boisterous temper, that could not bear contradiction, [but would give foul language upon it.] He seemed to be a Christian, but in a particular form of his own: he thought it was to be like a divine philosophy in the mind: but he was against all public worship, and every thing that looked like a church. He was stiff to all republican principles, and such an enemy to every thing that looked like monarchy, that he set himself in a high opposition against Cromwell when he was made protector. He had studied the history of government in all its branches beyond any man I ever knew^o. He was ambassador in Den-

Monmouth
and some
others meet
often to-
gether.

ⁿ (Ralph, in his History, vol. I. p. 722. compares this account of the intentions and actions of the chief men of the party with that, which the author himself gives a little afterwards in pages 539, 540. folio edit.)

^o When Sidney's large book upon government came out, in the reign of king William, sir William Temple asked me if I had seen it: I told him I had read it all over; he could not help admiring at my patience, but desired to know what I

thought of it: I said it seemed to me wrote with a design to destroy all government: sir William answered, that was for want of knowing the author, for there was one passage in it that explained the whole, which was this: "If there be any such thing as divine right, it must be where one man is better qualified to govern another than he is to govern himself: such a person seems by God and nature designed to govern the other, for his

1683. mark^P at the time of the restoration, but did not come
 back till the year seventy-eight, when the parliament
 was pressing the king into a war. The court of
 France obtained leave for him to return. He did all he
 could to divert people from that war^q: so that some
 took him for a pensioner of France: but to those to
 whom he durst speak freely he said, he knew it was
 all a juggle; that our court was in an entire confi-
 dence with France, and had no other design in this
 shew of a war but to raise an army, and keep it be-
 yond sea till it was trained and modelled. Sidney
 had a particular way of insinuating himself into peo-
 ple that would hearken to his notions, and not con-
 tradict him. He tried me: but I was not so sub-
 missive a hearer: so we lived afterwards at a great
 distance. He wrought himself into lord Essex's
 confidence to such a degree, that he became the
 539 master of his spirit^r. He had a great kindness for
 lord Howard, as was formerly told: for that lord
 hated both the king and monarchy, as much as he
 himself did. He prevailed on lord Essex to take
 lord Howard into their secrets, though lord Essex
 had expressed such an ill opinion of him a little be-
 fore to me, as to say he wondered how any man
 would trust himself alone with him. Lord Russel,

“benefit and happiness.” Now
 I that knew him very well, can
 assure you, that he looked upon
 himself to be that very “man,
 “so qualified to govern the rest
 “of all mankind.” D.

^P For Cromwell. S. (He was
 appointed ambassador in 1659
 by the council of state.)

^q (This account of his op-
 posing a war with France is
 confirmed by his letters to

Henry Savile, ambassador in
 that country, first edited in
 1742. See particularly p. 150.)

^r This perhaps may explain
 what is said of the earl of Es-
 sex in lord Gray's paper, here-
 after mentioned, page 646. fol.
 ed. By that paper it looks as if
 he (lord Essex) was become in-
 clined to republicanism. But
 lord Russel far otherwise; see
 page 562. fol. ed. O.

though his cousin german, had the same ill opinion of him. Yet Sidney overcame both their aversions. 1683.

Lord Howard had made the duke of Monmouth enter into confidence with Sidney, who used to speak very slightly of him, and to say, it was all one to him whether James duke of York or James duke of Monmouth was to succeed. Yet lord Howard perhaps put a notion into him, which he offered often to me, that a prince who knew there was a flaw in his title would always govern well, and consider himself as at the mercy of the right heir, if he was not in all things in the interests and hearts of his people, which was often neglected by princes that relied on an undoubted title. Lord Howard, by a trick put both on the duke of Monmouth and Sidney, brought them to be acquainted. He told Sidney that the duke of Monmouth was resolved to come some day alone and dine with him: and he made the duke of Monmouth believe that Sidney desired this, that so he might not seem to come and court the duke of Monmouth: and said that some regard was to be had to his temper and age. Hamden was also taken into their secret: he was the grandson of him that had pleaded the cause of England in the point of the ship-money with king Charles the first. His father was a very eminent man, and had been zealous in the exclusion: he was a young man of great parts; one of the learnedest gentlemen I have ever known; for he was a critic both in Latin, Greek, and Hebrew: he was a man of great heat and vivacity, but too unequal in his temper: he had once great principles of religion: but he was much corrupted by P. Simon's conversation at Paris^s.

^s (The truth of this account is confirmed by a passage of some

1683.

They treat
with some
of the Scot-
ish nation.

With these men the duke of Monmouth met often. His interest in Scotland, both by the dependence that his wife's great estate brought him, but chiefly by the knowledge he had of their affairs while he was among them, and by the confidence he knew they had all in him, made him turn his thoughts much towards that kingdom, as the properest scene of action. He had met often with lord Argile while he was in London, and had many conferences with him of the state of that kingdom, and of what might be done there: and he thought the business of Carolina was a very proper blind to bring up some of the Scotch gentlemen under the appearance of treating about that. They upon this agreed to send one Aaron Smith to Scotland, to desire that some men of absolute confidence might be sent up for that end. So when the proclamation that was formerly mentioned was published, it spread such an universal apprehension through all the suspected counties, that they looked on themselves as marked out to destruction: and it is very natural for people under such impressions to set themselves to look out for remedies as soon as they can.

In the beginning of April some of them came up. The person that was most entirely trusted, and to whom the journey proved fatal, was Baillie, of

length, in Mr. Hampden's Confession of his offences against Piety and Religion, which had been placed by his direction in the hands, successively, of bishops Patrick and Kidder, and which was printed in the London Chronicle for Feb. 1759. The number of the Chronicle, in which the Confession appears, is preserved in the earl

of Onslow's copy of this History. This letter of Mr. Hampden is also to be seen in Duntun's Hazard of a Death-bed Repentance, p. 34. and in Noble's History of the Protectorate House of Cromwell, vol. II. p. 82. Bishop Burnet speaks again of this gentleman at pp. 646. 647. folio edit.)

whose unjust treatment upon Carstairs's information 1683.
an account was formerly given^t. He was my cousin
german: so I knew him well. He was in the pres-
byterian principles, but was a man of great piety
and virtue, learned in the law, in mathematics, and
in languages: I went to him, as soon as I heard he
was come, in great simplicity of heart, thinking of
nothing but of Carolina. I was only afraid they
might go too much into the company of the Eng-
lish, and give true representations of the state of
affairs in Scotland: this might be reported about by
men that would name them: and that might bring
them into trouble. But a few weeks after, I found
they came not to me as they were wont to do: and
I heard they were often with Lord Russel. I was
apprehensive of this: and lord Essex being in the
country, I went to him, to warn him of the danger
I feared lord Russel might be brought into by this
conversation with my countrymen. He diverted
me from all my apprehensions; and told me, I
might depend on it, lord Russel would be in no-
thing without acquainting him: and he seemed to
agree entirely with me, that a rising in the state in
which things were then would be fatal. I always
said, that when the root of the constitution was
struck at to be overturned, then I thought subjects
might defend themselves: but I thought jealousies
and fears, and particular acts of injustice, could not
warrant this. He did agree with me in this: he
thought, the obligation between prince and subject
was so equally mutual, that upon a breach on the
one side, the other was free: but though he thought

^t (See above, page 400, folio edit.)

1683. the late injustice in London, and the end that was
driven at by it, did set them at liberty to look to
541 themselves, yet he confessed things were not ripe
enough yet, and that an ill laid and ill managed
rising would be our ruin. I was then newly come
from writing my history of the reformation; and
did so evidently see, that the struggle for lady Jean
Grey, and Wyat's rising was that which threw the
nation so quickly into popery after king Edward's
days, (for such as had rendered themselves obnox-
ious in those matters saw no other way to secure
themselves, and found their turning was a sure
one,) that I was now very apprehensive of this; be-
sides that I thought it was yet unlawful. What
passed between the Scots and the English lords I
know not; only that lord Argile, who was then in
Holland, asked at first 20,000*l.* for buying a stock
of arms and ammunition, which he afterwards
brought down to 8000*l.* and a thousand horse to be
sent into Scotland: upon which he undertook the
conduct of that matter. I know no further than
general hints of their matters: for though Hamden
offered frequently to give me a particular account
of it all, knowing that I was writing the history of
that time, yet I told him, that till by an indemnity
that whole matter was buried, I would know none
of those secrets, which I might be obliged to reveal,
or to lie and deny my knowledge of them: so to
avoid that, I put it off at that time. And when I
returned to England at the revolution, we appointed
often to meet, in order to a full relation of it all.
But by several accidents it went off, as a thing is
apt to do which one can recover at any time. And
so his unhappy end came on before I had it from

him^u. I know this, that no money was raised. 1683.

But the thing had got some vent; for my own brother, a zealous presbyterian, who was come from Scotland, it not being safe for him to live any longer in that kingdom, knowing that he had conversed with many that had been in the rebellion, told me, there was certainly somewhat in agitation among them, about which some of their teachers had let out somewhat very freely to himself: how far that matter went, and how the scheme was laid, I cannot tell; and so must leave it in the dark. Their contract for the project of Carolina seemed to go on apace: they had sent some thither the former year, who were now come back, and brought them a particular account of every thing: they likewise, to cover their negotiations with lord Argyle, sent some over to him; but with the blind of instructions for buying ships in Holland, and other things necessary for their transportation.

While this matter was thus in a close manage-542
ment among them, there was another company of lord Shaftsbury's creatures that met in the Temple, in the chambers of one West, a witty and active man, full of talk, and believed to be a determined atheist. Rumsey and Ferguson came constantly thither. The former of these was an officer in Cromwell's army, who went into Portugal with the forces that served there under Schomberg. He did a brave action in that service: and Schomberg writ a particular letter to the king setting it out: upon which he got a place: and he had applied himself to lord Shaftsbury as his patron. He was much trusted by him, and sent often about on messages. Once

Other conspirators meet at the same time on designs of assassinating the king.

^u (See afterwards, page 647, folio edit.)

1683. or twice he came to lord Russel, but it was upon indifferent things. Lord Russel said to me, that at that very time he felt such a secret aversion to him, that he was in no danger of trusting him much. He was one of the bold talkers, and kept chiefly among lord Shaftsbury's creatures. He was upon all the secret of his going beyond sea; which seemed to shew, that he was not then a spy of the court's, which some suspected he was all along. Ferguson was a hot and a bold man, whose spirit was naturally turned to plotting: he was always unquiet, and setting people on to some mischief: I knew a private thing of him, by which it appeared he was a profligate knave, and could cheat those that trusted him entirely: so though he, being a Scottish man, took all the ways he could to be admitted into some acquaintance with me, I would never see him or speak with him: and I did not know his face till the revolution: he was cast out by the presbyterians: and then went among the independents, where his boldness raised him to some figure, though he was at bottom a very empty man: he had the management of a secret press, and of a purse that maintained it: and he gave about most of the pamphlets writ of that side: and with some he passed for the author of them: and such was his vanity, because this made him more considerable, that he was not ill pleased to have that believed; though it only exposed him so much the more. With these, Goodenough, who had been under-sheriff of London in Bethel's year, and one Halloway of Bristol, met often, and had a great deal of rambling discourse, to shew how easy a thing it was of the sudden to raise four thousand men in the city.

Goodenough, by reason of his office, knew the city 1683. well, and pretended he knew many men of so much credit in every corner of it, and on whom they might depend, as could raise that number, which he 543 reckoned would quickly grow much stronger: and it is probable, this was the scheme with which lord Shaftsbury was so possessed, that he thought it might be depended on. They had many discourses of the heads of a declaration proper for such a rising, and disputed of these with much subtilty, as they thought: and they intended to send Halloway to Bristol, to try what could be done there at the same time. But all this was only talk, and went no further than to a few of their own confidants. Rumsey, Ferguson, and West were often talking of the danger of executing this, and that the shorter and surer way was to kill the two brothers. One Runbold, who had served in Cromwell's army, came twice among them; and while they were in that wicked discourse, which they expressed by the term *lopping*. He upon that told them, he had a farm near Hodsden, in the way to Newmarket: and there was a moat cast round his house, through which the king sometimes passed in his way thither. He said, once the coach went through quite alone, without any of the guards about it; and that, if he had laid any thing cross the way to have stopped the coach but a minute, he could have shot them both, and have rode away through grounds that he knew so well, that it should not have been possible to have followed him. Upon which they ran into much wicked talk about the way of executing that. But nothing was ever fixed on: all was but talk ^v. At

^v All plots begin with talk. S.

1683. one time lord Howard was among them: and they talked over their several schemes of lopping. One of them was to be executed in the playhouse. Lord Howard said, he liked that best, for then they would die in their calling. This was so like his way of talk, that it was easily believed, though he always denied it. Walcot, an Irish gentleman that had been of Cromwell's army, was now in London, and got into that company: and he was made believe, that the thing was so well laid, that many both in city and country were engaged in it. He liked the project of a rising, but declared he would not meddle in their lopping. So this wicked knot of men continued their caballings from the time that the earl of Shaftsbury went away: and these were the subjects of their discourses. The king went constantly to Newmarket for about a month both in April and October. In April while he was there a fire broke out, and burnt a part of the town: upon which the king came back a week sooner than he intended.

544 While all these things were thus going on, there
A plot is discovered. was one Keeling, an anabaptist, in London, who was sinking in his business, and began to think that of a witness would be the better trade. Goodenough had employed him often to try their strength in the city, and to count on whom they could depend for a sudden rising: he had also talked to him of the design of killing the two brothers: so he went and discovered all he could to Leg, at that time made lord Dartmouth. Leg made no great account of it, but sent him to Jenkins. Jenkins took his depositions, but told him he could not proceed in it without more witnesses: so he went to his brother, who

was a man of heat in his way, but of probity, who did not incline to ill designs, and less to discover them^x. Keeling carried his brother to Goodenough, and assured him he might be depended on. So Goodenough run out into a rambling discourse of what they both could and would do: and he also spoke of killing the king and the duke, which would make their work easy. When they left him, the discoverer pressed his brother to go along with him to Westminster, where he pretended business, but stopped at Whitehall. The other was uneasy, longing to get out of his company, to go to some friends for advice upon what had happened. But he drew him on: and at last, he not knowing whither he was going, he drew him into Jenkins's office: and there told the secretary he had brought another witness, who had heard the substance of the plot from Goodenough's own mouth just then. His brother was deeply struck with this cheat and surprise, but could not avoid the making oath to Jenkins of all he had heard. The secretary, whose phlegmatic head was not turned for such a work, let them both go, and sent out no warrants, till he had communicated the matter to the rest of the ministry, the king being then at Windsor. So Keeling, who had been thus drawn into the snare by his brother, sent advertisements to Goodenough, and all the other persons whom he had named, to go out of the way.

Rumsey and West were at this time perpetually together: and apprehending that they had trusted

^x (Compare Ralph's History of England, vol. I. p. 725. who shews that Keeling's brother was a voluntary witness by the man's going a second time to secretary Jenkins's office, and joining in a second information.)

1683. themselves to too many persons, who might discover
 ——— them, they laid a story, in which they resolved to
 agree so well together, that they should not con-
 tradict one another. They framed their story thus :
 A forged
 story laid
 by Rumsey
 and West. that they had laid the design of their rising to be
 executed on the seventeenth of November, the day
 of queen Elizabeth's coming to the crown, on which
 545 the citizens used to run together, and carry about
 popes in procession, and burn them : so that day
 seemed proper to cover their running together, till
 they met in a body. Others, they said, thought it
 best to do nothing on that day, the rout being usu-
 ally at night, but to lay their rising for the next
 Sunday, at the hour of people's being at church.
 This was laid to shew how near the matter was to
 the being executed. But the part of their story
 that was the best laid, (for this looked ridiculous,
 since they could not name any one person of any
 condition that was to head this rising,) was, that
 they pretended that Rumbold had offered them his
 house in the heath for executing the design^y. It
 was called Rye : and from thence this was called
 the Rye-plot. He asked forty men, well armed and
 mounted, whom Rumsey and Walcot were to com-
 mand in two parties : the one was to engage the
 guards, if they should be near the coach : and the
 other was to stop the coach, and to murder the
 king and the duke. Rumsey took the wicked part
 on himself, saying, that Walcot had made a scruple
 of killing the king, but none of engaging the guards :
 so Rumsey was to do the execution. And they said,

^y (Rumbald, when tried in the next reign for his participation in the earl of Argyle's rebellion, denied that an at- tempt on the king's life had even been proposed to him. See Ralph's History of England, vol. I. p. 872.)

they were divided in their minds what to do next : 1683.

some were for defending the moat till night, and then to have gone off : others were for riding through grounds in a shorter way towards the Thames. Of these forty, they could name but eight. But it was pretended that Walcot, Good-enough, and Rumbold, had undertaken to find both the rest of the men and the horses : for, though upon such an occasion men would have taken care to have had sure and well tried horses, this also was said to be trusted to others. As for arms, West had bought some, as on a commission for a plantation : and these were said to be some of the arms with which they were to be furnished ; though when they were seen, they seemed very improper for such a service. I saw all West's narrative, which was put in lord Rochester's hands : and a friend of mine borrowed it of him, and lent it me. They were so wise at court, that they would not suffer it to be printed ; for then it would have appeared too gross to be believed ^z.

But the part of it all that seemed the most amazing was, that it was to have been executed on the day in which the king had intended to return from Newmarket. But the happy fire that sent him away a week sooner, had quite defeated the whole plot, while it was within a week of its execution, and neither horses, men, nor arms yet provided. This 546 seemed to be so eminent a providence, that the whole nation was struck with it : and both preachers and poets had a noble subject to enlarge on, and

^z (Compare North's Examen of Kennett's Complete History, p. 380, where it appears, that both West and Rumsey sur-rendered themselves without an assurance of pardon.)

1683. to shew how much the king and the duke were under the watchful care of Providence.

Within three days after Keeling's discovery the plot broke out, and became the whole discourse of the town. Many examinations were taken, and several persons were clapt up upon it. Among these, Wildman was one, who had been an agitator in Cromwell's army, and had opposed his protectorship. After the restoration, he being looked on as a high republican was kept long in prison; where he had studied law and physic so much, that he passed as a man very knowing in those matters. He had a way of creating in others a great opinion of his sagacity, and had great credit with the duke of Buckingham, and was now very active under Sidney's conduct. He was seized on, and his house was searched: in his cellars there happened to be two small field-pieces that belonged to the duke of Buckingham, and that lay in York-house when that was sold, and was to be pulled down: Wildman carried those two pieces, which were finely wrought, but of little use, into his cellars, where they were laid on ordinary wooden carriages, and no way fitted for any service: yet these were carried to Whitehall, and exposed to view, as an undeniable proof of a rebellion designed, since here was their cannon.

Several persons came to me from court, assuring me that there was full proof made of a plot. Lord Howard coming soon after them to see me, talked of the whole matter in his spiteful way with so much scorn, that I really thought he knew of nothing, and by consequence I believed there was no truth in all these discoveries. He said, the court

knew they were sure of juries, and they would furnish themselves quickly with witnesses: and he spoke of the duke as of one that would be worse, not only than queen Mary, but than Nero: and with eyes and hands lifted to heaven, he vowed to me, that he knew of no plot, and that he believed nothing of it. 1683.

Two days after, a proclamation came out for seizing on some who could not be found: and among these, Rumsey and West were named. The next day West delivered himself: and Rumsey came in a day after him. These two brought out their story, which, how incredible soever it was, passed so for certain, that any man that seemed to doubt it was concluded to be in it. That of defending themselves within mud walls and a moat, looked like the invention of a lawyer, who could not lay a military contrivance with any sort of probability. Nor did it appear where the forty horse were to be lodged, and how they were to be brought together. All these were thought objections that could be made by none but those who either were of it, or wished well to it. These new witnesses had also heard of the conferences that the duke of Monmouth and the other lords had with those who were come from Scotland, but knew nothing of it themselves. Rumsey, did likewise remember the discourse at Shepherd's. 547

When the council found the duke of Monmouth and lord Russel were named, they writ to the king to come to London: they would not venture to go further without his presence and leave. A messenger of the council was sent the morning before the king came, to wait at lord Russel's gate, to have Russel and some others were put in prison upon it.

1683. stopped him, if he had offered to go out. This was observed; for he walked many hours there: and it was looked on as done on purpose to frighten him away: for his back gate was not watched: so for several hours he might have gone away if he had intended it. He heard that Rumsey had named him: but he knew he had not trusted him, and he never reflected on the discourse at Shepherd's. He sent his wife among his friends for advice. They were of different minds: but since he said he apprehended nothing from any thing he had said to Rumsey, they thought his going out of the way would give the court too great an advantage, and would look like a confessing of guilt. So this agreeing with his own mind, he stayed at home till the king was come: and then a messenger was sent to carry him before the council. He received it very composedly, and went thither. Rumsey had also said, that at Shepherd's there was some discourse of Trenchard's undertaking to raise a body out of Taunton, and of his failing in it: so lord Russel was examined upon that, the king telling him, that nobody suspected him of any design against his person, but that he had good evidence of his being in designs against his government. Lord Russel protested, he had heard nothing relating to Trenchard: and said to the last, that either it was a fiction of Rumsey's, or it had passed between him and Armstrong, while he was walking about the room, or tasting the wines at Shepherd's; for he had not heard a word of it. Upon all this he was sent a close prisoner to the tower.

548 Sidney was brought next before the council. But his examination lasted not long. He said, he must

make the best defence he could, if they had any proof against him: but he would not fortify their evidence by any thing he should say. And indeed that was the wisest course; for the answering questions upon such examinations is a very dangerous thing: every word that is said is laid hold on, that can be turned against a man's self or his friends, and no regard is had to what he might say in favour of them: and it had been happy for the rest, especially for Baillie, if they had all held to this maxim. There was at that time no sort of evidence against Sidney, so that his commitment was against law. Trenchard was also examined: he denied every thing. But one point of his guilt was well known: he was the first man that had moved the exclusion in the house of commons: so he was reckoned a lost man.

Baillie and two other gentlemen of Scotland, both Campbells, had changed their lodgings while the town was in this fermentation: and upon that they were seized on as suspected persons, and brought before the king. He himself examined them, and first questioned them about the design against his person, which they very frankly answered, and denied they knew any thing about it. Then he asked them, if they had been in any consultations with lords or others in England, in order to an insurrection in Scotland. Baillie faltered at this, for his conscience restrained him from lying^a. He said, he did not know the importance of those questions, nor what use might be made of his answers: he desired to see them in writing; and then he would consider

^a The author and his cousins could not tell lies, but they could plot. S.

1683. how to answer them. Both the king and the duke threatened him upon this : and he seemed to neglect that with so much of the air of a philosopher, that it provoked them out of measure against him. The other two were so lately come from Scotland, that they had seen nobody, and knew nothing. Baillie was loaded by a special direction with very heavy irons : so that for some weeks his life was a burden to him. Cockran, another of those who had been concerned in this treaty, was complained of, as having talked very freely of the duke's government of Scotland. Upon which the Scottish secretary sent a note to him desiring him to come to him ; for it was intended only to give him a reprimand, and to have ordered him to go to Scotland. But he knew his own secret : so he left his lodgings, and
 549 got beyond sea. This shewed the court had not yet got full evidence : otherwise he would have been taken up, as well as others were.

Monmouth
and others
escaped.

As soon as the council rose, the king went to the duchess of Monmouth's, and seemed so much concerned for the duke of Monmouth, that he wept as he spoke to her. That duke told a strange passage relating to that visit to the lord Cutts, from whom I had it. The king told his lady, that some were to come and search her lodgings : but he had given order that no search should be made in her apartments : so she might conceal him safely in them. But the duke of Monmouth added, that he knew him too well to trust him : so he went out of his lodgings. And it seems he judged right : for the place that was first searched for him was her rooms : but he was gone^b : and he gave that for the reason

^b Mr. Francis Gwin (secretary at war in queen Anne's time)

why he could never trust the king after that. It is 1683.
 not likely the king meant to proceed to extremities
 with him, but that he intended to have him in his
 own hands, and in his power.

An order was sent to bring up the lord Grey,
 which met him coming up. He was brought before
 the council, where he behaved himself with great
 presence of mind. He was sent to the tower. But
 the gates were shut: so he staid in the messenger's
 hands all night, whom he furnished so liberally with
 wine, that he was dead drunk. Next morning he
 went with him to the tower gate, the messenger
 being again fast asleep^c. He himself called at the
 tower gate, to bring the lieutenant of the tower to
 receive a prisoner. But he began to think he might
 be in danger: he found Rumsey was one witness:
 and if another should come in, he was gone: so he
 called for a pair of oars, and went away, leaving
 the drunken messenger fast asleep. Warrants were
 sent for several other persons: some went out of
 the way, and others were dismissed after some
 months' imprisonment. The king shewed some ap-
 pearance of sincerity in examining the witnesses:
 he told them he would not have a growing evidence:
 and so he charged them to tell out at once all that
 they knew: he led them into no accusations by ask-
 ing them any questions: he only asked them if
 Oates was in their secret: they answered, that they
 all looked on him as such a rogue, that they would
 not trust him. The king also said, he found lord

told me, that as soon as this
 book was published, he asked
 the duchess of Monmouth if
 she remembered any thing of
 this story; she answered, it

was impossible she should, for
 there was not one word of it
 true. D.

^c Is this a blunder? S.

1683. Howard was not among them, and he believed that
 ————— was upon the same account. There were many
 more persons named, and more particulars set down
 550 in West's narrative, than the court thought fit to
 make use of: for they had no appearance of truth
 in them.

Lord Russel, from the time of his imprisonment, looked upon himself as a dead man, and turned his thoughts wholly to another world. He read much in the scriptures, particularly in the psalms, and read Baxter's dying thoughts. He was as serene and calm as if he had been in no danger at all. A committee of council came to examine him upon the design of seizing on the guards, and about his treating with the Scots. He answered them civilly; and said, that he was now preparing for his trial, where he did not doubt but he should answer every thing that could be objected to him. From him they went to Sidney, who treated them more roughly: he said, it seemed they wanted evidence, and therefore they were come to draw it from his own mouth; but they should have nothing from him. Upon this examination of lord Russel, in which his treating with the Scots was so positively charged on him, as a thing of which they were well assured, his lady desired me to see who this could be that had so charged him: but this appeared to be only an artifice, to draw a confession from him. Cochran was gone: and Baillie was a close prisoner, and was very ill used: none were admitted to him. I sent to the keeper of the prison to let him want for nothing, and that I should see him paid. I also at his desire sent him books for his entertainment, for which I was threatened with a prison. I said, I was his

nearest kinsman in the place, and this was only to do as I would be done by. From what I found among the Scots I quieted the fears of lord Russel's friends. 1683.

Lord Howard was still going about, and protesting to every person he saw that there was no plot, and that he knew of none: yet he seemed to be under a consternation all the while. Lord Russel told me, he was with him when the news was brought that West had delivered himself, upon which he saw him change colour: and he asked him, if he apprehended any thing from him? He confessed, he had been as free with him as with any man. Hamden saw him afterwards under great fears: and upon that he wished him to go out of the way, if he thought there was matter against him, and if he had not a strength of mind to suffer any thing that might happen to him. The king spoke of him with such contempt, that it was not probable that he was all this while in correspondence with the court.

At last, four days before lord Russel's trial, he 551 was taken in his own house after a long search; and was found standing up within a chimney. As soon as he was taken, he fell a crying: and at his first examination he told, as he said, all that he knew. West and Rumsey had resolved only to charge some of the lower sort; but had not laid every thing so well together, but that they were found contradicting one another. So Rumsey charged West for concealing some things: upon which he was laid in irons, and was threatened with being hanged: for three days he would eat nothing, and seemed resolved to starve himself: but nature overcame his resolutions: and then he told all he knew, and per-

Howard's
confession.

1683. haps more than he knew; for I believe it was at this time that he wrote his narrative. And in that he told a new story of lord Howard, which was not very credible, that he thought the best way of killing the king and the duke, was for the duke of Monmouth to fall into Newmarket with a body of three or four hundred horse when they were all asleep, and so to take them all: as if it had been an easy matter to get such a body together, and to carry them thither invisibly upon so desperate a service. Upon lord Howard's examination, he told a long story of lord Shaftsbury's design of raising the city^d: he affirmed, that the duke of Monmouth had told him, how Trenchard had undertaken to bring a body of men from Taunton, but had failed in it: he confirmed that of a rising intended in the city on the seventeenth or the nineteenth of November last: but he knew of nobody that was to be at the head of it. So this was looked on as only talk. But that which came more home was, that he owned there was a council of six settled, of which he himself was one; and that they had had several debates among them concerning an insurrection, and where it should begin, whether in the city or in the country; but that they resolved to be first well informed concerning the state Scotland was in; and that Sidney had sent Aaron Smith to Scotland, to bring him a sure information from thence, and that he gave him

(^dA zealot in the same cause, the political writer Samuel Johnson, in his *Notes on Burnet's Pastoral Letter*, has the following passage: "If when my lord Shaftsbury was forced to leave his own house, and had secreted himself at Mr.

"Watson's, he talked with Howard of Escrick, about relieving himself and his country, he did amiss, and it was a defect, for talk is but talk, when all is done." p. 100.)

sixty guineas for his journey: more of that matter 1683.

he did not know; for he had gone out of town to the Bath, and to his estate in the country. During his absence, the lords began to apprehend their error in trusting him: and upon it lord Essex said to lord Russel, as the last told me in prison, that the putting themselves in the power of such a man would be their reproach as well as their ruin, for trusting a man of so ill a character: so they resolved to talk 552 no more to him: but at his next coming to town they told him, they saw it was necessary at present to give over all consultations, and to be quiet: and after that they saw him very little. Hamden was upon lord Howard's discovery seized on: he, when examined, desired not to be pressed with questions: so he was sent to the tower.

A party of horse was sent to bring up lord Essex, who had staid all this while at his house in the country; and seemed so little apprehensive of danger, that his own lady did not imagine he had any concern on his mind. He was offered to be conveyed away very safely: but he would not stir. His tenderness for lord Russel was the cause of this: for he thought his going out of the way might incline the jury to believe the evidence the more for his absconding. He seemed resolved, as soon as he saw how that went, to take care of himself. When the party came to bring him up, he was at first in some disorder, yet he recovered himself. But when he came before the council, he was in much confusion. He was sent to the tower: and there he fell under a great depression of spirit: he could not sleep at all. He had fallen before that twice under great fits of the spleen, which returned now upon him

The earl of Essex was sent to the tower.

1683. with more violence. He sent by a servant, whom he had long trusted, and who was suffered to come to him, a very melancholy message to his wife; that what he was charged with was true: he was sorry he had ruined her and her children: but he had sent for the earl of Clarendon, to talk freely to him, who had married his sister. She immediately sent back the servant, to beg of him that he would not think of her or her children, but only study to support his own spirits; and desired him to say nothing to lord Clarendon nor to any body else, till she should come to him, which she was in hope to obtain leave to do in a day or two. Lord Clarendon came to him upon his message: but he turned the matter so well to him, as if he had been only to explain somewhat that he had mistaken himself in, when he was before the council: but as to that for which he was clapt up, he said there was nothing in it, and it would appear how innocent he was. So lord Clarendon went away in a great measure satisfied, as he himself told me. His lady had another message from him, that he was much calmer; especially when he found how she took his condition to heart, without seeming concerned for her own share in it. He ordered many things to be sent to him:

553 and among other things he called at several times for a penknife, with which he used to pare his nails very nicely: so this was thought intended for an amusement. But it was not brought from his house in the country, though sent for. And when it did not come, he called for a razor, and said that would do as well. The king and the duke came to the tower that morning, as was given out, to see some invention about the ordinance. As they were going

into their barge, the cry came after them of what 1683.
 had happened to lord Essex: for his man, thinking
 he staid longer than ordinary in his closet^e, said, he
 looked through the key-hole, and there saw him
 lying dead: upon which the door being broke open,
 he was found dead; his throat cut, so that both the
 jugulars and the gullet were cut, a little above the
aspera arteria. I shall afterwards^f give an ac-
 count of the further inquiry into this matter, which
 passed then universally as done by himself. The
 coroner's jury found it self-murder. And when his
 body was brought home to his own house, and the
 wound was examined by his own surgeon, he said
 to me, it was impossible the wound could be as it
 was, if given by any hand but his own: for except
 he had cast his head back, and stretched up his neck
 all he could, the *aspera arteria* must have been
 cut. But to go on with this tragical day, in which
 I lost the two best friends I had in the world:

The lord Russel's trial was fixed for that day. A ^{The lord Russel's trial.}
 jury was returned that consisted of citizens of Lon-
 don who were not freeholders. So the first point
 argued in law was, whether this could be a legal
 jury. The statute was express: and the reason
 was, that none but men of certain estates might try
 a man upon his life. It was answered, that the
 practice of the city was to the contrary, upon the
 very reason of the law: for the richest men of the
 city were often no freeholders, but merchants, whose
 wealth lay in their trade and stock. So this was
 overruled, and the jury was sworn. They were
 picked out with great care, being men of fair repu-
 tation in other respects, but so engaged in the party

^e He was on the close stool. S.

^f (P. 569.)

1683. for the court, that they were easy to believe any
— thing on that side. Rumsey, Shepherd, and lord
Howard were the witnesses, who deposed according
to what was formerly related. Shepherd swore lord
Russel was twice at his house, though he was never
there but once. And when lord Russel sent him
word after his sentence, that he forgave him all he
had sworn against him, but that he must remember
that he was never within his doors but one single
554 time: to which all the answer Shepherd made was,
that all the while he was in court during the trial
he was under such a confusion, that he scarce knew
what he said. Both Rumsey and he swore, that
lord Russel had expressed his consent to the seizing
on the guards, though they did not swear any one
word that he spoke which imported it: so that here
a man was convicted of treason, for being present
by accident, or for some innocent purpose, where
treasonable matter was discoursed, without bearing
a part in that discouse, or giving any assent by
words or otherwise to what was so discoursed; which
at the most amounts to misprision, or concealment
of treason only. As lord Howard began his evi-
dence, the news of the earl of Essex's death came to
the court. Upon which lord Howard stopped, and
said, he could not go on till he gave vent to his grief
in some tears. He soon recovered himself, and told
all his story. Lord Russel defended himself by
many compurgators, who spoke very fully of his
great worth, and that it was not likely he would en-
gage in ill designs. Some others besides my self
testified, how solemnly lord Howard had denied his
knowledge of any plot upon its first breaking out.
Finch, the solicitor general, said, no regard was to

be had to that, for all witnesses denied at first. It 1683.
 was answered, if these denials had been only to a
 magistrate, or at an examination, it might be thought
 of less moment: but such solemn denials, with as-
 severations, to friends, and officiously offered, shewed
 that such a witness was so bad a man, that no credit
 was due to his testimony. It was also urged, that
 it was not sworn by any of the witnesses, that lord
 Russel had spoken any such words, or words to that
 effect: and without some such indication, it could
 not be known that he hearkened to the discourse, or
 consented to it. Lord Russel also asked, upon what
 statute he was tried: if upon the old statute of the
 twenty-fifth of Edward the third, or if upon the
 statute made declaring what shall be held treason
 during the king's reign? They could not rely on
 the last, because of the limitation of time in it: six
 months, and something more, were passed since the
 time of these discourses: so they relied on the old
 statute. Upon which he asked, where was the overt
 act? For none appeared. It was also said, that by
 that statute the very imagining the king's death,
 when proved by an overt act, was treason: but it
 was only the levying war, and not the imagining to
 levy war against the king, that was treason by that
 statute. Cook and Hale were of this opinion, and
 gave their reasons for it^g. And it seemed that the 555
 parliament that passed the act of treason during the
 present reign were of that mind; for they enume-
 rated consultations to raise war among those things
 which were declared to be treason during that
 reign: this shewed that they did not look on them

^g But see Hale as to this, in his *Hist. Placit. Coronæ*; vol. I.
 page 119, &c. O.

1683. as comprehended within the old statute. The king's counsel pretended, that consultations to seize on the guards were an overt act of a design against the king's person. But those forces that have got the designation of guards appropriated to them, are not the king's guards in law: they are not so much as allowed of by law: for even the lately dissolved long parliament, that was so careful of the king, and so kind to him, would never take notice of the king's forces, much less call them his guards. The guards were only a company of men in the king's pay: so that a design to seize on them amounted to no more, than to a design to seize on a part of the king's army. But the word *guards* sounded so like a security to the king's person, that the design against them was constructed a design against his life: and yet none of the witnesses spoke of any design against the king's person. Lord Howard swore positively, that they had no such design. Yet the one was constructed to be the natural consequence of the other. So that after all the declaiming against a constructive treason in the case of lord Strafford, the court was always running into it, when they had a mind to destroy any that stood in their way. Lord Russel desired that his counsel might be heard to this point of seizing the guards: but that was denied, unless he would confess the fact: and he would not do that, because, as the witnesses had sworn it, it was false. He once intended to have related the whole fact, just as it was: but his counsel advised him against it. Some of his friends were for it, who thought that it could amount to no more than a concealment and misprision of treason. Yet the counsel distinguished between a bare knowledge,

and a concealing that, and a joining designedly in council with men that did design treason: for in that case, though a man should differ in opinion from a treasonable proposition, yet his mixing in council with such men will in law make him a traitor. Lord Russel spoke but little: yet in few words he touched on all the material points of law that had been suggested to him. Finch^h summed up the evidence against him: but in that, and in several other trials afterwards, he shewed more of a vicious eloquence, in turning matters with some subtlety against the prisoners, than of solid or sincere reasoning. Jefferies would shew his zeal, and speak 556 after him: but it was only an insolent declamation, such as all his were, full of fury and indecent invectives. Pemberton was the head of the court, the other bench not being yet filled. He summed up the evidence at first very fairly: but in conclusion he told the jury, that a design to seize the guards was surely a design against the king's life. But though he struck upon this, which was the main point, yet it was thought that his stating the whole matter with so little eagerness against lord Russel, was that which lost him his place: for he was turned out soon after. Lord Russel's behaviour during the trial was decent and composed: so that he seemed very little concerned in the issue of the matter. He was a man of so much candour, that he spoke little as to the fact: for since he was advised not to tell the whole truth, he could not speak against that which he knew to be true, though in some particulars it had been carried beyond the truth. But he was not allowed to make the difference: so he left that

^h After earl of Aylsford, an arrant rascal. S.

1683. wholly to the jury, who brought in their verdict against him, upon which he received sentence.

He was condemned.

He then composed himself to die with great seriousness. He said, he was sure the day of his trial was more uneasy to him, than that of his execution would be. All possible methods were used to have saved his life : money was offered to the lady Portsmouth, and to all that had credit, and that without measure. He was pressed to send petitions and submissions to the king and to the duke : but he left it to his friends to consider how far these might go, and how they were to be worded. All he was brought to was, to offer to live beyond sea in any place that the king should name, and never to meddle any more in English affairs. But all was in vain : both king and duke were fixed in their resolutions ; but with this difference, as lord Rochester afterwards told me, that the duke suffered some, among whom he was one, to argue the point with himⁱ, but the king could not bear the discourse^k. Some have said, that the duke moved that he might be executed in Southampton-square before his own house, but that the king rejected that as indecent. So Lincolns-Inn-Fields was the place appointed for his execution. The last week of his life he was shut up all the

ⁱ But see the Appendix to Welwood's Memoirs, p. 322. O.

^k My father told the king the pardoning of lord Russel would lay an eternal obligation upon a very great and numerous family, and the taking of his life would never be forgiven; and his father being alive, it could have little effect upon the rest of the family, besides resentments, and certainly there was some regard

due to lord Southampton's daughter and her children. The king answered, "All that is true; but it is as true, that if I do not take his life, he will soon have mine." Which would admit of no reply. D. (Dalrymple, in the Appendix to his Memoirs of Great Britain and Ireland, vol. II. p. 59, has produced this relation from lord Dartmouth's notes.)

mornings, as he himself desired. And about noon I came to him, and staid with him till night. All the while he expressed a very Christian temper, without sharpness or resentment, vanity or affectation. His whole behaviour looked like a triumph over death. Upon some occasions, as at table, or when his friends came to see him, he was decently cheerful. I was by him when the sheriffs came to shew him the warrant for his execution. He read it with indifference: and when they were gone, he told me, it was not decent to be merry with such a matter, otherwise he was near telling Rich, (who though he was now of the other side, yet had been a member of the house of commons, and had voted for the exclusion,) that they should never sit together in that house any more to vote for the bill of exclusion. The day before his death he fell a bleeding at the nose: upon that he said to me pleasantly, I shall not now let blood to divert this: that will be done to-morrow. At night it rained hard: and he said, such a rain to-morrow will spoil a great show, which was a dull thing in a rainy day. He said, the sins of his youth lay heavy upon his mind: but he hoped God had forgiven them, for he was sure he had forsaken them, and for many years he had walked before God with a sincere heart: if in his public actings he had committed errors, they were only the errors of his understanding; for he had no private ends nor ill designs of his own in them: he was still of opinion that the king was limited by law, and that when he broke through those limits his subjects might defend themselves, and restrain him: he thought a violent death was a very desirable way of ending one's life: it was only the being exposed to

1683.

1683. be a little gazed at, and to suffer the pain of one minute, which, he was confident, was not equal to the pain of drawing a tooth. He said, he felt none of those transports that some good people felt; but he had a full calm in his mind, no palpitation at heart, nor trembling at the thoughts of death. He was much concerned at the cloud that seemed to be now over his country: but he hoped his death should do more service, than his life could have done.

His preparation for death.

This was the substance of the discourse between him and me. Tillotson was oft with him that last week. We thought the party had gone too quick in their consultations, and too far; and that resistance in the condition we were then in was not lawful. He said, he had not leisure to enter into discourses of politics; but he thought a government limited by law was only a name, if the subjects might not maintain those limitations by force: otherwise all was at the discretion of the prince: that was contrary to all the notions he had lived in of our government. But he said, there was nothing among them but the embryos of things, that were never
558 like to have any effect, and that were now quite dissolved¹. He thought, it was necessary for him to leave a paper behind him at his death: and because he had not been accustomed to draw such papers, he

¹ (Lord Russel had contributed towards the growth of these embryos, if the following account is to be believed. "Sir Thomas Armstrong has also acquainted me, when we were beyond sea, that Mr. Sheppard had received some thousand pounds from my lord Russel to transmit to my

"lord Argyll, just before the discovery of the plot." *Lord Grey's Confession*, p. 66. Compare Macormick's *Life of Carstares*, prefixed to his *State Papers*, p. 13. and Carstares's Deposition inserted in the Appendix to Sprat's *Account of the Rye-House Conspiracy*, p. 119.)

desired me to give him a scheme of the heads fit to be spoken to, and of the order in which they should be laid: which I did. And he was three days employed for some time in the morning, to write out his speech. He ordered four copies to be made of it, all which he signed; and gave the original, with three of the copies, to his lady, and kept the other to give to the sheriffs on the scaffold. He writ it with great care: and the passages that were tender he writ in papers apart, and shewed them to his lady, and to myself, before he writ them out fair. He was very easy when this was ended. He also writ a letter to the king, in which he asked pardon for every thing he had said or done contrary to his duty, protesting he was innocent as to all designs against his person or government, and that his heart was ever devoted to that which he thought was his true interest. He added, that though he thought he had met with hard measure, yet he forgave all concerned in it from the highest to the lowest; and ended, hoping that his majesty's displeasure at him would cease with his own life, and that no part of it should fall on his wife and children. The day before his death he received the sacrament from Tillotson with much devotion. And I preached two short sermons to him, which he heard with great affection. And we were shut up till towards the evening. Then he suffered his children, that were very young, and some few of his friends, to take leave of him; in which he maintained his constancy of temper, though he was a very fond father. He also parted with his lady with a composed silence: and, as soon as she was gone, he said to me, The bitterness of death is passed: for he

1683. loved and esteemed her beyond expression, as she well deserved it in all respects. She had the command of herself so much, that at parting she gave him no disturbance. He went into his chamber about midnight: and I staid all night in the outward room. He went not to bed till about two in the morning: and was fast asleep at four, when, according to his order, we called him. He was quickly dressed, but would lose no time in shaving: for he said, he was not concerned in his good looks that day.

The trial
and exe-
cution of
Walcot and
others.

He was not ill pleased with the account he heard that morning of the manner of Walcot's death, who, together with one Hone and Rowse, had suffered 559 the day before. These were condemned upon the evidence of the witnesses. Rumsey and West swore fully against Walcot: he had also writ a letter to the secretary, offering to make discoveries, in which, he said, the plot was laid deep and wide. Walcot denied at his death the whole business of the Rye-plot, and of his undertaking to fight the guards while others should kill the king. He said, West had often spoken of it to him in the phrase of *lopping*; and that he always said he would not meddle in it, and that he looked on it as an infamous thing, and as that which the duke of Monmouth would certainly revenge, though West assured him that duke had engaged under his hand to consent to it. This confession of Walcot's, as it shewed himself very guilty, so it made West appear so black, that the court made no more use of him. Hone, a poor tradesman in London, who it seems had some heat, but scarce any sense in him, was drawn in by Keeling, and Lee, another witness, who was also brought

in by Keeling to a very wild thing, of killing the king, but sparing the duke, upon this conceit, that we would be in less danger in being under a professed papist than under the king. Hone had promised to serve in the execution of it, but neither knew when, where, nor how it was to be done: so though he seemed fitter for a bedlam than a trial, yet he was tried the day before the lord Russel, and suffered with the others the day before him. He confessed his own guilt; but said, these who witnessed against him had engaged him in that design, for which they now charged him: but he knew nothing of any other persons, besides himself and the two witnesses. The third was one Rowse, who had belonged to Player, the chamberlain of London; against whom Lee and Keeling swore the same things. He was more affected with a sense of the heat and fury with which he had been acted, than the others were: but he denied, that he was ever in any design against the king's life. He said, the witnesses had let fall many wicked things of that matter in discourse with him: so that he was resolved to discover them, and was only waiting till he could find out the bottom of their designs: but that now they had prevented him. He vindicated all his acquaintance from being any way concerned in the matter, or from approving such designs. These men dying as they did, was such a disgrace to the witnesses, that the court saw it was not fit to make any further use of them. Great use was made of the conjunction of these two plots, one for a rising, and another for an assassination. It was said, that the one was that which gave the heart and hope to the other black conspiracy: by which they were over

1683.

1683. all England blended together as a plot within a plot, which cast a great load on the whole party ^m.

Russel's execution.

Lord Russel seemed to have some satisfaction to find that there was no truth in the whole contrivance of the Rye-plot : so that he hoped that infamy, which now blasted their party, would soon go off. He went into his chamber six or seven times in the morning, and prayed by himself, and then came out to Tillotson and me : he drunk a little tea and some sherry. He wound up his watch ; and said, now he had done with time, and was going to eternity. He asked what he should give the executioner : I told him ten guineas : he said, with a smile, it was a pretty thing to give a fee to have his head cut off. When the sheriffs called him about ten o'clock, lord Cavendish was waiting below to take leave of him. They embraced very tenderly. Lord Russel, after he had left him, upon a sudden thought came back to him, and pressed him earnestly to apply himself more to religion ; and told him what great comfort and support he felt from it now in his extremity. Lord Cavendish had very generously offered to manage his escape, and to stay in prison for him while he should go away in his clothes : but he would not hearken to the motion. The duke of Monmouth had also sent me word, to let him know,

^m (In the king's own Declaration concerning the conspiracy appointed this year to be read in all churches, the two plots do not appear to be confounded with each other. After mentioning the meeting of the principal conspirators to consult about the best means for mastering the guards and seiz-

ing the king's person, it is added, " Whilst this design was forming, some villains were likewise carrying on that horrid and execrable plot of assassinating our royal person and our dearest brother in our coming from New-market." p. 9.)

that, if he thought it could do him any service, he would come in, and run fortunes with him. He answered, it would be of no advantage to him to have his friends die with him. Tillotson and I went in the coach with him to the place of execution. Some of the crowd that filled the streets wept, while others insulted: he was touched with the tenderness that the one gave him, but did not seem at all provoked by the other. He was singing psalms a great part of the way: and said, he hoped to sing better very soon. As he observed the great crowds of people all the way, he said to us, I hope I shall quickly see a much better assembly. When he came to the scaffold, he walked about it four or five times. Then he turned to the sheriffs, and delivered his paper. He protested, he had always been far from any designs against the king's life or government: he prayed God would preserve both, and the protestant religion. He wished all protestants might love one another, and not make way for popery by their animosities.

The substance of the paper he gave them was, ⁵⁶¹ first a profession of his religion, and of his sincerity in it: that he was of the church of England: but wished all would unite together against the common enemy: that churchmen would be less severe, and dissenters less scrupulous. He owned, he had a great zeal against popery, which he looked on as an idolatrous and bloody religion: but that, though he was at all times ready to venture his life for his religion or his country, yet that would never have carried him to a black or wicked design. No man ever had the impudence to move to him any thing with relation to the king's life: he prayed heartily

Russel's last
speech.

1683. for him, that in his person and government he might be happy both in this world and in the next. He protested, that in the prosecution of the popish plot he had gone on in the sincerity of his heart; and that he never knew of any practice with the witnesses. He owned, he had been earnest in the matter of the exclusion, as the best way, in his opinion, to secure both the king's life and the protestant religion: and to that he imputed his present sufferings: but he forgave all concerned in them; and charged his friends to think of no revenges. He thought his sentence was hard: upon which he gave an account of all that had passed at Shepherd's. From the heats that were in choosing the sheriffs, he concluded that matter would end as it now did: and he was not much surprised to find it fall upon himself: he wished it might end in him: killing by forms of law was the worst sort of murder. He concluded with some very devout ejaculations. After he had delivered this paper, he prayed by himself: then Tillotson prayed with him. After that he prayed again by himself: and then undressed himself, and laid his head on the block, without the least change of countenance: and it was cut off at two strokes.

This was the end of that great and good man: on which I have perhaps enlarged too copiously: but the great esteem I had for him, and the share I had in this matter, will, I hope, excuse it. His speech was so soon printed, that it was selling about the streets an hour after his death: upon which the court was highly inflamed. So Tillotson and I were appointed to appear before the cabinet council. Tillotson had little to say, but only that

lord Russel had shewed him his speech the day before he suffered; and that he spoke to him, what he thought was incumbent on him, upon some parts of it, but he was not disposed to alter itⁿ. I was longer before them. I saw they apprehended I had penned the speech. I told the king, that at his lady's desire I writ down a very particular journal of every passage, great and small, that had happened during my attendance on him: I had just ended it, as I received my summons to attend his majesty: so, if he commanded me, I would read it to him: which upon his command I did. I saw they were all astonished at the many extraordinary things in it: the most important of them are set down in the former relation. The lord keeper asked me, if I intended to print that. I said it was only intended for his lady's private use. The lord keeper, seeing the king silent, added, You are not to think the king is pleased with this, because he says nothing. This was very mean. He then asked me, if I had not studied to dissuade the lord Russel from putting many things in his speech. I said, I had discharged my conscience to him very freely in every particular: but he was now gone: so it was impossible to know, if I should tell any thing of what had passed between us, whether it was true or false: I desired therefore to be excused. The

ⁿ (" Dr. Tillotson himself, though he had wrote that letter to the lord Russel" (in favour of passive obedience) yet would not generally affirm, although asked before the king in person," (by the duke of York,) " that no case was to be excepted. And his

" majesty was so far from being offended at his caution, that he declared to his brother, that the dean spoke like an honest man; and would not have him pressed any further." *Echard's Hist. of the Revolution*, p. 23.)

1683. duke asked me, if he had said any thing to me in confession. I answered, that if he had said any thing to me in confidence, that was enough to restrain me from speaking of it. Only I offered to take my oath, that the speech was penned^o by him-

^o Jesuitical. S. Quære, what that word (*penned*) means? See antea, 558. The paper does not seem clear and ingenuous enough for the character of such a man as my lord Russel, and at such a time with him. He was certainly a very honest man, and truly meant the good of his country in all this transaction, and *that* only. But he was legally convicted, as to the crime, in law, and the evidence of it. It would have been the same with those who engaged in the revolution, if they had not succeeded; and that is his best defence. See lord Grey's paper (lately, 1757, published in print) relating to this plot, where lord Russel *seems* to have been very early and deep in it, as to an insurrection. But be all this as it may, what have bad princes, with their instruments, to answer for hereafter, who, by iniquitous acts of pretended government, force unhappy subjects to resist them, for the sake of necessary defence, and who, if they happen to fail, are treated as criminals, and put often to cruel deaths by those very tyrants that provoked them; acting against them (and making it a justification) under the letter and colour of laws, instituted only and avowedly for the protection and security of good government. Is

not this murder in the sight of an all-judging God? Would not such princes be far safer in this world, and happier in that to come, if, in such cases, they pardoned their miserable subjects, and amended their own future administration of power? I have often thought it a great unhappiness to my lord Russel, and it must have been matter of much uneasiness to a man of his principles and virtues, (public and private,) to have been connected in any undertaking with the men of the characters he united himself with, on this occasion. Monmouth, Shaftsbury, Howard, Gray, Armstrong, &c. Essex, Sidney, and Hampden, were better men in themselves than the others; but the two first were republicans, (the earl of Essex inclined to be so, as lord Gray's paper says. See antea, 538. not very strange with regard to him,) and Hampden (antea, 539.) *then* an infidel, or pretending to be so. *Scarcely* any one of them all could give any credit to the cause. O. (Lady Russell, in her letter to the king, professing her own belief, that the paper her lord delivered to the sheriffs was his, and not doctor Burnet's, intimates, that an argument for its having been composed by the latter was drawn from

self, and not by me. The duke, upon all that passed in this examination, expressed himself so highly offended at me, that it was concluded I would be ruined. Lord Halifax sent me word, that the duke looked on my reading the journal as a studied thing, to make a panegyric on lord Russel's memory. Many pamphlets were writ on that occasion: and I was heavily charged in them all, as the adviser, if not the author, of the speech. But I was advised by all my friends to write no answer, but to bear the malice that was vented upon me with silence; which I resolved to do.

At this time prince George of Denmark came into England to marry the duke's second daughter. The prince of Hanover^P had come over two years before to make addresses to her: but he was scarce got hither, when he received orders from his father not to proceed in that design; for he had agreed a match for him with his brother the duke of Zell for his daughter, which [however it] did at that time more accommodate the family, [it proved very unhappy afterwards to the prince himself.] The marriage that was now made with the brother of Denmark did not at all please the nation: for we knew that the proposition came from France. So it was apprehended, that both courts reckoned they were sure that he would change his religion: in which we have seen, since that time, that our fears were ill grounded. He has lived in all respects the hap-

1683.

Prince
George of
Denmark
married the
princess
Anne.

the use of some phrases familiar to him. See this letter in Lord John Russell's *Life of Lord Russell*, page 238. Dr. Lingard remarks, that Burnet, after the revolution, owned the

plan and order of this speech was his; referring to what occurs before at p. 558. of Burnet's *History*, folio edit.)

^P Afterwards our king. O.

1683. piest with his princess that was possible, except in one particular: for though there was a child born every year for many years, yet they have all died: so that the fruitfulness of marriage that has been known in our age, has been fatally blasted as to the effect of it.

The siege
of Vienna.

The affairs abroad were now every where in a great fermentation. The emperor had governed Hungary so strangely, as at once to persecute the protestants, and to oppress the papists in their liberties, which disposed both to rebel: upon which the malecontents were now in arms, and had possessed themselves of several places in the Upper Hungary; which being near Poland, they were managed and assisted by the French ministers in that kingdom; in which the cardinal of Fourbin was the chief instrument. But they not being able to maintain themselves against the emperor's whole force, Tekeli, who was set at their head, offered all submissions to the Turk, and begged his protection. Upon this that great war broke out, all set on by the practices of the king of France; who, while he was persecuting the protestants in his own kingdom, was at the same time encouraging the rebellion of Hungary, and drawing the Turk into Christendom. I need not enlarge further on a matter so well known as the siege of Vienna: which, if it had been as well prosecuted as it was first undertaken, the town would have been certainly taken, and with that the emperor and his family ruined. The king of France drew a great army together near the frontier of Germany, and seemed to depend upon it that the town would be taken; and that he would be called in by the princes of Germany to protect

them, and upon that have been chosen emperor. 1683.

He at the same time sent Humieres with an army into Flanders, upon a pretension to Alost, that would have seemed very strange in any other court but that. He had once possessed himself, during the war, of Alost: but afterwards he drew his troops out of it. So it not being in his hands when the peace of Nimeguen was made, no mention was made of restoring it. But now it was said, that, it being once in the king's hands by the right of his arms, it was still his, since he had not expressly renounced it: therefore he now demanded it, or to have Luxembourg given him as an equivalent for it. 564 Humieres finding no resistance in the Spanish Netherlands, destroyed and ruined the country, beyond any thing it had felt during the whole war. This was the state of affairs abroad at the time of these trials.

All people thought we should see a parliament presently called, from which both the king and the duke might have expected every thing that they could desire: for the body of the nation was yet so possessed with the belief of the plot, that probably all elections would have gone as the court directed, and scarce any of the other party would have had the courage to have stood for an election any where. But the king of France began to apprehend, that the king might grow so much the master at home, that he would be no longer in their management: and they foresaw that, what success soever the king might have in a parliament with relation to his own affairs, it was not to be imagined but that a house of commons, at the same time that they shewed their submission to the king, would both enable him to resist the pro-

1683. gress of the French arms, and address to him to enter into alliances with the Spaniards and the States. So the French made use of all their instruments to divert our court from calling a parliament : and they got the king to consent to their possessing themselves of Luxembourg : for which, I was told, they gave him 300,000*l.* but I have no certainty of that. Lord Mountague told me of it, and seemed to believe it : and lady Portsmouth valued herself on this of Luxembourg as gained by her ; and called it the last service she did the court of France^q.

The author
went to the
court of
France.

At this time I went over into France, chiefly to be out of the way, when I was fallen on almost in every libel : for new sets of addresses were now running about the nation, with more heat and swelled eloquence in them than the former ones. In all which the providential fire of Newmarket was set off with great pomp : and in many of them there were hard things said of lord Russel and his speech, with insinuations that looked towards me.

^q (“ After much haggling Charles agreed to allow the French to seize Luxembourg, and received a million of livres in return,” (less than eighty thousand pounds.) “ Barillon writes thus to Louis XIV. on the 1st of December, 1681. “ *Après plusieurs, &c.*” Sir John Dalrymple’s *Memoirs of Great Britain and Ireland, Appendix*, p. 21. Again, at p. 33. he says, that “ the French chose rather to deal with King Charles than with Mr. Montague” (the same whom Burnet mentions here, and before in p. 440, fol. ed. and elsewhere, and who was afterwards duke

of Montague) “ about Luxembourg.” Montague having (according to Barillon) proposed to embroil the king with his parliament, and reduce him to the necessity of dissolving it, which would render all his opposition to France ineffectual through want of being supported. In the *Life*, lately published from the Stuart papers, of James II. mention is made without any reserve of a treaty conducted by him in behalf of his brother Charles with the French court, for the purpose of procuring money two years before this. See vol. I. p. 664.)

In France, Rouvigny, who was the lady Russel's 1683.
uncle, studied to get me to be much visited and
known. There my acquaintance with Marshal Characters
of some he
knew there.
Schomberg began: and by him I was acquainted
with Marshal Bellfonds, who was a devout man, but
very weak. He read the scriptures much, and
seemed to practise the virtues of the desert in the
midst of that court. I knew the archbishop of
Rheims, who was a rough, boisterous man: he
seemed to have good notions of the episcopal duty in 565
all things, except that of the setting a good example
to his clergy: for he allowed himself in liberties of
all kinds. The duke of Montausier was a pattern of
virtue and sincerity, if not too cynical in it. He
was so far from flattering the king, as all the rest
did most abjectly, that he could not hold from con-
tradicting him, as often as there was occasion for it.
And for that reason chiefly the king made him the
dauphin's governor: to which, he told me, he had
applied himself with great care, though he very
frankly added, without success. The exterior of the
king was very solemn: the first time I happened to
see him was when the news came of the raising the
siege of Vienna; with which, Schomberg told me,
he was much struck, for he did not look for it.
While I was at court, which was only for four or five
days, one of the king's coaches was sent to wait on
me, and the king ordered me to be well treated by
all about him, which upon that was done with a
great profusion of extraordinary respects: at which
all people stood amazed. Some thought, it was to
encourage the side against the court by this treat-
ment of one then in disgrace. Others more probably
thought, that the king, hearing I was a writer of

1683. history, had a mind to engage me to write on his side. I was told a pension would be offered me. But I made no steps towards it: for though I was offered an audience of the king, I excused it, since I could not have the honour to be presented to that king by the minister of England^r. I saw the prince of Condé but once, though he intended to see me oftener. He had a great quickness of apprehension, and was thought the best judge in France both of wit and learning. He had read my history of the reformation, that was then translated into French, and seemed pleased with it. So were many of the

^r The bishop seems to avoid giving the true cause of his good reception in the court of France, though it was known then, and may be still by any body that reads a book he published in the year 1682, entitled, *The History of the Rights of Princes*, in the preface to which, he bestows the most extravagant commendations upon the king of France, which were always acceptable to him from any hand; and the book itself was of great use to them in their dispute with Innocent the XIth, concerning the regalia. D. (Another reason for Burnet's good reception at the French court is suggested in a letter of lord Preston, the English ambassador there, to the marquis of Halifax, published by Dalrymple in the Appendix to his *Memoirs*, p. 80. "I have, since I had this account, considered why Mr. Montague should have been treated worse than Dr. Burnet, and I can only think of these reasons for it. First, he can-

" not be so useful at this time,
 " as the doctor, who, if he be
 " gone into England, may con-
 " tinue his former practices
 " with the discontented party.
 " In the next place, if Mr.
 " Montague had had a recep-
 " tion, it could not have been
 " excused so to the king, our
 " master, as that of Dr. Bur-
 " net was by his most Chris-
 " tian majesty, pretending not
 " to know his character and
 " circumstances. Or perhaps,
 " another reason might be, the
 " present scarcity of money
 " here, where they are begun
 " to retrench in all sorts of
 " expenses." (Montague, it is
 " before stated, had applied to
 " the king of France for some
 " money as a gratification.) " It
 " is a question now often ask-
 " ed at this court in confidence,
 " whether there has been really
 " any such thing as a late con-
 " spiracy in England? which I
 " take to be one effect of the
 " doctor's late conversation
 " here.")

great lawyers; in particular Harlay, then attorney general, and now first president of the court of parliament of Paris. The contests with Rome were then very high; for the assembly of the clergy had passed some articles very derogatory to the papal authority: so many fancied, that matter might go to a rupture: and Harley said very publicly, that, if that should happen, I had laid before them a good plan to copy from. 1683.

Bellefonds had so good an opinion of me, that he thought instances of devotion might have some effect on me: so he made the duchess La Valiere think, that she might be an instrument in converting me: and he brought a message from her, desiring me to come to the grate to her. I was twice there: and she told me the steps of her conversion, and of her coming into that strict order of the Carmelites, with great humility and much devotion. 566
Treville, one of the duchess of Orleans's admirers, was so struck with her death, that he had lived in retreat from that time, and was but newly come to appear again^s. He had great knowledge, with a true sense of religion: he seemed to groan under many of the corruptions of their church. He and some others whom I knew of the Sorbon, chiefly Faur, Pique, and Brayer, seemed to think that almost every thing among them was out of order; and wished for a regular reformation: but their notion of the unity of the church kept them still in a communion that they seemed uneasy in: and they said very freely, they wondered how any one that was once out of their communion should desire to come back into it. They were generally learned only in one point: Faur was

^s (See before, p. 301—303. folio edit.)

1683. the best read in ecclesiastical history of any man I saw among them: and I never knew any of that church that understood the scriptures so well as Pique did. They declared themselves for abolishing the papal authority, and for reducing the pope to the old primacy again. They spoke to me of the bishops of France, as men that were both vicious and ignorant: they seemed now to be against the pope: but it was only because he was in the interests of the house of Austria: for they would declare him infallible the next day after he should turn to the interest of France: so they expected no good, neither from the court nor from the clergy. I saw St. Amour, the author of the journal of what passed at Rome in the condemnation of the five propositions of Jansenius. He seemed to be a sincere and worthy man, who had more judgment than either quickness or learning. He told me, his whole life had been one campaign against the Jesuits; and spoke of them as the great plague of the church. He lamented also that sharpness of style with which his friend Arnauld treated the protestants; for which, he said, both he and all his friends blamed him. I was carried by a bishop to the Jesuits as St. Anthoine's. There I saw P. Bourdalou, esteemed one of the greatest preachers of the age, and one of the honours of his order. He was a man of a sweet temper, not at all violent against protestants: on the contrary, he believed good men among them might be saved, which was a pitch in charity that I had never observed in any of the learned of that communion. I was also
567 once with P. de la Chaise, the king's confessor, who was a dry man. He told me, how great a man they would make me, if I would come over to them.

This was my acquaintance on the popish side. I 1683.
 say little of the protestants. They came all to me :
 so I was well known among them. The method that
 carried over the men of the finest parts among them
 to popery was this : they brought themselves to
 doubt of the whole Christian religion : when that
 was once done, it seemed a more indifferent thing of
 what side or form they continued to be outwardly.
 The base practices of buying many over with pen-
 sions, and of driving others over with perpetual ill
 usage, and the acts of the highest injustice and vio-
 lence, and the vile artifices in bringing on and carry-
 ing so many processes against most of their churches,
 as not comprehended within the edict of Nantes,
 were a reproach both to the greatness of their king
 and to the justice of their courts. Many new edicts
 were coming out every day against them, which con-
 tradicted the edict of Nantes in the most express
 words possible : and yet to all these a strange clause
 was added, That the king did not intend by them to
 recall, nor to go against any article of the edict of
 Nantes, which he would maintain inviolable. I
 knew Spanheim particularly, who was envoy from
 the elector of Brandenburg, who is ^t the greatest
 critic of the age in all ancient learning, and is with
 that a very able man in all affairs, and a frank
 cheerful man : qualities that do not always meet in
 very learned men. After a few months' stay I re-
 turned, and found both the king and duke were
 highly offended with the reception I had met with
 in France. They did not know what to make of it,
 and fancied there was something hid under it.

The addresses had now gone round England. Affairs in
 England.

^t *Who was—who is*, pure nonsense. S.

1683. The grand juries made after that high presentments
 against all that were esteemed whigs and noncon-
 formists. Great pains were taken to find out more
 witnesses. Pardons and rewards were offered very
 freely. But none came in: which made it evident,
 that nothing was so well laid, or brought so near
 execution, as the witnesses had deposed; otherwise
 people would have been crowding in for pardons.
 All people were apprehensive of very black designs,
 when they saw Jefferies made lord chief justice, who
 was scandalously vicious, and was drunk every day;
 besides a drunkenness of fury in his temper, that
 looked like enthusiasm. He did not consider the
 decencies of his post: nor did he so much as affect
 568 to seem impartial, as became a judge; but run out
 upon all occasions into declamations that did not
 become the bar, much less the bench. He was not
 learned in his profession^u: and his eloquence, though
 viciously copious, yet was neither correct nor agree-
 able^x. Pemberton was turned out of the common
 pleas, and Jones was put in his place: and Jef-
 feries had three judges joined with him in the king's
 bench, fit to sit by him.

Jefferies
and other
judges pre-
ferred.

The king sent a new message to the city of Lon-
 don, requiring the common council to deliver up their
 charter, threatening them, that otherwise he would
 order the judgment to be entered. Upon this a
 great debate arose among them. Some were for

^u I have heard sir J. Jekyl
 (master of the rolls) say other-
 wise. He had likewise great
 parts, and made a great chan-
 cellor in the business of that
 court. In mere private mat-
 ters, he was thought an able

and upright judge wherever he
 sat. But when the crown or
 his party were concerned, he
 was, as he is here represented;
 generally at least. O.

^x Like Burnet's eloquence. S.

their compliance, that they might prevent the pre- 1683.
judice that would otherwise arise. On the other
hand it was said, that all freemen took an oath to
maintain the rights of their corporation; so that it
was perjury in them to betray these. They said, it
was better to leave the matter to the king, than by
any act of their own to deliver all up. So it was
carried not to do it by a few voices. Upon that the
judgment was entered: and the king seized on their
liberties^y. Many of the aldermen and other officers
were turned out: and others were put in their
places. So they continued for some time a city
without a charter or a common council: and the
king named the magistrates. New charters were
sent to most of the corporations, in which the king
reserved a power to himself to turn out magistrates
at his pleasure. This was done to make all sure for
a new election of parliament, which came now un-
der consideration.

There was a clause in the act that repealed the 1684.
triennial bill, which had passed in the beginning of <sup>The calling
a parlia-
ment pro-
posed, but
rejected.</sup>
the troubles, which enacted that a parliament should
meet every third year: but it had none of those
enforcing clauses, in case it did not meet, that were
in the other act; and the third year from the par-
liament of Oxford was now near an end. So, since
the king had declared he would govern according to
law, and in particular that he would have frequent
parliaments, for which he had special thanks given
him in many of the addresses, it was proposed that
a parliament should be called. A war seemed like
to break out in Flanders; where the Spaniards, how

^y (See before, p. 535. folio edit.)

1684. ill soever they were prepared for it, had declared war, upon the French troops possessing themselves of Dixmuyd and Courtray. The prince of Orange was pressing the states to go into a new war, rather than let Luxembourg be taken. But this was much
 569 opposed by the town of Amsterdam. The calling a new parliament here, and England's engaging, as all believed they might do, would be an effectual restraint on the French. But the king had consented to let Luxembourg fall into their hands: so it was apprehended that the parliament might fall upon that, which was the only point that could occasion any difference between the king and them. It was also said, that it was fit all the charters should be first brought in, and all the corporations new modelled, before the parliament should be called. The prerogative lawyers pretended, that the prerogative was indeed limited by negative and prohibiting words, but not by affirmative words^z. Lord Halifax told me, he pressed this all he could; but there was a French interest working strongly against it: so the thoughts of a parliament at that time were laid aside. The Scottish prisoners were ordered to be sent down to be tried in Scotland. This was sad news to them: for the boots there are a severe torture. Baillie had reason to expect the worst usage: he was carried to Newgate in the morning that lord Russel was tried, to see if he could be persuaded to be a witness against him. Every thing that could work on him was made use of, but all in vain: so they were resolved to use him severely.

Suspicious
 of Essex's
 being mur-
 dered.

I passed slightly over the suspicions that were

^z A dangerous and scandalous doctrine. O.

raised upon lord Essex's death, when I mentioned 1684.

that matter^a. This winter the business was brought to a trial: a boy and a girl did report, that they heard great crying in his lodgings, and that they saw a bloody razor flung out at window, which was taken up by a woman that came out of the house where he was lodged. These children reported this confidently that very day, when they went to their several homes: they were both about ten or twelve years old. The boy went backward and forward in his story, sometimes affirming it, and at other times denying it: but his father had an office in the custom house: so it was thought he prevailed with him to deny it in open court. But the girl stood firmly to her story. The simplicity of the children, together with the ill opinion that was generally had of the court, inclined many to believe this. As soon as his lady heard of it, she ordered a strict inquiry to be made about it; and sent what she found to me, to whom she had trusted all the messages that had passed between her lord and her while he was in the tower. When I perused all, I thought there was not a colour to found any prosecution on; which she would have done with all possible zeal, if she had found any appearances of truth in the matter. 570

Lord Essex had got into an odd set of some strange principles: and in particular he thought a man was the master of his own life: and seemed to approve of what his wife's great grandfather, the earl of Northumberland, did, who shot himself in the tower after he was arraigned. He had also very black fits of the spleen, [which was spread among many of his family to a very high degree.] But at that time

^a (Above, p. 553. folio edit.)

1684. one Braddon, whom I had known for some years
 — for an honest but enthusiastical man, hearing of these stories, resolved to carry the matter as far as it would go : and he had picked up a great variety of little circumstances, all which laid together seemed to him so convincing, that he thought he was bound to prosecute the matter. I desired him to come no more near me, since he was so positive. He talked of the matter so publicly, that he was taken up for spreading false news to alienate people's hearts from the king. He was tried upon it. Both the children owned, that they had reported the matter as he had talked it ; the boy saying then, that it was a lie. Braddon had desired the boy to set it all under his hand, though with that he charged him to write nothing but the truth. This was called a suborning : and he was fined for it in 2000*l*. But I go next to a trial of more importance ^b.

^b (This Braddon, who was excepted from a general pardon granted by James II. in 1687, prosecuted, after the revolution, an inquiry into the earl of Essex's death before the lords, who came to no resolution on the subject. In the year subsequent to the publication of bishop Burnet's work, he printed a book with the following title; Bishop Burnet's late History charged with great partiality and misrepresentation, to make the present and future ages believe, that Arthur earl of Essex murdered himself. Lond. 1725. 8vo. Lord John Russell, in his life of lord Russell, lately published, after observing that the depositions taken before the lords are not now to be

found, says, that he had been assured by the present earl of Essex, that lord Onslow told him, when a boy, that he had seen the entry in the books of the treasury, of a grant of money to Romanney, lord Essex's servant, who asserted that on breaking open the door of a closet he found his master dead. p. 182. Compare preface to lord Russell's Life, p. xi. But supposing that a grant of this nature should ever be found, it is impossible to think that it was made in reward of the testimony Romanney gave respecting the circumstances of his lord's death, as no record would have been suffered to remain of so foul a business. Besides, as lord Essex had been

Howard was the only evidence against the pri- 1684.
soners of better rank; for they had no communica-
tion with the other witnesses. So other things were
to be found out as supplements to support it. Sid-
ney was next brought to his trial. A jury was re-
turned, consisting for most part of very mean per-
sons. Men's pulses were tried beforehand, to see
how tractable they would be. One Parry, a violent
man, guilty of several murders, was not only par-
doned, but was now made a justice of peace, for his
officious meddling and violence. He told one of the
duke's servants, thinking that such a one was cer-
tainly of their party, that he had sent in a great
many names of jurors, who were sure men: that
person told me this himself. Sidney excepted to
their not being freeholders. But Jefferies said, that
had been overruled in lord Russel's case: and there-
fore he overruled it; and would not so much as suf-
fer Sidney to read the statute. This was one of his
bold strains. Lord Russel was tried at the Old
Baily, where the jury consisted of Londoners: and
there indeed the contrary practice had prevailed,

Sidney's
trial.

himself at the head of the treasury, there may have been good reason for a grant of money to his servant, whether before or after the earl's death. Lord Dartmouth remarks, (in his note on this place,) that it appeared plainly when this matter was examined into by the house of lords, (in king William's reign,) that it was impossible any other person could have set him in the posture he was found; that besides, the door was bolted on the inside, and there was no

other way of getting in or out. This latter circumstance is conclusive, the former is mentioned in this way by North in his *Examen*, p. 400. "— his lord-
" ship was found in a little clo-
" set, so falling in the inside of
" the door, as he lay, it was
" impossible for the murderer
" to escape and leave him so." But see the arguments on both sides of this case stated with impartiality by Ralph in his *History*, vol. I. p. 759—768. and vol. II. p. 143.)

1684. upon the reason before mentioned ; for the merchants are supposed to be rich : but this trial was in Middlesex, where the contrary practice had not prevailed ; for in a county a man who is no freeholder is supposed to be poor. But Jefferies said on another occasion, why might not they make precedents to the succeeding times, as well as those who had gone before them had made precedents for them? The witnesses of the other parts of the plot were now brought out again to make a show ; for they knew nothing of Sidney. Only they said, that they had heard of a council of six, and that he was one of them. Yet even in that they contradicted one another ; Rumsey swearing that he had it from West, and West swearing that he had it from him ; which was not observed till the trial came out. If it had been observed sooner, perhaps Jefferies would have ordered it to be struck out ; as he did all that Sidney had objected upon the point of the jury, because they were not freeholders. Howard gave his evidence with a preface that had become a pleader better than a witness. He observed the uniformity of truth, and that all the parts of his evidence and theirs met together as two tallies. After this a book was produced, which Sidney had been writing, and which was found in his closet, in answer to Filmer's book entitled *Patriarcha* ; by which Filmer asserted the divine right of monarchy, upon the eldest son's succeeding to the authority of the father. It was a book of some name, but so poorly writ, that it was somewhat strange that Sidney bestowed so much pains in answering it. In this answer he had asserted, that princes had their power from the people with restrictions and limitations ; and that they were

liable to the justice of the people, if they abused 1684.
 their power to the prejudice of the subjects, and
 against established laws. This, by an inuendo, was
 said to be an evidence to prove that he was in a plot
 against the king's life. And it was insisted on, that
 this ought to stand as a second witness. The earls
 of Clare, Anglesey, and some others, with my self,
 deposed what lord Howard had said, denying there
 was any plot. Blake, a draper, deposed, that hav-
 ing asked him when he was to have his pardon,
 he answered, not till the drudgery of swearing was
 over. Howard had also gone to Sidney's house, and
 had assured his servants that there was nothing
 against him, and had desired them to bring his
 goods to his own house. Sidney shewed how im-
 probable it was that Howard, who could not raise
 five men, and had not five shillings to pay them,
 should be taken into such consultations. As for the
 book, it was not proved to be writ by him ; for it
 was a judged case in capital matters, that a simi-
 litude of hands was not a legal proof^c, though it was 572
 in civil matters : that whatever was in those papers,
 they were his own private thoughts, and specula-
 tions of government, never communicated to any :
 it was also evident, that the book had been writ
 some years ago : so that could not be pretended to
 be a proof of a late plot : the book was not finished :
 so it could not be known how it would end : a man
 writing against atheism, who sets out the strength
 of it, if he does not finish his answer, could not be

^c Quære, whether that was
 (f. was not) a mistake, and so
 now allowed ? But the hard-
 ship upon Sidney was, that the
 book itself, though written by

him, as it was not published,
 nor any proof made of his de-
 sign to publish it, could not be
 an overt act of treason. O.

1684. concluded an atheist, because there was such a chapter in his book. Jefferies interrupted him often very rudely, probably to put him in a passion, to which he was subject: but he maintained his temper to admiration. Finch aggravated the matter of the book, as a proof of his intentions, pretending it was an overt act; for he said, *scribere est agere*^d. Jefferies delivered it as law, and said, that all the judges were of the same mind, that if there were two witnesses, the one to the treason, the other only to a circumstance, such as the buying a knife, these made the two witnesses, which the statute required in cases of treason. In conclusion, Sidney was cast. And some days after he was brought to court to receive sentence. He then went over his objections to the evidence against him, in which judge Withins interrupted him, and by a strange indecency gave him the lie in open court. But he bore it patiently. He sent to lord Halifax, who was his nephew by marriage, a paper to be laid before the king, containing the main points of his defence: upon which he appealed to the king, and desired he would review the whole matter. Jefferies upon that in his furious way said, either Sidney must die, or he must die. His execution was respited for three weeks, the trial being universally cried out on, as a piece of most enormous injustice. When he saw the warrant of his execution, he expressed no concern at it.

^d These words, although it was his argument, were not used by Finch, but Jefferies. They were generally given to the first, and by way of reproach, made an appellation for him: but see the State Trials. Yet see the Trial of the

seven Bishops, where he acknowledges and avows the words. The logic of these words was this; *A concealed act of writing is an open act in treason.* O. Yet this Finch was made earl of Aylsford by king George. S.

And the change that was now in his temper amazed 1684.
all that went to him. He told the sheriffs that
brought it, he would not expostulate upon any thing
on his own account; (for the world was now no-
thing to him;) but he desired they would consider
how guilty they were of his blood, who had not re-
turned a fair jury, but one packed, and as they were
directed by the king's solicitor: he spoke this to
them, not for his own sake, but for their sake. One
of the sheriffs was struck with this, and wept. He
told it to a person, from whom Tillotson had it, who
told it me^e. Sidney wrote a long vindication of
himself, (which I read,) and summed up the sub-
stance of it in a paper that he gave the sheriffs: 573
but, suspecting they might suppress it, he gave a ^{His execu-}
copy of it to a friend. It was a fortnight before it ^{tion and}
was printed, though we had all the speeches of those ^{last paper.}
who died for the popish plot printed the very next
day. But, when it was understood that written
copies of Sidney's speech were going about, it was
also printed. In it he shewed his innocence; that
lord Howard was an infamous person, and that no
credit was due to him: yet he did not deny the
matter he swore against him. As for his book, he
shewed what reason all princes had to abhor Fil-
mer's maxims: for if primogeniture from Noah was
the ground settled by God for monarchy, then all
the princes now in the world were usurpers: none
claiming by that pedigree, and this primogeniture
being only in one person. He said, since God did
not now by any declaration of his will, as of old by
prophets, mark out such or such persons for princes,
they could have no title but what was founded on

^e Admirable authority. S.

1684. law and compact: and this was that in which the difference lay between lawful princes and usurpers: if possession was a donation from God, (which Filmer had substituted to the conceit of primogeniture,) then every prosperous usurper had a good right. He concluded with a prayer, that the nation might be preserved from idolatry and tyranny. And he said, he rejoiced that he suffered for the old cause, in which he was so early engaged. These last words furnished much matter to the scribblers of that time. In his imprisonment he sent for some independent preachers, and expressed to them a deep remorse for his past sins, and great confidence in the mercies of God. And indeed he met death with an unconcernedness that became one who had set up Marcus Brutus for his pattern. He was but a very few minutes on the scaffold at tower hill: he spoke little, and prayed very short: and his head was cut off at one blow^f.

Monmouth
came in,
and was
pardoned.

At this time an accident happened, that surprised both the court and city; and which, if well managed, might probably have produced great effects.

^f (The following fine lines are taken from Dr. Butson now bishop of Clonfert's poem on the Love of our Country, which gained the chancellor's prize at Oxford in 1771. They are given, as they are remembered to have stood at that time:

Here let the muse withdraw the blood-
stain'd steel,
And shew the boldest son of public
zeal.
Lo! Sidney bleeding o'er the block!
his air, his mien,
His voice, his hand, unshaken, firm,
serene!

Yet no diffuse harangue declaim'd
aloud,
To gain the plaudits of a wayward
crowd:
No specious feint, death's terrors to
defy,
Still death delaying, as afraid to die;
But sternly silent, down he bows to
prove,
How firm, unperishing, his public
love.
Unconquer'd patriot! form'd by an-
cient lore
The love of ancient freedom to re-
store;
Who nobly acted what he boldly
thought,
And seal'd by death the lesson that
he taught.)

The duke of Monmouth had lurked in England all this summer, and was then designing to go beyond sea, and to engage in the Spanish service. The king still loved him passionately. Lord Halifax, seeing matters run so much further than he apprehended, thought that nothing could stop that so effectually as the bringing the duke of Monmouth again into favour. That duke writ to the king several letters, penned with an extraordinary force.⁵⁷⁴ Lord Halifax drew them all, as he himself told me, and shewed me his own draughts of them. By these the king was mollified, and resolved to restore him again to his favour^g. It stuck much at the confession that he was to make. The king promised that no use should be made of it: but he stood on it, that he must tell him the whole truth of the matter. Upon which he consented to satisfy the king. But he would say nothing to the duke, more than to ask his pardon in a general compliment. Lord Halifax had pressed him earnestly upon his first appearance to be silent, and for a while to bear the censures of the town. The last day of the term was very near, in which all the prisoners were to be discharged according to the *habeas corpus* act. That would shew he had discovered nothing to their prejudice. So that all discourses concerning his confession and discoveries would vanish in a few days. And if he had followed this, probably it would have given a great turn to affairs. The king spoke nothing of the reconciliation to the duke of York, till the day before it was to be done. He was much struck with it: but the king was positive. Yet the

^g (See two of these letters in the Appendix to Sprat's Hist. of the Conspiracy, p. 137—140.)

1684. duke's creatures in the cabinet council moved, that for form's sake he should be for some days put in the tower. The king cut that off by saying he had promised to pardon him. The duke of Monmouth, as was agreed, made a humble confession of his offences in general words to the king; and made a compliment to the duke, and begged that he would intercede with the king to pardon him. The king received him with a fondness that confounded all the duke's party: he used him more tenderly than he had done formerly. The duke put on an outward appearance of being very well pleased with it. The king said next day, that James (for so he called him) had confirmed all that Howard had sworn^h.

^h The last duke of Buckingham (Sheffield) told me, that the king assured him, that the duke of Monmouth had confirmed every word that lord Howard had sworn, and would have been a witness if the king had thought it proper. D. See Welwood's Mem. p. 142. O. (The duke of York, in an account of the duke of Monmouth's confession, begins with the following particulars: "Mr. Secretary Jenkins being withdrawn, and none present but the king and duke of York, he freely owned his knowledge of the whole conspiracy, except what related to the intended assassination, with which he averred he never was acquainted. He named all the persons concerned with him in it, and did not contradict any thing my lord Howard had said, except one particular, which

" was not material. He very well remembered what Rumsey had said of my lord Russell, who, when Trenchard had failed him, said, he would put on his boots, and go to Taunton himself, and make the people rise, &c. &c." Life of king James II. lately published from the Stuart Papers, vol. I. p. 742. It is added, that the king promised the duke of Monmouth, that he should not be obliged to appear as a witness against his friends. Compare the Appendix to bishop Sprat's Account of the Conspiracy, p. 136. Compare also Ralph's Hist. of England, vol. I. p. 789, who is of opinion, that the article in the gazette was a surprise to the duke, and a trespass on the promises which had been made him, and had induced him to submit.)

This was carried to the duke of Monmouth, who 1684.
denied he had ever said any such thing; adding,
that lord Howard was a liar and a rogue: and this
was set round the town by his creatures, who run
with it from coffee-house to coffee-house. The next
gazette mentioned that the king had pardoned him
upon his confessing the late plot. Lord Halifax
pressed the duke of Monmouth to pass that over,
and to impute it to the importunity of his enemies,
and to the king's easiness: but he could not prevail.
Yet he said little till his pardon was past. But
then he openly denied that he had confessed the
plot. By that he engaged himself in a plain con-
tradiction to what the king had said. Some were 575
brought by the duke to the king, who confirmed,
they had heard the duke of Monmouth say, that he
had not confessed the plot: upon which the king or-
dered him to give a confession of it under his hand.
Lord Halifax pressed him to write a letter to the
king, acknowledging he had confessed the plot.
Plot was a general word, that might signify as much
or little as a man pleased: they had certainly dan-
gerous consultations among them, which might be
well called plots. He said, the service he might do
his friends by such a general letter, and by his gain-
ing the king's heart upon it, would quickly balance
the seeming prejudice that such a general acknow-
ledgment would bring them under, which could do
them no hurt. Upon that he got him to write a
letter to that purpose, which he carried to the king.
And the king was satisfied. But the duke of Mon-
mouth, whether of himself, or upon the suggestion
of others, reflected on what he had done, and thought
it a base thing. Though this was no evidence, yet

1684. he thought it might have an influence on juries, to make them believe every thing that might be sworn by other witnesses, when, from his confession, they were possessed with a general belief of the plot. So he went full of uneasiness to the king, and desired he might have his letter again, in the terms of an agony like despair. The king gave it back, but pressed him vehemently to comply with his desireⁱ:

ⁱ (The duke of Monmouth's letter to the king, written subsequently to his surrendering himself and his being pardoned, began in these terms: "I have heard of some reports of me, as if I should have lessened the late plot, and gone about to discredit the evidence given against those who have died by justice. Your majesty and the duke know how ingenuously I have owned the late conspiracy, and though I was not conscious of any design against your majesty's life, yet I lament the having had so great a share in the other part of the said conspiracy, &c. &c." But according to Echard, in his *Hist. of England*, p. 1039, this letter was indited by the king, and written over again by the duke without hesitation, who subscribed it, and presented it to his majesty. The king afterwards, on the duke's application at different times, restored it to him. This is the account Echard gives, following Sprat in his authorized *History of this Conspiracy*; in the Appendix to which *History* the duke's letter, and, as was observed, the two others sent by him to

the king, before he surrendered himself, are to be seen. A statement of the duke of Monmouth's conduct is to be seen in *Carte's Life of the Duke of Ormond*, vol. II. p. 520—534. "Agitated by shame and remorse," writes Dr. Lingard, in the eighth volume of his *History of England*, "Monmouth passionately demanded back the paper from his father, and Charles, to soothe his feelings, assured him that it should never be produced in any court of justice, and advised him to wait a few hours, and think seriously on the consequence of his conduct. On the morning he renewed this demand; and the king, having exchanged it for the original, forbade him by the vice-chamberlain ever more to come into the royal presence. He retired to his seat in the council, where the advice or treaty of the duchess drew from him an offer to retrace his steps and sign again a similar paper. But it was too late, Charles instantly rejected the proposal." Ch. 7. p. 268.)

and among other things the duke of Monmouth 1684.
 said, that the king used this expression; If you do
 not yield in this, you will ruin me. Yet he was
 firm. So the king forbid him the court, and spoke <sup>But soon
 after dis-
 graced.</sup>
 of him more severely than he had ever done for-
 merly. He was upon this more valued and trusted
 by his own party than ever. After some days he
 went beyond sea: and after a short concealment he
 appeared publicly in Holland, and was treated by
 the prince of Orange with a very particular respect.

The prince had come for a few days to England
 after the Oxford parliament, and had much private
 discourse with the king at Windsor. The king as-
 sured him, that he would keep things quiet, and not
 give way to the duke's eagerness, as long as he
 lived: and added, he was confident, whenever the
 duke should come to reign, he would be so restless
 and violent, that he could not hold it four years to
 an end. This I had from the prince's own mouth ^k.

^k (A remarkable passage con-
 firmatory of this account occurs
 in the Memoirs of sir Richard
 Bulstrode, a Roman catholic,
 who had been the resident at
 the court of Brussels. "About
 " two years before the death of
 " king Charles II. he gave me
 " leave to come into England,
 " and sent the Katherine yacht
 " to Ostend for me. Some
 " days after my arrival at
 " White-hall, he commanded
 " me to walk with him to
 " Hyde park, and as I walked
 " with him, the rest of the
 " company keeping at a good
 " distance, he told me, that I
 " had served him very well at
 " Brussels, and that his bro-
 " ther had given him a very

" good account of my carriage
 " towards him there.
 " And after having asked me
 " many questions about the
 " nobility of those countries,
 " he said, that during his exile
 " abroad he had seen many
 " countries, of which none
 " pleased him so much as that
 " of the Flemings, which were
 " the most honest and true-
 " hearted race of people that
 " he had met with: and then
 " added, *But I am weary of tra-*
 " *velling, I am resolved to go*
 " *abroad no more: but when I*
 " *am dead and gone, I know not*
 " *what my brother will do. I*
 " *am much afraid, that when he*
 " *comes to the crown, he will be*
 " *obliged to travel again. And*

1684. Another passage was told me by the earl of Port-
 ——— land. The king shewed the prince one of his seals ;
 576 and told him, that whatever he might write to him,
 if the letter was not sealed with that seal, he was to
 look on it as only drawn from him by importunity.
 The reason for which I mention that in this place
 is, because, though the king wrote some terrible let-
 ters to the prince against the countenance he gave
 to the duke of Monmouth, yet they were not sealed
 with that seal ; from which the prince inferred, that
 the king had a mind that he should keep him about
 him, and use him well. And the king gave orders,
 that in all the entries that were made in the council
 books of this whole business, nothing should be left
 on record that could blemish him.

Hamden's
 trial.

Hamden was now the only man of the six that
 was left. Yet there was nothing but Howard's evi-
 dence against him, without so much as any circum-
 stance to support it. So, since two witnesses were
 necessary to treason, (whereas one was enough for
 a misdemeanor,) he was indicted of a misdemeanor,
 though the crime was either treason or nothing.
 Jefferies, upon Howard's evidence, charged the jury
 to bring him in guilty ; otherwise, he told them,
 they would discredit all that had been done before.
 So they brought him in guilty. And the court set
 40,000*l.* fine on him, the most extravagant fine that
 had ever been set for a misdemeanor in that court.
 It amounted indeed to an imprisonment for life.

Halloway's
 execution.

Sometime in the spring eighty-four, Halloway

“ yet I will take care to leave “ and less of my reason ; and I
 “ my kingdoms to him in peace, “ am much afraid, that when my
 “ wishing he may long keep “ brother comes to the crown, he
 “ them so. But this hath all of “ will be obliged again to leave
 “ my fears, little of my hopes, “ his native soil.” p. 424.)

was taken in the West Indies, and sent over. He 1684.
was under an outlawry for treason. The attorney
general offered him a trial, if he desired it. But he
was prevailed on, by the hope of a pardon, to sub-
mit, and confess all he knew. He said, he was
drawn into some meetings, in which they consulted
how to raise an insurrection, and that he and two
more had undertaken to manage a design for seizing
on Bristol, with the help of some that were to come
to them from Taunton: but he added, that they
had never made any progress in it. He said, at
their meetings at London, Rumsey and West were
often talking of *lopping* the king and the duke:
but that he had never entered into any discourse
with them upon that subject: and he did not be-
lieve there were above five persons that approved of
it. These were West, Rumsey, Rumbold, and his
brother: the fifth person is not named in the printed
relation. Some said, it was Ferguson: others said,
it was Goodenough. Halloway was thought by the
court not to be sincere in his confession. And so,
since what he had acknowledged made himself very
guilty, he was executed, and died with a firm con-577
stancy. He shewed great presence of mind. He
observed the partiality that was evident in manag-
ing this plot, different from what had appeared in
managing the popish plot. The same men who
were called rogues when they swore against papists,
were looked on as honest men when they turned
their evidence against protestants. In all his an-
swers to the sheriffs, who at the place of execution
troubled him with many impertinent questions, [that
shewed their dulness as well as their officiousness,]
he answered them with so much life, and yet with

1684. so much temper, that it appeared he was no ordinary man. His speech was suppressed for some days: but it broke out at last. In it he expressed a deep sense of religion: his prayer was an excellent composure. The credit of the Rye-plot received a great blow by his confession. All that discourse about an insurrection, in which the day was said to be set, appeared now to be a fiction; since Bristol had been so little taken care of, that three persons had only undertaken to dispose people to that design, but had not yet let it out to any of them. So that it was plain, that after all the story they had made of the plot, it had gone no further, than that a company of seditious and inconsiderable persons were framing among themselves some treasonable schemes, that were never likely to come to any thing¹; and that Rumsey and West had pushed on the execrable design of the assassination, in which, though there were few that agreed to it, yet too many had heard it from them, who were both so foolish and so wicked, as not to discover them^m.

Arm-
strong's
death.

But if the court lost much by the death of Halloway, whom they had brought from the West Indies, they lost much more by their proceedings against sir Thomas Armstrong, who was surprised at Leyden, by virtue of a warrant that Chudleigh the king's envoy had obtained from the States, for seizing on such as should fly out of England on the account of the plot. So the scout at Leydon, for five thousand guilders, seized on him; and delivered

¹ Cursed partiality. S.

^m (At Hampden's trial, when this author was asked by the recorder of London, whether he still believed the plot, he

made the same distinction, answering, that "he made no doubt of it as to the assassination." See *Trial of John Hampden, esq.* page 30.)

him to Chudleigh, who sent him over in great haste. 1684.

Armstrong in that confusion forgot to claim that he was a native of the States : for he was born at Nimeguen : and that would have obliged the Dutch to have protected him, as one of their natural born subjects. He was trusted in every thing by the duke of Monmouth : and he having led a very vicious life, the court hoped that he, not being able to bear the thoughts of dying, would discover every thing. He shewed such a dejection of mind, while he was concealing himself, before he escaped out of England, that Hamden, who saw him at that time, 578 told me, he believed he would certainly do any thing that would save his life. Yet all were disappointed in him : for when he was examined before the council, he said, he knew of no plot but the popish plot : he desired he might have a fair trial for his life : that was all he asked. He was loaded with irons ; though that was not ordinary for a man who had served in such posts, as to be lieutenant of the first troop of guards, and gentleman of the horse to the king. There was nothing against him, but what Rumsey and Shepherd had sworn of the discourses at Shepherd's, for which lord Russel had suffered. But by this time the credit of the witnesses was so blasted, that it seems the court was afraid that juries would not now be so easy as they had been. The thing that Rumsey had sworn against him seemed not very credible : for he swore that at the first meeting, Armstrong undertook to go and view the guards in order to the seizing them ; and that upon a view, he said at a second meeting, that the thing was very feasible. But Armstrong, who had commanded the guards so

1684. long, knew every thing that related to them so well, that without such a transient view he could of the sudden have answered every thing relating to them. The court had a mind to proceed in a summary way with him, that he should by the hurry of it be driven to say any thing that could save him. He was now in an outlawry: but though the statute was express, that if an outlawed person came in at any time within the year, he was to have a trial, notwithstanding his outlawry. It was pretended, in answer to this, that he not coming in, but being taken, had not a right to the benefit of the statute. But there were several months of the year yet to run. And since a trial was a demand founded on natural justice, he insisted on it. And when he was brought to the king's bench bar, and asked what he had to say why sentence should not be executed, he claimed the benefit of the statute. He said, he had yet, when he was taken, several months to deliberate upon his coming in: and the seizing on him before his time was out, ought not to bar him a right that the law gave him. He also mentioned Halloway, to whom a trial was offered the former term. And, since it was a point of law, he desired council might be heard to argue it. Jefferies rejected all this: he said, the king might either offer a trial or not, as he saw cause: and he refused to hear council: which being demanded 579 upon a point of law, the denying it was thought a very impudent piece of injustice. And when Armstrong insisted, that he asked nothing but the law, Jefferies in his brutal way said, he should have it to the full; and so ordered his execution within six days. And the law was executed on him with the

utmost rigour: for he was carried to Tyburn in a sledge, and was quartered, and his quarters were set up. His carriage, during his imprisonment and at his death, was far beyond what could have been imagined. He turned himself wholly to the thoughts of God, and of another state; and was praying continually. He rejoiced, that he was brought to die in such a manner. He said, it was scarce possible for him to have been awakened into a due sense of his sins by any other method. His pride and his resentments were then so entirely conquered, that one who saw him said to me, that it was not easy to think it was the same person whom he had known formerly. He received the sacrament; and died in so good a temper, and with so much quiet in his mind, and so serene a deportmentⁿ, that we have scarce known in our time a more eminent instance of the grace and mercy of God. Armstrong in his last paper denied, that he ever knew of any design against the king's or the duke's life, or was in any plot against the government^o. There were no remarks published on his speech, which it was believed the court ordered: for they saw how much

1684.

ⁿ (“ In this account I can contradict him myself; I saw that unhappy man go to die. As he passed along, he threw about his arms, as far as the rope that tied him would permit, turned about his head after an unusual manner, drew and shrugged up his shoulders, with such convulsions and distortions of his countenance, such visible marks of passion, as shewed so great a disorder and perturbation of

mind, as I never observed in any Englishman in the same circumstances.” *Higgon's Remarks on this Hist.* p. 269.)

^o (“ Burnet is mistaken in saying that Armstrong denied having been engaged in any design against the government. His words, as we see above, were, *to alter the government.*” *Lord John Russell's Life of Lord Russell*, note p. 257.)

1684. ground they had lost by this stretch of law, and
 ————— how little they had gained by his death. One pas-
 sage in it was the occasion of their ordering no such
 reflections to be made on it, as had been made on
 the other speeches. The king had published a story
 all about the court, and had told it to the foreign
 ministers, as the reason of this extreme severity
 against Armstrong: he said, that he was sent over
 by Cromwell to murder him beyond sea, and that
 he was warned of it, and challenged him on it; and
 that upon his confessing it he had promised him
 never to speak of it any more as long as he lived.
 So the king, counting him now dead in law, thought
 he was free from that promise^P. Armstrong took
 this heavily: and in one paper which I saw, writ
 in his own hand, the resentments upon it were
 sharper than I thought became a dying penitent.
 So, when that was represented to him, he changed
 it: and in the paper he gave the sheriffs he had
 softened it much. But yet he shewed the falsehood
 of that report: for he never went beyond sea but
 580 once, sent by the earl of Oxford, and some other
 cavaliers, with a considerable present to the king in
 money, which he delivered; and brought back let-
 ters of thanks from the king to those who made the
 present. But Cromwell having a hint of this, clapt
 him up in prison, where he was kept almost a year.
 And upon the merit of that service, he was made a
 captain of horse soon after the restoration^Q. When

^P If the king had a mind to lie, he would have stayed till Armstrong was hanged. S.

^Q (Compare Ralph's Hist. of England, vol. I. p. 797—799. who agrees in general with

the bishop's account of the prosecution of sir Thomas Armstrong, but observes, that " if the paper he gave the sheriffs was fairly published, it does not authorize us to con-

Jefferies came to the king at Windsor, soon after 1684. this trial, the king took a ring of good value from his finger, and gave it him for these services: the ring upon that was called his blood-stone. The king gave him one advice, which was somewhat extraordinary from a king to a judge; but it was not the less necessary to him: the king said, it was a hot summer, and he was going the circuit, he therefore desired he would not drink too much. With this I leave the affairs of England, to look towards Scotland.

Great pains were taken there to make a further discovery of the negotiation between the English and the Scots. A gentleman, who had been at Bothwell-bridge, was sent over by the Cargillites to some of their friends in Holland: and he carried with him some letters writ in an odd cant. He was seized at Newcastle, together with his letters; and was so frightened, that he was easily managed to pretend to discover any thing that was suggested to him. But he had never been at London: so he could speak of that negotiation but upon hearsay. His story was so ill laid together, that the court was ashamed to make any use of it: but it turned heavily on himself, for he went mad upon it. Two others came in, and charged sir Hugh Cambell of Cesnock, an ancient gentleman of a good estate, that he had set on the rebellion of Bothwell-bridge, and had chid them for deserting it. Upon this he was brought to a trial. In Scotland the law allows of an exculpation, by which the prisoner is suffered

Great severity in Scotland.

“clude that so horrid a charge “says, I was told a very great
 “had been laid against Crom- “person says, I was a spy of
 “well or him. Sir Thomas “Cromwell’s.”)

1684. before his trial to prove the thing to be impossible.

This was prayed by that gentleman, who had full proofs of his being elsewhere, and at a great distance from the place, at that time. But that is a favour which the court may grant, or not: so that was denied him. The first witness that was examined at his trial began with a general story: and when he came to that in which the prisoner was concerned, Cambell charged him to look him full in the face, and to consider well what he was to say of him; for he took God to witness, he never saw his face before, as far as he could remember. Upon that the witness was struck, and stopped; and said, he could say nothing of him. The earl of Perth was then justice general, and offered to lead him into his story. But the jury stopped that; and said, that he upon his oath had declared he knew nothing of the prisoner, and that after that they could have no regard to any thing that he might say. Upon which some sharp words passed between lord Perth and them, in which he shewed how ready he was to sacrifice justice and innocent blood to his ambition. And that was yet grosser in this case; because his brother was promised that gentleman's estate, when it should be confiscated. The second witness said nothing, but seemed confounded: so Cambell was acquitted by the jury, but was still kept in prison. These witnesses were again examined before the council: and they adhered to their first deposition against the prisoner. The law in Scotland is very severe against false witnesses, and treats them as felons. But the government there would not discourage such practices; of which, when they should be more lucky, they intended to make good use.

The circuits went round the country, as was directed by the proclamation of the former year. 1684.

Those who were most guilty compounded the matter, and paid liberally to a creature of the lord chancellor's, that their names might be left out of the citations. Others took the test: and that freed them from all further trouble. They said openly, that it was against their conscience; but they saw they could not live in Scotland, unless they took it. Others observed, that the severity which the presbyterians formerly had used, forcing all people to take their covenant, was now returned back on them in this test, that they were thus forced to take.

In the mean while a great breach was formed, and appeared on all occasions, between the earls of Aberdeen and Queensbury. The latter was very exact in his payments, both of the soldiers and of the pensions: so his party became the strongest. Lord Aberdeen's method was this: he writ up letters to the duke of all affairs, and offered expedients, which he pretended were concerted at Edenburgh; and sent with them the draughts of such letters, as he desired should be sent down from the king. But these expedients were not concerted, as he said: they were only his own conceits. Lord Queensbury, offended with this, let the duke understand how he had been deceived. So an order was sent down that all expedients should be concerted by a junto, consisting of lord Queensbury's creatures. Lord Aberdeen saw that by this he came to signify little: and seeing he was losing ground at court, he intended to recover himself a little with the people. So he resolved for the future to keep to the law,

A breach in
the minis-
try there.

1684. and not to go beyond it. And such was the fury
— of that time, that this was called moderation and popularity. The churches were now all well kept by the men: but their wives not being named in the act of parliament, none of them went to church. The matter was laid before the council: and a debate arose upon it; whether, man and wife making one person in law, husbands should not be fined for their wives' offence, as well as for their own. Lord Aberdeen stood upon this, that the act did not mention the wives: it did indeed make the husbands liable to a fine, if their wives went to conventicles; for they had it in their power to restrain them: and since the law provided in the one case, that the husband should suffer for his wife's fault, but had made no provision in the other case, as to their going to church, he thought the fining them on that account could not be legally done. Lord Queensbury was for every thing that would bring money into the treasury: so, since in those parts the ladies had for many years withdrawn wholly from the churches, he reckoned the setting fines on their husbands to the rigour would make all the estates of the country be at mercy; for the selling them outright would not have answered this demand for the offences of so many years. The earl of Perth struck in with this, and seemed to set it up for a maxim, that the presbyterians could not be governed, but with the extremity of rigour; and that they were irreconcilable enemies to the king and the duke, and that therefore they ought to be extirpated. The ministry in Scotland being thus divided, they referred the decision of the point to the king: and lord Perth came up to have his resolution upon it. The king

determined against the ladies: which was thought 1684.
 very indecent; for in dubious cases the nobleness of
 a prince's temper should always turn him to the
 merciful side. This was the less expected from the
 king, who had all his lifetime expressed as great a
 neglect of women's consciences, as esteem for their
 persons.

But to do him right, he was determined to it by ^{The duke}
 the duke; who, since the breaking out of the plot, ^{governed}
 had got the whole management of affairs, English ^{all affairs.}
 as well as Scottish, into his hands. Scotland was so
 entirely in his dependance, that the king would sel- 583
 dom ask what the papers imported, which the duke
 brought to be signed by him. In England, the ap-
 plication and dependance was visibly on the duke.
 The king had scarce company about him to enter-
 tain him, when the duke's levees and couchees were
 so crowded, that the antichambers were full. The
 king walked about with a small train of the neces-
 sary attendants, when the duke had a vast follow-
 ing: which drew a lively reflection from Waller, the
 celebrated wit. He said, the house of commons had
 resolved that the duke should not reign after the
 king's death: but the king, in opposition to them,
 was resolved he should reign even during his life.
 The breach grew to that height between lord Aber-
 deen and lord Queensbury, that both were called up
 to give an account of it. It ended in dismissing
 lord Aberdeen, and making lord Perth chancellor,
 to which he had been long aspiring in a most inde-
 cent manner ^s. He saw into the duke's temper,
 that his spirit was turned to an unrelenting se-

^s *Decent* and *indecent*, very useful words to this author. S.

1684. verity: for this had appeared very indecently in
 ——— Scotland.

The cruelty
 of the duke,
 and of his
 ministers in
 torturing.

When any are to be struck in the boots, it is done in the presence of the council: and upon that occasion almost all offer to run away. The sight is so dreadful, that without an order restraining such a number to stay, the board would be forsaken. But the duke, while he had been in Scotland, was so far from withdrawing, that he looked on all the while with an unmoved indifference, and with an attention, as if he had been to look on some curious experiment. This gave a terrible idea of him to all that observed it, as of a man that had no bowels nor humanity in him ^t. Lord Perth, observing this, re-

^t (Lockhart, of Carnwarth, in his Letter written in 1724, the year of the first publication of this History, observes on the account, which the bishop gives of the cruel disposition of the duke of York, that it does not correspond with the character given by all other authors of the duke's natural temper; and is of opinion, that if he had behaved as he is here represented to have done, it was impossible but others as well as Burnet must have heard of it and reported it. "We see," adds Lockhart, "what a clamour was made on the idle grounded story of his favouring his dogs, when shipwrecked; (see above, page 523, folio edit.) and such an extraordinary instance of his cruelty and barbarity in so public and conspicuous a manner, could not have been unknown to all the world

"but the bishop; and it nevertheless was, I may safely aver, seeing that no part of this calumny was ever so much as suggested or laid to the duke's charge by any one of his many inveterate enemies before or since the revolution." *Lockhart Papers*, lately published, p. 600. But that a notion existed of the severity of the duke of York's temper, whether ill or well founded, appears from Ailoffe's answer to him. See below, p. 634. folio edit. Dr. Lingard writes thus, "The fact, that on one occasion James accompanied a committee of the council, when the leg of a prisoner (Spreul) was placed in the boot, has been frequently brought forward as a proof that the duke was naturally cruel. But certainly many other reasons might be devised for his presence, be-

solved to let him see how well qualified he was to be an inquisitor general. The rule about the boots in Scotland was, that upon one witness and presumptions both together, the question might be given: but it was never known to be twice given; or that any other species of torture, besides the boots, might be used at pleasure. In the court of inquisition they do upon suspicion, or if a man refuses to answer upon oath as he is required, give him the torture; and repeat it, or vary it, as often as they think fit; and do not give over, till they have got out of their mangled prisoners all that they have a mind to know from them. 1684.

This lord Perth resolved to make his pattern: and was a little too early in letting the world see, what a government we were to expect under the influence of a prince of that religion. So, upon his going to Scotland, one Spence, who was a servant of lord Argyle's, and was taken up at London, only 584 upon suspicion, and sent down to Scotland, was required to take an oath to answer all the questions that should be put to him. This was done in a direct contradiction to an express law against obliging men to swear, that they will answer *super inquirendis*. Spence likewise said, that he himself might be concerned in what he might know: and it was against a very universal law, that excused all men from swearing against themselves, to force him to take such an oath. So he was struck in the boots, and continued firm in his refusal. Then a new spe-

“ sides his wish to gratify him-
 “ self with the sight of human
 “ suffering. The prisoner was
 “ to be examined respecting a
 “ supposed conspiracy; to blow

“ up the abbey and the duke in
 “ it. Woodrow, vol. II. p. 163.”
 Lingard's *History of England*,
 vol. VIII. ch. 7. p. 228. note.)

1684. cies of torture was invented : he was kept from sleep eight or nine nights. They grew weary of managing this. So a third species was invented : little screws of steel were made use of, that screwed the thumbs with so exquisite a torment, that he sunk under this ; for lord Perth told him, they would screw every joint of his whole body, one after another, till he took the oath. Yet such was the firmness and fidelity of this poor man, that even in that extremity he capitulated, that no new questions should be put to him, but those already agreed on ; and that he should not be obliged to be a witness against any person, and that he himself should be pardoned : so all he could tell them was, who were lord Argile's correspondents. The chief of them was Holmes at London, to whom lord Argile writ in a cipher, that had a peculiar curiosity in it: a double key was necessary: the one was, to shew the way of placing the words or cipher, in an order very different from that in which they lay in the paper : the other was, the key of the ciphers themselves, which was found among Holmes's papers, when he absconded. Spence knew only the first of these : but he putting all in its true order, then by the other key they were deciphered. In these it appeared what Argile had demanded, and what he undertook to do upon the granting his demands : but none of his letters spoke any thing of any agreement then made.

When the torture had this effect on Spence, they offered the same oath to Carstairs. And, upon his refusing to take it, they put his thumbs in the screws ; and drew them so hard, that as they put him to extreme torture, so they could not unscrew

them, till the smith that made them was brought with his tools to take them off. So he confessed all he knew, which amounted to little more than some discourses of taking off the duke^u; to which he said that he answered, his principles could not come up to that: yet in this he, who was a preacher among them, was highly to blame, for not revealing such black propositions; though it cannot be denied, but that it is a hard thing to discover any thing that is said in confidence: and therefore I saved my self out of those difficulties by saying to all my friends, that I would not be involved in any such confidence; for as long as I thought our circumstances were such that resistance was not lawful, I thought the concealing any design in order to it was likewise unlawful: and by this means I had preserved my self^x. But Carstairs had at this time some secrets of great consequence from Holland trusted to him by Fagel, of which they had no suspicion: and so they asked him no questions about them. Yet Fagel saw by that, as he himself told me, how faithful Carstairs was, since he could have saved himself from torture, and merited highly, if he had discovered them. And this was the foundation of his favour with the prince of Orange, and of the great confidence he put in him to his death.

Upon what was thus screwed out^y of these two persons, the earl of Tarras, who had married the duchess of Monmouth's elder sister, and six or seven gentlemen of quality, were clapt up. The ministers

1684.

Proceed-
ings against
Baillie.

^u (In the Deposition of Carstares preserved in the Appendix to Sprat's Account of the Conspiracy, p. 12. the design of killing the king as well as the duke of York is mentioned.)

^x Jesuitical. S.

^y Witty the second time. S.

1684. of state were still most earnestly set on Baillie's destruction; though he was now in so languishing a state, occasioned chiefly by the bad usage he met with in prison, that if his death would have satisfied the malice of the court, that seemed to be very near. But they knew how acceptable a sacrifice his dying in a more violent way would prove. So they continued even in that extremity to use him barbarously. They were also trying what could be drawn from those gentlemen against him. Terras had married his niece, who was his second wife. So they concluded that their confidence was entire. Baillie's illness increased daily: and his wife prayed for leave to attend on him: and, if they feared an escape, she was willing to be put in irons: but that was denied. Nor would they suffer his daughter, a child of twelve years old, to attend him, even when he was so low, that it was not probable he could live many weeks, his legs being much swelled. But upon these examinations a new method in proceeding against him was taken. An accusation was sent him, not in the form of an indictment, nor grounded on any law, but on a letter of the king's, in which he charged him not only for a conspiracy to raise rebellion, but for being engaged in the Rye-plot; of all which he was now required to purge himself by oath, otherwise the council would hold him guilty of 586 it, and proceed accordingly. He was not, as they said, now in a criminal court upon his life, but before the council, who did only fine and imprison. It was to no purpose for him to say, that by no law, unless it was in a court of inquisition, a man could be required to swear against himself, the temptation to perjury being so strong when self-preservation

was in the case, that it seemed against all law and religion to lay such a snare in a man's way. But to answer all this, it was pretended he was not now on his life, and that whatsoever he confessed was not to be made use of against his life; as if the ruin of his family, which consisted of nine children, and perpetual imprisonment, were not more terrible, especially to one so near his end as he was, than death itself. But he had to do with inexorable men: so he was required to take this oath within two days. And by that time, he not being able to appear before the council, a committee of council was sent to tender him the oath, and to take his examination. He told them, he was not able to speak by reason of the low state of his health, which appeared very evidently to them: for he had almost died while they were with him. He in general protested his innocence, and his abhorrence of all designs against the king, or the duke's life: for the other interrogatories, he desired they might be left with him, and he would consider them. They persisted to require him to take his oath: but he as firmly refused it. So, upon their report, the council construed this refusal to be a confession: and fined him 6000*l.* and ordered him to lie still in prison till it was paid. After this, it was thought that this matter was at an end, and that this was a final sentence: but he was still kept shut up, and denied all attendance or assistance. He seemed all the while so composed, and even so cheerful, that his behaviour looked like the reviving of the spirit of the noblest of the old Greeks or Romans, or rather of the primitive Christians and first martyrs in those best days of the church ^z. But the

^z For he was our cousin. S.

1684. duke was not satisfied with all this. So the ministry applied their arts to Tarras, and the other prisoners, threatening them with all the extremities of misery, if they would not witness treasonable matter against Baillie. They also practised on their wives, and frightening them, set them on their husbands. In conclusion, they gained what had been so much laboured: Tarras, and one Murray of Philipshaugh, did depose some discourses that Baillie had with them before he went up to London, disposing them to a rebellion. In these, they swelled up the matter
587 beyond the truth. Yet all did not amount to a full proof. So the ministers, being afraid that a jury might not be so easy as they expected, ordered Carstairs's confession to be read in court, not as an evidence, (for that had been promised him should not be done,) but as that which would fully satisfy the jury, and dispose them to believe the witnesses ^a.

And his execution.

So Baillie was hurried on to a trial. And upon the evidence he was found guilty, and condemned to be executed that same day: so afraid they were, lest death should be too quick for them. He was very little disturbed at all this: his languishing in so solitary a manner made death a very acceptable deliverance to him. He in his last speech shewed, that in several particulars the witnesses had wronged him: he still denied all knowledge of any design against the king's life or the duke's; and denied

^a (Ralph, at page 806 of the first volume of his History, observes, that the bishop's words imply that Carstares was not of the number of the witnesses; but says, that the contrary is true. Whatever authority Ralph

had for his assertion, the fact of Carstares having been personally produced as a witness in Baillie's trial, is implicitly denied in the Life of Carstares prefixed to his State Papers and Letters, p. 21.)

any plot against the government: he thought it was lawful for subjects, being under such pressures, to try how they might be relieved from them: and their design never went further: but he would enter into no particulars. Thus a learned and a worthy gentleman, after twenty months' hard usage, was brought to such a death, in a way so full in all the steps of it of the spirit and practice of the courts of inquisition, that one is tempted to think that the methods taken in it were suggested by one well studied, if not practised in them. The only excuse that was ever pretended for this infamous prosecution was, that they were sure he was guilty^b: and that the whole secret of the negociation between the two kingdoms was trusted to him; and that, since he would not discover it, all methods might be taken to destroy him: not considering what a precedent they made on this occasion, by which, if men were once possessed of an ill opinion of a man, they were to spare neither artifice nor violence, but to hunt him down by any means. I have been perhaps too long in this particular; but the case was so singular, and my relation to the person was so near, and my value for him was so great, that I hope I need make no apology for it.

In this I saw how ambition could corrupt one of the best tempered men that I had ever known: I mean lord Perth, who for above ten years together seemed to me incapable of an immoral or cruel action, and yet was now deeply engaged in the foulest and blackest of crimes. I had not now seen him for two years. But I hoped, that still some good

^b Bishop of Rochester. S. (Swift alludes to bishop Atterbury's case.)

1684. impressions had been left in him: and now, when
 ——— he came to London to be made lord chancellor, I

588 had a very earnest message from him, desiring by my means to see Leightoun. I thought that angelical man might have awakened in him some of those good principles which he seemed once to have, and which were now totally extinguished in him. I writ so earnestly to Leightoun, that he came to London. Upon his coming to me, I was amazed to see him at above seventy look so fresh and well, that age seemed as it were to stand still with him: his hair was still black, and all his motions were lively: he had the same quickness of thought and strength of memory, but above all the same heat and life of devotion, that I had ever seen in him. When I took notice to him, upon my first seeing him, how well he looked, he told me, he was very near his end for all that; and his work and journey both were now almost done. This at that time made no great impression on me. He was the next day taken with an oppression, and as it seemed with a cold and with stitches, which was indeed a pleurisy.

Leightoun's
 death.

The next day Leightoun sunk so, that both speech and sense went away of a sudden: and he continued panting about twelve hours; and then died without pangs or convulsions^c. I was by him all the while. Thus I lost him, who had been for so many years the chief guide of my whole life. He had lived ten years in Sussex, in great privacy, dividing his time wholly between study and retirement, and the doing of good: for in the parish where he lived, and in the parishes round about, he was always employed in preaching, and in reading prayers. He distributed

^c Burnet killed him by bringing him to London. S.

all he had in charities, choosing rather to have it go 1684.
through other people's hands than his own : for I was
his almoner in London. He had gathered a well
chosen library of curious as well as useful books ;
which he left to the diocese of Dunblane, for the use
of the clergy there, that country being ill provided
with books. He lamented oft to me the stupidity
that he observed among the commons of England,
who seemed to be much more insensible in the mat-
ters of religion, than the commons of Scotland were.
He retained still a peculiar inclination to Scotland^d :
and if he had seen any prospect of doing good
there, he would have gone and lived and died among
them. In the short time that the affairs of Scot-
land were in the duke of Monmouth's hands, that
duke had been possessed with such an opinion of
him, that he moved the king to write to him, to
go, and at least live in Scotland, if he would not
engage in a bishopric there. But that fell with that
duke's credit. He was in his last years turned to a
greater severity against popery than I had imagined 589
a man of his temper, and of his largeness in point of
opinion, was capable of. He spoke of the corrup-
tions, of the secular spirit, and of the cruelty that
appeared in that church, with an extraordinary con-
cern : and lamented the shameful advances that we
seemed to be making towards popery. He did this
with a tenderness, and an edge, that I did not ex-
pect from so recluse and mortified a man. He
looked on the state the church of England was in
with very melancholy reflections, and was very
uneasy at an expression then much used, that it
was the best constituted church in the world. He

^d Yet he chose to live in England. S.

1684. thought it was truly so, with relation to the doctrine, the worship, and the main part of our government. But as to the administration, both with relation to the ecclesiastical courts and the pastoral care, he looked on it as one of the most corrupt he had ever seen^e. He thought, we looked like a fair carcase of a body without a spirit; without that zeal, that strictness of life, and that laboriousness in the clergy that became us.

There were two remarkable circumstances in his death. He used often to say, that if he were to choose a place to die in, it should be an inn; it looking like a pilgrim's going home, to whom this world was all as an inn, and who was weary of the noise and confusion in it^f. He added, that the officious tenderness and care of friends was an entanglement to a dying man; and that the unconcerned attendance of those that could be procured in such a place would give less disturbance. And he obtained what he desired; for he died at the Bell inn, in Warwick-lane. Another circumstance was, that while he was bishop in Scotland, he took what his tenants were pleased to pay him: so that there was a great arrear due, which was raised slowly by one whom he left in trust with his affairs there: and the last payment that he could expect from thence was returned up to him about six weeks before his death: so that his provision and journey failed both at once. And thus in the several parts of this history, I have given a very particular account of every thing relating to this apostolical man; whose life I would have writ, if I had not found proper places to bring the most material parts of it within this

^e Very civil. S.

^f Canting puppy. S.

work. I reckon, that I owed this to that perfect 1684.
friendship and fatherly care with which he had ———
always treated me.

The mentioning his death leads me to name some The promotions of some bishops.
other clergymen of note, that died in this and in the 590
former year. Burnet died in Scotland. And Ross,
a poor, ignorant, worthless man, but in whom obedience and fury were so eminent, that these supplied all other defects, was raised to be the primate of that church: which was indeed a sad omen, as well as a step to its fall and ruin. Stearn, archbishop of York, died in the eighty-sixth year of his age: he was a sour, ill-tempered man, and minded chiefly the enriching his family^g. He was suspected of popery, because he was more than ordinarily compliant in all things to the court, and was very zealous for the duke^h. Dolben, bishop of Rochester, succeeded him, a man of more spirit than discretion, and an excellent preacher, but of a free conversation, which laid him open to much censure in a vicious court. And indeed he proved a much better archbishop than he had been a bishop. Gunning of Ely died this summer, a man of great reading: he had in him all the subtlety and the disputing humour of a schoolman: and he studied to infuse that into all those who were formed by him. He was strict in the whole

^g Yet thought author of *The Whole Duty of Man*. S. (The archbishop had thirteen children. He founded nevertheless six scholarships in the university of Cambridge, and gave 1850*l.* towards rebuilding St. Paul's cathedral. See *Le Neve's Lives of the Protestant Bishops*.)

^h (He was probably as much a papist as his patron archbishop Laud, whose chaplain he had been, and who wrote that immortal book against the Jesuit Fisher, in which, not only the protestant, but the Christian cause is defended.)

1684. course of his life : but was a dry man, and much inclined to superstition. He had a great confusion of things in his head, and could bring nothing into method : so that he was a dark and perplexed preacher. His sermons were full of Greek and Hebrew, and of the opinions of the fathers. Yet many of the ladies of a high form loved to hear him preach : which, the king used to say, was because they did not understand him. Turner succeeded him. He had been long in the duke's family, and was in high favour with him. He was a sincere and good-natured man, of too quick an imagination, and too defective a judgment. He was but moderately learned, having conversed more with men than with books : and so he was not able to do the duke great service. But he was so zealous for his succession, that this raised him high upon no great stock of sufficiency. Old Morley, bishop of Winchester, died this winter, in the eighty-seventh year of his ageⁱ. He was in many respects a very eminent man, zealous against popery, and yet a great enemy to the dissenters : he was considerably learned, and had a great vivacity

ⁱ Not long before his death, (for he then kept his chamber,) my father carried me with him to Farnham castle. I was not above twelve years old, but remember the bishop talked much of the duke, and concluded with desiring my father to tell him from him, that if ever he depended upon the doctrine of non-resistance, he would find himself deceived ; for there were very few of that opinion, though there were not many of the church of England

that thought proper to contradict it in terms ; but was very sure they would in practice. My father told me, he had frequently put king James in mind of Morley's last message to him, though to very little purpose ; for all the answer was, that the bishop was a very good man, but grown old and timorous. D. (This note has been already communicated to the public by Sir John Dalrymple in the Appendix to his Memoirs, vol. II. p. 289.)

of thought: but he was too soon provoked, and too little master of himself upon those occasions^k. Mew, 1684.
 bishop of Bath and Wells, succeeded him: he had been a captain during the wars, and had been Middleton's secretary, when he was sent to command the insurrection that the highlanders of Scotland made for the king in fifty-three. After that he came into orders: and, though he knew very little of divinity, or of any other learning, and was weak to a childish degree, yet obsequiousness and zeal raised him through several steps to this great see^l. Ken succeeded him in Bath and Wells; a man of an ascetic course of life, and yet of a very lively temper, but too hot and sudden. He had a very edifying way of preaching: but it was more apt to move the passions, than to instruct. So that his sermons were rather beautiful than solid: yet his way in them was very taking. The king seemed fond of him. And by him and Turner the papists hoped that great progress might be made in gaining, or at least deluding

^k This bishopric had been very valuable to Morley, he coming into it early after the restoration, and having the benefit of most of the new leases: but he was a generous and charitable man, and of great public spirit. I have been told his public benefactions amounted to above 40,000*l*. He left but a small estate to his family, considering what he might have done for them: they are settled in Hampshire. O. (The last of the family, sir Charles Morley of Droxford, in Hants, had a daughter, who was grandmother of the present marquis of Winchester.)

^l This character is true. S. Lord Sunderland told me, Mew always took *him* (*viz.* that earl of Sunderland) for his father, who was killed at Newbury, and used to converse much with him upon that foot. He lived to a great age, which disappointed many pretenders to his succession: amongst which the reverend author was the chief, during the reign of K. William. D. (Whilst bishop of Bath and Wells he held the headship of St. John's college, Oxford.) Concerning Ken and Turner see Kettlewell's *Life*, pp. 423. 430. *Cole*.

1684. the clergy. It was observed, that all the men in favour among the clergy were unmarried ; from whom they hoped they might more probably promise themselves a disposition to come over to them ^m.

Danby and
the popish
lords bailed.

The prosecution of the dissenters was carried very high all this year : they were not only proceeded against for going to conventicles, but for not going to church, and for not receiving the sacrament ; the laws made against papists with relation to those particulars, being now applied to them. Many were excommunicated, and ruined by the prosecutions. The earl of Danby, for all his severity against lord Shaftsbury for moving in the king's bench to be bailed, though committed by the lords only for contempt, yet had been forced to move often for his being let out upon bail. It was certainly a very great hardship that he lay under : for he had been now five years in the tower. And three parliaments had sat. The two last had not mentioned him. And now a parliament seemed out of sight. Yet, though he offered a very long and learned argument for their bailing him, the judges of the king's bench, even Sanders himself, were afraid to meddle in it. But Jefferies was bolder. So he bailed him. And upon the same grounds all the popish lords were also bailed. Oates was prosecuted at the duke's suit for scandalous words : *rogue* and *traitor* were very freely bestowed on the duke by him : so an 100,000*l.* was given, which shut him up in a perpetual imprisonment, till they saw a fit opportunity to carry matters further against him. The duke of Beaufort, lord Peterborough, and some others, brought actions of *scan-*

^m (“Dr. Turner was a married man.” *Higgon's Remarks on this History*, p. 275. And so were Sterne and Dolben)

datum magnatum against those who in the time of 1684.
 our great heat had spoke foul things of them: and
 great damages were given by obsequious and zeal-
 ous juries. An information of a higher nature was
 brought against Williams, who, though he was a
 worthless man, yet was for his zeal chosen speaker 592
 of the house of commons in the two last parliaments.
 He had licensed the printing the votes, which had in
 them matters of scandal relating to some lordsⁿ. So
 an information was brought against him: and he
 upon it demurred to the jurisdiction of the court.
 This was driven on purpose by the duke's party, to
 cut off the thoughts of another parliament; since it
 was not to be supposed, that any house of commons
 could bear the punishing the speaker for obeying
 their orders.

Jenkins had now done all the drudgery that the
 court had occasion for from him: and being capable
 to serve them in nothing else, he was dismissed

Some re-
 moves made
 at court.

ⁿ It was for having appointed (according to an order of the house of commons) the printing of Dangerfield's information, for which he was fined 10,000*l.* and paid the whole, or the greatest part of it, (as his grandson, sir Watkin, told me.) After the revolution, he attempted to get an act of parliament to reverse the judgment, but did not obtain it. It dropped at first in the house of commons, but in 1696 a bill for it passed the commons, but failed with the lords. He was very odious, on account of his behaviour in king James's reign, particularly for what he did in the case of the seven bishops.

He was then solicitor general, and undertook that matter for the court: if he had succeeded in it, he was, as I have been informed, to have had the great seal, the fury of Jefferies being then somewhat abated, and the court displeased with him upon that score. This relaxation of Jefferies was observed to be after his son had married the heiress of the Pembroke family, with whom he had a great part of the estate. The joy which, it is said, Jefferies shewed on the acquittal of the bishops, was because of the disappointment his rival Williams had by it. O.

1684. from being secretary of state: ° and Godolphin, one of the commissioners of the treasury, succeeded him. Another commissioner of the treasury, Deering, dying at the same time, the earl of Rochester hoped to have been made lord treasurer. He had lost much ground with the king. And the whole court hated him, by reason of the stop of all payments, which was chiefly imputed to him. [He was become very insolent, and gave into drinking, and was charged with corruption in the treasury^p.] Lord Halifax and lord North^q joined their interest to bring in two other commissioners upon him, without so much as letting him know of it, till it was resolved on. These were Thynn and North^r. This last was to be rewarded for his service during his shrievalry in London. Lord Rochester engaged both the duke and the lady Portsmouth to divert this, if it was possible. But the king was not to be shaken. So he resolved to quit the treasury^s. The earl of Radnor was discharged from being lord president of the council, where he had for some years acted a very mean part, in which he had lost the character of a steady, cynical Englishman, which he had maintained in the former course of his life.

° (Compare the Life of sir Leoline Jenkins, p. xlix. where the author, Mr. Wynne, amongst other observations on this injurious passage, says, that “sir Leoline’s retirement was occasioned by no such motive or consideration; but that it was nature which sounded his retreat, and that he had still the same place in the esteem of his royal master.”)

^p See before, p. 531. fol. edit.

^q Lord keeper North. O.

^r A brother of the keeper. O.

^s (Compare Ralph’s Hist. of England, vol. I. p. 827, where it is shewn from the expressions used by lord Halifax in a letter to sir John Reresby, that there was little of choice in the case, and that the earl of Rochester was obliged to retire from his situation.)

And lord Rochester was made lord president : which 1684.
 being a post superior in rank, but much inferior
 both in advantage and credit to that he held for-
 merly, drew a jest from lord Halifax that may be
 worth remembering : he said, he had heard of many
 kicked down stairs, but never of any that was
 kicked up stairs before. Godolphin was weary of
 the drudgery that lay on a secretary of state. He
 chose rather to be the first commissioner of the
 treasury. And he was made a baron. The earl of
 Middletoun, son to him that had governed Scotland,
 was made secretary of state, a man of a generous
 temper, but without much religion, well learned, of
 a good judgment, and a lively apprehension.

If foreign affairs could have awakened the king, The bom-
 barding of
 Genoa.
 the French did enough this summer in order to it ^t.
 Besides their possessing themselves of Luxembourg, 593
 they sent a fleet against Genoa upon no sort of pro-
 vocation, but because Genoa would not comply with
 some demands, that were both unjust and unreason-
 able : the king of France ordered it to be bombard-
 ed, hoping that in that confusion he might by land-
 ing a few men have made himself easily master of
 that state. This would very probably have suc-
 ceeded, if the attempt had been made upon the first
 consternation they were in, when the bombardment
 began. But the thing was delayed a day or two.
 And by that time the Genoese not only recovered
 themselves out of their first fright ; but putting them-
 selves in order, they were animated with that indig-

^t (The French took care, by their intrigues and money, to prevent a union between the king and his parliaments, and of course any effectual opposi-
 tion to themselves. Their grants to the king had been brought to light, but their gifts to the parliamentary leaders were only suspected.)

1684. nation and fury, that they beat off the French with a courage that was not expected from them. Such an assault, that looked liker the violence of a robber, than the attack of one that would observe forms in his conquests, ought to have provoked all princes, especially such as were powerful at sea, to have joined against a prince, who by these practices was become the common enemy of mankind. But we were now pursuing other designs, from which it was resolved that nothing from beyond sea should divert us.

Tangier abandoned.

After the king had kept Tangier about twenty years, and had been at a vast charge in making a mole before it, in which several sets of undertakers had failed indeed in the main designs, but had succeeded well in the enriching of themselves, and the work was now brought near perfection, which seemed to give us the key of the Mediterranean: he, to deliver himself from that charge, sent lord Dartmouth with a fleet to destroy all the works, and to bring home all our men. The king, when he communicated this to the cabinet council, charged them to be secret. But it was believed, that he himself spoke of it to the lord Arlington, and that lord Arlington told it to the Portugal ambassador: for the ambassador took fire upon it; and desired, that, if the king was weary of keeping it, he would restore it to his master: and he undertook to pay a great sum for the charge the king had been at, all these years that he had it. But the king believed, that as the money would never be paid, so the king of Portugal would not be able to maintain that place against the Moors: so that it would fall in their hands, and by that means prove too important to command the straits. The thing was boldly denied

by the ministers, when pressed by the ambassador upon the subject. Lord Dartmouth executed the design as he was ordered: so an end was put to our possessing that place. This was done only to save charge, that the court might hold out the longer without a parliament^u. So the republic of Genoa, seeing that we would not, and that without us the Dutch could not, undertake their protection, were forced to make a very abject compliment to the king of France; if any thing could be abject, that was necessary to save their country. The doge and some of the senators were sent to Versailles to ask the king pardon, though it was not easy to tell for what; unless it was, because they presumed to resist his invasion. I happened to be at Paris when the doge was there. One saying of his was much repeated: when all the glory of Versailles was set open to him, and the flatterers of the court were admiring every thing, he seemed to look at them with the coldness that became a person who was at the head of a free commonwealth^x: and when he was asked, if the things he saw were not very extraordinary, he said, the most extraordinary thing that he saw was, that he saw himself there^y.

The affairs of Holland were much broken: the prince of Orange and the town of Amsterdam were in very ill terms by the French management, to which Chudleigh, the English envoy, joined his strength, to such a degree of insolence, that he offered personal affronts to the prince; who upon that

Affairs beyond sea.

^u To make up this imperfect account of the affair relating to Tangier, see Temple's Memoirs. O.

^x Not a free commonwealth. O.

^y By the laws of Genoa, the doge ceases to be doge, whenever he goes out of the town; but the king of France obliged them to suspend that law upon this occasion. D.

1684. would see him no more: yet the prince was not considered enough at our court to get Chudleigh to be recalled upon it. The town of Amsterdam went so far, that a motion was made of setting up the prince of Friezeland as their stadtholder: and he was invited to come to their town in order to it. But the prince of Orange prevented this, by coming to a full agreement with that town. So he and his princess were invited thither: and that misunderstanding was removed, or at least laid asleep for that time. The war of Hungary went on with slow success on the emperor's side: he was poor, and his revenue was exhausted, so that he could not press so hard upon the Turks, as he might have done with advantage; for they were in great confusion. The king of Poland had married a French wife: and she had a great ascendant over him: and not being able to get her family raised in France, she had turned that king to the emperor's interests. So that he had the glory of raising the siege of Vienna. The French saw their error, and were now ready to purchase her at any rate: so that all the rest of that poor king's inglorious life, after that
595 great action at Vienna, was a perpetual going backwards and forwards between the interests of France and Vienna; which depended entirely upon the secret negotiations of the court of France with his queen, as they came to her terms, or as they did not quite comply with them ^z.

The misunderstanding between the court of Rome and France went on still. The pope declared openly for the house of Austria against the Turk; and made great returns of money into Germany.

^z John Sobieski's character will never suffer from Burnet's abuse of him. *Cole's MS. Note.*

He engaged the Venetians into the alliance. He found also fault with many of the proceedings in France, with relation to the regale. And now the tables were turned^z: the Jesuits, who were wont to value themselves on their dependance on the court of Rome, were now wholly in the interests of France: for they resolved to be on the stronger side: and the Jansenists, whom Rome had treated very ill, and who were looked on as the most zealous assertors of the liberties of the Gallican church, were now the men that admired the pope, and declared for him. The persecution of the protestants went on still in France: and no other care was had of them here, but that we sheltered them, and so had great numbers of them coming over to us. A quarrel was in debate between the English and Dutch East India company. The Dutch had a mind to drive us out of Bantam; for they did not love to see the English settle so near Batavia. So they engaged the old king of Bantam into a war with his son, who was in possession of Bantam: and the son was supported by the English. But the old king drove out his son by the help that the Dutch gave him: and he drove out the English likewise, as having espoused his son's rebellion against him; though we understood it, that he had resigned the kingdom to his son, but that by the instigation of the Dutch he had now invaded him. It is certain, our court laid up this in their heart^a, as that upon which they would lay the foundation of a new war with the States, as soon as we should be in condition to undertake it. The East India company saw this, and that the court pressed them to make public remon-

^z Style of a gamester. S.^a Was there not reason? *Cole*.

1684. strances upon it, which gave a jealousy of an ill design under it : so they resolved to proceed rather in a very slow negotiation, than in any thing that might give a handle to a rupture.

The hardships that the author met with.

I must now mix in somewhat with relation to my self, though that may seem too inconsiderable to be put into a series of matters of such importance. But it is necessary to give some account of that
596 which set me at liberty to go round some parts of Europe, and to stay for some years out of England. I preached a lecture at St. Clement's on the Thursdays : but after the lord Russel's death the king sent an order to Dr. Hascard, then rector of the parish, to discharge me from it. I continued at the Rolls, avoiding very cautiously every thing that related to the public : for I abhorred the making the pulpit a stage for venting of passion, or for the serving of interests. There was a parish in London vacant, where the election lay in the inhabitants : and it was probable it would have fallen on me ; though London was in so divided a state, that every thing was managed by the strength of parties. Yet the king, apprehending the choice might have fallen on me, sent a message to them, to let them know, he would take it amiss if they chose me. Old sir Harbotle Grimstone lived still, to the great indignation of the court : when the fifth of November, being gunpowder treason day, came, in which we had always sermons at the chapel of the Rolls, I begged the master of the rolls to excuse me then from preaching ; for that day led one to preach against popery, and it was indecent not to do it. He said, he would end his life as he had led it all along, in an open detestation of popery. So, since I saw this

could not be avoided, though I had not meddled with any point of popery for above a year together, I resolved, since I did it so seldom, to do it to purpose. I chose for my text these words: *Save me from the lion's mouth; thou hast heard me from the horns of the unicorns.* I made no reflection in my thoughts on the lion and unicorn, as being the two supporters of the king's scutcheon^a: (for I ever hated all points of that sort, as a profanation of scriptures :) but I shewed how well popery might be compared to the lion's mouth, then open to devour us: and I compared our former deliverance from the extremities of danger to the being on the horn of a rhinoceros. And this leading me to the subject of the day, I mentioned that wish of king James the first against any of his posterity that should endeavour to bring that religion in among us^b. This was immediately carried to the court. But it only raised more anger against me; for nothing could be made of it. They talked most of the choice of the text, as levelled against the king's coat of arms. That had never been once in my thoughts. Lord keeper North diverted the king

^a I doubt that. S.

^b Sir J. Jekyl told me, that he was present at this sermon: I think it was this: and that when the author had preached out the hour-glass, he took it up and held it aloft in his hand, and then turned it up for another hour, upon which the audience (a very large one for the place) set up almost a shout for joy. I once heard him preach at the Temple church, on the subject of popery, it was on the fast-day for the negotia-

tions of peace at Utrecht. He set forth all the horrors of that religion with such force of speech and action, (for he had much of that in his preaching at all times,) that I have never seen an audience any where so much affected, as we all were who were present at this discourse. He preached then, as he generally did, without notes. He was in his exterior too the finest figure I ever saw in a pulpit. O.

1684. from doing any thing on the account of my sermon.

And so the matter slept till the end of the term. And then North writ to the master of the rolls, that
 597 the king considered the chapel of the rolls as one of his own chapels: and, since he looked on me as a person disaffected to his government, and had for that reason dismissed me from his own service, he therefore required him not to suffer me to serve any longer in that chapel. And thus all my service in the church was now stopped. For upon such a public declaration made against me, it was not fit for any clergyman to make use of my assistance any more. And by these means I was set at liberty by the procurement of my enemies. So that I did not abandon my post, either out of fear, or out of any giddiness to ramble about Europe. But, being now under such public marks of jealousy, and put out of a capacity of serving God and the church in the way of my function, it seemed a prudent and a decent thing for me to withdraw my self from that fury, which I saw was working so strongly, and in so many repeated instances, against me.

These disgraces from the court were the occasion of my going out of England; which both preserved me from what I had reason to apprehend, when the duke, by the change that happened soon after, might have had it in his power to make me feel all that displeasure, which had been growing upon him in a course of so many years against me; and it also put me in a way to do the greatest services I was capable of, both to the interest of religion and of these nations. So that what was intended as a mischief to me proved my preservation. [So gracious has God been to me in a course of many pro-

vidences, which seemed both to watch over me, and to order every thing relating to me, to be attended with so many favourable circumstances, that what was designed should be my ruin, did put me in a way, both to do and to come to things, that in no other part of my life I could ever have imagined or proposed to my self.] My employment at the Rolls would have fallen in course within a month, if the court had delayed the putting me from it in such an open manner; for that worthy man, sir Harbottle Grimstone, died about Christmas. Nature sunk all at once, he being then eighty-two: he died as he had lived, with great piety and resignation to the will of God. 1684.

There were two famous trials in Michaelmas term: three women came and deposed against Roswell, a presbyterian preacher, treasonable words that he had delivered at a conventicle. They swore to two or three periods, in which they agreed so exactly together, that there was not the smallest variation in their depositions. Roswell, on the other hand, made a strong defence: he proved, that the witnesses were lewd and infamous persons. He proved, that he had always been a loyal man, even in Cromwell's days; that he prayed constantly for the king in his family, and that in his sermons he often insisted on the obligations to loyalty. And as for that sermon, in which the witnesses swore he delivered those words, he shewed what his text was, 598 which the witnesses could not remember, as they remembered nothing else in his sermon besides the words they had deposed. That text, and his sermon upon it, had no relation to any such matter. Several witnesses who heard the sermon, and some

Trials for
treason of
Roswell and
Haies.

1684. who writ it in short hand, declared, he said no such words, nor any thing to that purpose. He offered his own notes to prove this further: but no regard was had to them. The women could not prove by any circumstance that they were at his meeting; or that any person saw them there on that day. The words they swore against him were so gross, that it was not to be imagined any man in his wits could express himself so, were he ever so wickedly set, before a mixed assembly. It was also urged, that it was highly improbable, that three women could remember so long a period upon one single hearing; and that they should all remember it so exactly, as to agree in the same deposition. He offered to put the whole upon this issue: he would pronounce a period, as long as that which they had sworn, with his usual tone of voice with which he preached, and then leave it to them to repeat it, if they could. I set down all this defence more particularly, that it may appear what a spirit was in that time, when a verdict could be brought in upon such an evidence, and against such a defence. Jefferies urged the matter with his ordinary vehemence: he laid it for a foundation, that all preaching at conventicles was treasonable, and that this ought to dispose the jury to believe any evidence whatsoever upon that head, and that here were three positive concurring witnesses: so the jury brought him in guilty. And there was a shameful rejoicing upon this. It was thought, now conventicles would be all suppressed by it: since any person that would witness that treasonable words were delivered at them would be believed, how improbable soever it might be. But when the importance of the words came to be examined, by

men learned in the law, they were found not to be 1684.
treason by any statute. So Roswell moved for an
arrest of judgment, till counsel should be heard to
that point, whether the words were treason, or not.
In Sidney's case they refused to grant that, unless
he would first confess the fact. And, though that
was much censured, yet it was more doubtful, whe-
ther counsel ought to be heard after the jury had
brought in the verdict. But the king was so put
out of countenance with the many stories that were
brought him of his witnesses, that the attorney ge-
neral had orders to yield to the arrest of judgment; 599
though it had been more to the king's honour to
have put an end to the business by a pardon^c. It
was thought a good point gained, which might turn
to the advantage of the subject, to allow that a point
of law might be argued after conviction. The im-
pudence of this verdict was the more shameful,
since, though we had a popish successor in view,
here was a precedent made, by which positive wit-
nesses, swearing to any thing as said in a sermon,
were to be believed against so many probabilities,
and so much proof to the contrary; which might
have been at another time very fatal to the clergy.

The other trial was of more importance to the
court. In Armstrong's pocket, when he was taken,
a letter was found writ by Haies, a banquier in Lon-
don, directed to another name, which was believed a
feigned one: in it credit was given him upon Haies's
correspondent in Holland for money: he was de-
sired not to be too lavish: and he was promised,
that he should be supplied as he needed it. Here
was an abetting of a man outlawed for treason.

^c He was pardoned: see the State Trials, vol. III. p. 1064. O.

1684. Much pains was taken on Haies, both by persuasion and threatening, to induce him to discover that whole cabal of men, that, it seemed, joined in a common purse to supply those who had fled beyond sea on the account of the plot. And they hoped to know all Monmouth's friends; and either to have attainted them, or at least to have fined them severely for it. But Haies shewed a fidelity and courage far beyond what could have been expected from such a man: so he was brought to a trial. He made a strong defence. The letter was not exactly like his hand. It was not addressed to Armstrong, but to another person, from whom he perhaps had it. No entry was made of it in his books, nor of any sum paid in upon it. But his main defence was, that a banquier examined into no person's concerns; and therefore, when money or good security was brought him, he gave bills of exchange, or letters of credit, as they were desired. Jefferies pressed the jury, in his impetuous way, to find Haies guilty of high treason; because, though there was not a witness against Haies, but only presumptions appeared upon the proof, yet, Jefferies said, it was proved by two witnesses that the letter was found in Armstrong's pocket; and that was sufficient, the rest appearing by circumstances. The little difference between the writing in the letter and his ordinary hand, was said to be only a feint to hide it, which made him the more guilty. He required the jury to bring
600 him in guilty: and said, that the king's life and safety depended upon this trial: so that if they did it not, they exposed the king to a new Rye-plot; with other extravagancies, with which his fury prompted him. But a jury of merchants could not be wrought

up to this pitch. So he was acquitted, which mortified the court a little: for they had reckoned, that now juries were to be only a point of form in a trial, and that they were always to find bills as they were directed. 1684.

A trial in a matter of blood came on after this. A gentleman of a noble family^d being at a public supper with much company, some hot words passed between him and another gentleman, which raised a sudden quarrel, none but three persons being engaged in it. Swords were drawn, and one was killed outright: but it was not certain by whose hand he was killed: so the other two were both indicted upon it. The proof did not carry it beyond manslaughter, no marks of any precedent malice appearing. Yet the young gentleman was prevailed on to confess the indictment, and to let sentence pass on him for murder; a pardon being promised him if he should do so, and he being threatened with the utmost rigour of the law if he stood upon his defence. After the sentence had passed, it appeared on what design he had been practised on. It was a rich family, and not well affected to the court: so he was told that he must pay well for his pardon: and it cost him 16,000*l*. of which the king had the one half, the other half being divided between two ladies that were in great favour. It is

^d Sir H. St. John of Battersea, now lord viscount St. John. O. Mr. Henry St. Johns, son to sir Walter St. Johns, of Battersea, and father to Henry St. Johns, viscount Bolingbroke, secretary of state to queen Ann. He was created viscount St. Johns by king George the first, upon his son's being attainted by act of parliament; whose title of Bolingbroke had been entailed upon his father, which was the first instance of a title granted to ascend. D. The story is wrong told. S. Mr. St. John, it is said, pleaded not guilty. *Bowyer's MS. Note.*

1684. a very ill thing for princes to suffer themselves to be prevailed on by importunities to pardon blood, which cries for vengeance. Yet an easiness to importunity is a feebleness of good-nature, and so is in itself less criminal. But it is a monstrous perverting of justice, and a destroying the chief end of government, which is the preservation of the people, when their blood is set to sale : and that not as a compensation to the family of the person murdered, but to the prince himself, and to some who are in favour with him upon unworthy accounts : and it was robbery if the gentleman was innocent.

Another thing of a strange nature happened about this time. The earl of Clancarty in Ireland, when he died, had left his lady the guardian of his children. It was one of the noblest and richest families of the Irish nation, which had always been papists. But the lady was a protestant. And she, being afraid to trust the education of her son to Ireland, though in protestant hands, considering the danger
601 he might be in from his kindred of that religion, brought him over to Oxford, and put him in Fell's hands, who was both bishop of Oxford and dean of Christ Church ; where she reckoned he would be safe. Lord Clancarty had an uncle, col. Maccarty, who was in most things, where his religion was not concerned, a man of honour. So he, both to pervert his nephew, and to make his own court, got the king to write to the bishop of Oxford to let the young lord come up, and see the diversions of the town in the Christmas time ; to which the bishop did too easily consent^e. When he came to town, he, being then at the age of consent, was married to one of

^e (See note afterwards, at p. 695, folio edit.)

the lord Sunderland's daughters. And so he broke through all his education, and soon after turned papist. Thus the king suffered himself to be made an instrument in one of the greatest of crimes, the taking an infant out of the hand of a guardian, and marrying him secretly; against which the laws of all nations have taken care to provide very effectually. But this leads me into a further view of the designs at court. 1684.

The earl of Rochester grew weary of the insignificant place of president, which procured him neither confidence nor dependance. And, since the government of Ireland was the greatest post next to the treasury, he obtained by the duke's favour to be named lord lieutenant of Ireland. The king seemed to be so uneasy with him, that he was glad to send him away from the court. And the king intended to begin in his person a new method in the government of Ireland. Formerly the lords lieutenants were generals of the army, as well as the governors of the kingdom. Their interests in recommending to posts in the army, and the giving the commissions for them, brought the army into their dependance, and increased the profits of their secretaries. It was now suggested by lord Sunderland, that this was too much in one person: and therefore he proposed, that there should be a general of the army, independent on the lord lieutenant, and who should be a check upon him: when there were but a few troops kept up there, it might be more reasonable to leave them in the lord lieutenant's hands: but now that an army was kept, it seemed too much to put that, as well as the civil administration of the kingdom, into the power of one man. In this the earl of Sunderland's

Papists employed in Ireland.

1684. design was, to keep that kingdom in a dependance
upon himself. And he told the king, that if he
602 thought that was a good maxim for the government
of Ireland, he ought to begin it when a creature of
his own was sent thither, who had not such a right
to dispute points of that kind with him, as ancient
noblemen might pretend to. Lord Rochester was
much mortified with this. He said, the chief gover-
nor of Ireland could not be answerable for the peace
of that kingdom, if the army was not in a depend-
ance on him. Yet little regard was had to all that
he could object to this new method; for the king
seemed to be the more pleased with it, because it
afflicted him so much. The first instance, in which
the king intended to begin the immediate depend-
ance of the Irish army on himself, was not so well
chosen, as to make it generally acceptable: for it
was, that col. Maccarty was to have a regiment
there. He had a regiment in the French service
for several years, and was called home upon that ap-
pearance that we had put on of engaging with the
allies in a war with France in the year 1678. The
popish plot had kept the king from employing him
for some years, in which the court was in some
management with the nation. But now that being
at an end, the king intended to employ him, upon
this acceptable service he had done with relation to
his nephew. The king spoke of it to lord Halifax:
and he, as he told me, asked the king, if he thought
that was to govern according to law. The king an-
swered, he was not tied up by the laws of Ireland,
as he was by the laws of England. Lord Halifax
offered to argue that point with any person that as-
serted it before him: he said, that army was raised

by a protestant parliament, to secure the protestant interest: and would the king give occasion to any to say, that where his hands were not bound up, he would shew all the favour he could to the papists? The king answered, he did not trouble himself with what people said, or would say. Lord Halifax replied to this, that it was a just piece of greatness in the king not to mind what his enemies said; but he hoped he would never despise what his friends said, especially when they seemed to have reason on their side: and he wished the king would choose rather to make up Maccarty's losses for his service in pensions, and other favours, than in a way that would raise so much clamour and jealousy. In all this, lord Halifax only offered his advice to the king, upon the king's beginning the discourse with him. Yet the king told it all to Maccarty: who came and expostulated the matter with that lord. So he saw by that how little safe a man was, who spoke freely 603 to the king, when he crossed the king's own inclinations.

There was a great expectation in the court of France, that at this time the king would declare himself a papist. They did not keep the secret very carefully there: for the archbishop of Rheims had said to my self, that the king was as much theirs as his brother was, only he had not so much conscience. This I reported to lord Halifax to tell the king. Whether he did it or not, I know not. But it was written over at this time from Paris, that the king of France had said at his levee, or at table, that a great thing would quickly break out in England with relation to religion. The occasion of that was afterwards better known. One of our East-India

Suspicious
of the
king's de-
claring
himself a
papist.

1684. ships had brought over one of the missionaries of Siam, who was a man of a warm imagination, and who talked of his having converted and baptized many thousands in that kingdom. He was well received at court: and the king diverted himself with hearing him relate the adventures and other passages of his travels. Upon this encouragement he desired a private audience; in which, in a very inflamed speech, and with great vehemence, he pressed the king to return into the bosom of the church. The king entertained this civilly, and gave him those answers, that he, not knowing the king's way, took them for such steps and indications, as made him conclude the thing was very near done: and upon that he writ to P. de la Chaise, that they would hear the news of the king's conversion very quickly. The confessor carried the news to the king; who, not doubting it, gave the general hint of that great turn, of which he was then full of hopes.

That priest was directed by some to apply himself to lord Halifax, to try if he could convert him. Lord Halifax told me, he was so vain and so weak a man, that none could be converted by him, but such as were weary of their religion, and wanted only a pretence to throw it off. Lord Halifax put many questions to him, to which he made such simple answers, as furnished that lord with many very lively sallies upon the conversions so much boasted of, as made by such men. Lord Halifax asked him, how it came, that, since the king of Siam was so favourable to their religion, they had not converted him? The missionary upon that told him, that the king had said, he would not examine into the truth of all that they had told

him concerning Jesus Christ : he thought it was not reasonable to forsake the religion of his fathers, unless he saw good grounds to justify the change : and, since they pretended that the author of their religion had left a power of working miracles with his followers, he desired they would apply that to himself : he had a palsy both in his arm and in his leg : and if they could deliver him from that, he promised to them he would change immediately. Upon which the missionary said, that the bishop, who was the head of that mission, was bold enough (*assez hardi*, were the priest's own words) to undertake it. A day was set for it. And the bishop, with his priest and some others, came to the king. And after some prayers, the king told them, he felt some heat and motion in his arm ; but the palsy was more rooted in his thigh : so he desired the bishop would go on, and finish that which was so happily begun. The bishop thought he had ventured enough, and would engage no further ; but told the king, that since their God had made one step towards him, he must make the next to God, and at least meet him half way. But the king was obstinate, and would have the miracle finished, before he would change. On the other hand the bishop stood his ground. And so the matter went no further. Upon which lord Halifax said, since the king was such an infidel, they ought to have prayed the palsy into his arm again, as well as they prayed it out : otherwise, here was a miracle lost on an obstinate infidel : and if the palsy had immediately returned into his arm, that would perhaps have given him a full conviction. This put the missionary into some confusion. And lord Halifax repeated it both to the king and to the duke with that

1684.

604

1685. air of contempt, that the duke was highly provoked by it: and the priest appeared at court no more.

1685. There was at this time a new scheme formed, that
 A new
 scheme of
 govern-
 ment. very probably would have for ever broken the king and the duke^f. But how it was laid was so great a secret, that I could never penetrate into it. It was laid at lady Portsmouth's. Barrillon and lord Sunderland were the chief managers of it. Lord Godolphin was also in it. The duke of Monmouth came over secretly. And though he did not see the king, yet he went back very well pleased with his journey. But he never told his reason to any that I know of. Mr. May of the privy purse told me, that he was told there was a design to break out, with which he himself would be well pleased^g: and when it was

^f See Welwood's Memoirs, p. 144. (168.) O. ("Some short time before the king's last sickness and death, there was certainly a scheme forming by him to make himself easy for the rest of his life, which he was overheard to say by a gentleman, who told it me, (Mr. Crowne.) The king had given him two Spanish plays, called, *Ne pudeser*, or, *It cannot be*, for him to give them an English cast in one. Three acts and more were finished, before the king was taken ill; and his majesty obliged the author to bring it to him, scene by scene, as he wrote it. The courtiers, knowing what his errand was at Whitehall, made his way easy to the king's cabinet, to which he once approached so near,

"that he could hear the king say distinctly, *Brother, you may travel, if you will, I am resolved to make myself easy for the rest of my life*: at which words the door opening, the author made off, and the duke of York passed hastily by him as in a passion. This play is the famous *sir Courtly Nice*." Oldmixon's *History of the Stuarts*, p. 690. Respecting the intrigue consult Hume's Hist. at the end of this reign.)

^g The bishop told me this with many more particulars. S. (It is stated, by the duke's own historian, that "lady Portsmouth began to entertain some thoughts of sending his highness back to Scotland, and that, if the king had lived much longer, it is probable she might have effected

ripe, he was to be called on to come and manage ^{1685.}
 the king's temper, which no man understood better ⁶⁰⁵
 than he did; for he had been bred about the king
 ever since he was a child: and by his post he was in
 the secret of all his amours; but was contrary to his
 notions in every thing else, both with relation to po-
 pery, to France, and to arbitrary government. Yet
 he was so true to the king in that lewd confidence in
 which he employed him, that the king had charged
 him never to press him in any thing so as to provoke
 him. By this means he kept all this while much at
 a distance; for he would not enter into any discourse
 with the king on matters of state, till the king be-
 gan with him. And he told me, he knew by the
 king's way things were not yet quite ripe, nor he
 thoroughly fixed on the design. That with which
 they were to begin was, the sending the duke to
 Scotland. And it was generally believed, that if the
 two brothers should be once parted, they would
 never meet again. The king spoke to the duke
 concerning his going to Scotland: and he answered,
 that there was no occasion for it: upon which the
 king replied, that either the duke must go, or that
 he himself would go thither.

The king was observed to be more than ordina-
 rily pensive. And his fondness to lady Portsmouth
 increased, and broke out in very indecent instances.
 The grand prior of France, the duke of Vendome's
 brother, had made some applications to that lady,

“ it.” *Life of king James II.*
 vol. I. p. 736. But that the
 king would have consented to
 set his brother aside from the
 succession, after his complete
 victory over the exclusionists

and opposers of his govern-
 ment, is not to be believed, when
 we consider the king's conduct
 during those agitations, and the
 sentiments at this time of the
 majority of the nation.)

1685. with which the king was highly offended. It was said, the king came in on a sudden, and saw that which provoked him: so he commanded him immediately to go out of England^h. Yet after that, the king caressed her in the view of all people, which he had never done on any occasion, or to any person formerly. The king was observed to be colder and more reserved to the duke than ordinary. But what was under all this was still a deep secret. Lord Halifax was let into no part of it. He still went on against lord Rochester. He complained in council, that there were many razures in the books of the treasury, and that several leaves were cut out of those books: and he moved the king to go to the treasury chamber, that the books might be laid before him, and that he might judge of the matter upon sight. So the king named the next Monday. And it was then expected, that the earl of Rochester would have been turned out of all, if not sent to the tower. And a message was sent to Mr. May, then at Windsor, to desire him to come to court 606 that day, which it was expected would prove a critical day. And it proved to be so indeed, though in a different way.

The king's
sickness.

All this winter the king looked better than he had done for many years. He had a humour in his leg, which looked like the beginning of the gout: so that for some weeks he could not walk, as he used to do generally three or four hours a day in the park; which he did commonly so fast, that as it

^h (Sir John Reresby in his Memoirs, p. 92 and 95, mentions this intrigue, and in p. 86—92 gives an account of the following dispute between lords Halifax and Rochester respecting the misapplication of forty thousand pounds of the hearth-money, and other mismanagements of the revenue.)

was really an exercise to himself, so it was a trouble 1685.
to all about him to hold up with him. In the state
the king was in, he not being able to walk, spent
much of his time in his laboratory, and was running
a process for the fixing of mercury. On the first of
February, being a Sunday, he eat little all day, and
came to lady Portsmouth at night, and called for a
porringer of spoon meat. It was made too strong
for his stomach. So he eat little of it: and he had
an unquiet night. In the morning, one Dr. King, a
physician, and a chymist, came, as he had been or-
dered, to wait on him. All the king's discourse to
him was so broken, that he could not understand
what he meant. And the doctor concluded he was
under some great disorder, either in his mind or in
his body. The doctor amazed at this, went out,
and meeting with lord Peterborough, he said, the
king was in a strange humour, for he did not speak
one word of sense. Lord Peterborough desired he
would go in again to the bedchamber, which he did.
And he was scarce come in, when the king, who
seemed all the while to be in great confusion, fell
down all of a sudden in a fit like an apoplexy: he
looked black, and his eyes turned in his head. The
physician, who had been formerly an eminent sur-
geon, said, it was impossible to save the king's life,
if one minute was lost: he would rather venture on
the rigour of the law, than leave the king to perish.
And so he let him blood. The king came out of
that fit: and the physicians approved what Dr.
King had done: upon which the privy council or-
dered him a thousand pound, which yet was never
paid him. Though the king came out of that fit,
yet the effects of it hung still upon him, so that he

1685. was much oppressed. And the physicians did very much apprehend the return of another fit, and that it would carry him off: so they looked on him as a dead man. The bishop of London spoke a little to him, to dispose him to prepare for whatever might be before him: to which the king answered not a word. But that was imputed partly to the bishop's cold way of speaking, and partly to the ill opinion
 607 they had of him at court, as too busy in opposition to popery. Sancroft made a very weighty exhortation to him; in which he used a good degree of freedom, which he said was necessary, since he was going to be judged by one who was no respecter of persons. To him the king made no answer neither; nor yet to Ken, though the most in favour with him of all the bishops. Some imputed this to an insensibility; of which too visible an instance appeared, since lady Portsmouth sat in the bed taking care of him as a wife of a husbandⁱ. Others guessed truer,

ⁱ (This ill agrees with lady Portsmouth's words to the French ambassador, when she pressed him to devise means for the reconciliation of the dying king to the Romish church; "I cannot with decency (she says) enter the room, besides that the queen is almost constantly there." See Barillon's letter to the king of France, in the Appendix to Dalrymple's *Memoirs*, vol. II. p. 95. There exists also the testimony of Bruce, earl of Aylsbury, who was in attendance on the king at that time, opposed to the correctness of this assertion of bishop Burnet, that lady Portsmouth was generally

with the king. It is contained in an extract from the earl's letter to Mr. Leigh of Adlestrop, published in the 27th volume of the *European Magazine*, p. 22. where his lordship says, "My good king and master falling upon me in his fit, I ordered him to be blooded, and then I went to fetch the duke of York, and when we came to the bedside, we found the queen there, and the imposter says it was the duchess of Portsmouth." See also note below, at p. 608. fol. ed. From king James's account of his brother's death, it appears that he spoke most tenderly to the queen in

that it would appear he was of another religion. 1685.

On Thursday a second fit returned; and then the physicians told the duke, that the king was not like to live a day to an end.

The duke immediately ordered Hudleston, the priest that had a great hand in saving the king at Worcester fight, (for which he was excepted out of all severe acts that were made against priests,) to be brought to the lodgings under the bedchamber. And when he was told what was to be done, he was in great confusion, for he had no hostie about him. But he went to another priest, that lived in the court, who gave him the pix with an hostie in it. But that poor priest was so frightened, that he run out of Whitehall in such haste that he struck against a post, and seemed to be in a fit of madness with fear^k. As soon as Hudleston had prepared every thing that was necessary, the duke whispered the king in the ear. Upon that the king ordered that all who were in the bedchamber should withdraw, except the earls of Bath and Feversham^l: and the

his last moments. See Life of James II. I. 749. and Ellis's Letters. "The queen, whom he (the king) had asked for the first thing he said on Monday, when he came out of his fit, (she having been present with him as long as her extraordinary passion would give her leave, which at length threw her into fits, not being able to speak, while with him,) sent a message to him to excuse her absence, and to beg his pardon, if ever she had offended him in all her life, he replied, Alas!

" poor woman! she beg *my* pardon! I beg hers with all my heart." Letter ccclxxxii. p. 337. vol. III. of Ellis's *Original Letters*, published since the first edition of these notes on Burnet's History.)

^k (Higgon's, in his Remarks on this History, p. 280, relates that the host, which was given to the king at this time, was fetched from the chapel at Somerset house.)

^l ("The king commanded all to retire out of the room, telling them, that he had something to communicate

1685. door was double locked. The company was kept
 out half an hour: only lord Feversham opened the
 door once, and called for a glass of water. Cardinal
 Howard told me at Rome, that Hudleston, accord-
 ing to the relation that he sent thither, made the
 king go through some acts of contrition, and, after
 such a confession as he could then make, he gave
 him absolution and the other sacraments. The
 hostie stuck in his throat: and that was the occa-
 sion of calling for a glass of water. He also gave
 him extreme unction. All must have been per-
 formed very superficially, since it was so soon ended.
 But the king seemed to be at great ease upon it.
 It was given out, that the king said to Hudleston,
 that he had saved him twice, first his body, and now
 his soul; and that he asked him, if he would have
 him declare himself to be of their church. But it
 seems he was prepared for this, and so diverted the
 king from it; and said, he took it upon him to sa-
 tisfy the world in that particular. But though by
 the principles of all religions whatsoever, he ought
 608 to have obliged him to make open profession of his
 religion, yet, it seems, the consequences of that were
 apprehended; for without doubt that poor priest
 acted by the directions that were given him. The
 company was suffered to come in. And the king
 went through the agonies of death with a calm and
 a constancy, that amazed all who were about him,
 and knew how he had lived. This made some con-
 clude, that he had made a will, and that his quiet

“to his brother.” Aprice a Ro-
 mish priest’s letter, published
 in Harris’s *Life of Charles II.*
 vol. II. p. 391. Macpherson
 says, from a MS. in his posses-

sion, that the persons present
 besides the duke were the earl
 of Bath, and Trevannion a cap-
 tain in the guards. *History of*
Great Britain, vol. I. p. 421.)

was the effect of that. Ken applied himself much to the awaking the king's conscience. He spoke with a great elevation, both of thought and expression, like a man inspired, as those who were present told me. He resumed the matter often, and pronounced many short ejaculations and prayers, which affected all that were present, except him that was the most concerned, who seemed to take no notice of him, and made no answers to him. He pressed the king six or seven times to receive the sacrament. But the king always declined it, saying he was very weak. A table with the elements upon it ready to be consecrated was brought into the room; which occasioned a report to be then spread about, that he had received it. Ken pressed him to declare that he desired it, and that he died in the communion of the church of England. To that he answered nothing. Ken asked him if he desired absolution of his sins. It seems the king, if he then thought any thing at all, thought that would do him no hurt. So Ken pronounced it over him: for which he was blamed, since the king expressed no sense or sorrow for his past life, nor any purpose of amendment. It was thought to be a prostitution of the peace of the church, to give it to one, who, after a life led as the king's had been, seemed to harden himself against every thing that could be said to him ^m. Ken was also censured for another piece of

^m (The account given by king James is this: "On the fourth day he grew so much worse, that all those hopes vanished, and the doctors declared they absolutely despaired of his life, which made it high time to think of preparing for the

" other world; accordingly two bishops came to do their function, who, reading the prayers appointed in the common prayer book on that occasion, when they came to the place where usually they exhort the sick person to

1685. indecency : he presented the duke of Richmond, lady Portsmouth's son, to be blessed by the kingⁿ. Upon this, some that were in the room cried out, the king was their common father. And upon that all kneeled down for his blessing, which he gave them. The king suffered much inwardly, and said, he was burnt up within ; of which he complained often, but with great decency. He said once, he hoped he should climb up to heaven's gates ; which was the only word savouring of religion that he was heard to speak °.

He gathered all his strength to speak his last words to the duke, to which every one hearkened with great attention. He expressed his kindness to

“ make a confession of his sins,
 “ the bishop of Bath and Wells,
 “ who was one of them, adver-
 “ tised him, it was not of obli-
 “ gation ; so after a short ex-
 “ hortation asked him if he
 “ was sorry for his sins ? which
 “ the king saying he was, the
 “ bishop pronounced absolu-
 “ tion ; and then asked him if
 “ he pleased to receive the sa-
 “ crament ? To which he made
 “ no reply ; and being pressed
 “ by the bishop several times,
 “ gave no other answer than
 “ that it was time enough, or
 “ that he would think of it.”
 He goes on to say, that Charles after this consented that a priest should be sent for. See the Life of King James II. vol. I. p. 746.)

ⁿ (“ When the duchess of Portsmouth herself came into the room, the bishop prevailed with his majesty to have her removed, and took

“ that occasion of representing
 “ the injury and injustice done
 “ to his queen so effectually,
 “ that the king was induced to
 “ send for her, and asking par-
 “ don, had the satisfaction of
 “ her forgiveness before he
 “ died.” Account of bishop Ken's Life by a relation, page 12.)

° (From king James's account before cited, it appears that he shewed great contrition for the sins of his past life, and *particularly for having deferred his conversion so long*, before he received the sacrament from Hudleston's hands, after which the company was called in. *Particularly for that he had deferred his reconciliation so long*, are father Hudleston's words, in his *Account* published in the year 1688, and inserted in Ralph's History of England, vol. I. p. 834.)

him, and that he now delivered all over to him with 1685.
 great joy. He recommended lady Portsmouth over 609
 and over again to him. He said, he had always
 loved her, and he loved her now to the last; and
 besought the duke, in as melting words as he could
 fetch out, to be very kind to her and to her son.
 He recommended his other children to him: and
 concluded, Let not poor Nelly starve; that was Mrs.
 Gwyn. But he said nothing of the queen, nor any
 one word of his people, or of his servants: nor did
 he speak one word of religion, or concerning the
 payment of his debts, though he left behind him
 about 90,000 guineas, which he had gathered, either
 out of the privy purse, or out of the money which
 was sent him from France, or by other methods, and
 which he had kept so secretly, that no person what-
 soever knew any thing of it ^P.

He continued in the agony till Friday at eleven His death.
 o'clock, being the sixth of February 168 $\frac{2}{3}$; and then
 died in the fifty-fourth year of his age, after he had
 reigned, if we reckon from his father's death, thirty-
 six years, and eight days; or, if we reckon from his
 restoration, twenty-four years, eight months, and
 nine days. There were many very apparent suspi-
 cions of his being poisoned: for though the first ac-
 cess looked like an apoplexy, yet it was plain in the
 progress of it that it was no apoplexy. When his
 body was opened, the physicians who viewed it
 were, as it were, led by those who might suspect
 the truth to look upon the parts that were certainly
 sound. But both Lower and Needham, two famous

p I heard Will. Chiffens, who Winchester, which he was very
 was his closet keeper, say that fond of at that time. D.
 it was kept for his buildings at

*vide Bp. Patrick
 autobiography
 p 161.*

1685. physicians, told me, they plainly discerned two or
 ————— three blue spots on the outside of the stomach. Needham called twice to have it opened: but the surgeons seemed not to hear him. And when he moved it the second time, he, as he told me, heard Lower say to one that stood next him, Needham will undo us, calling thus to have the stomach opened, for he may see they will not do it. They were diverted to look to somewhat else: and when they returned to look upon the stomach, it was carried away: so that it was never viewed. Le Fevre, a French physician, told me, he saw a blackness in the shoulder: upon which he made an incision, and saw it was all mortified. Short, another physician, who was a papist, but after a form of his own, did very much suspect foul dealing^q: and he had talked more freely of it, than any of the protestants durst do at that time. But he was not long after taken suddenly ill, upon a large draught of wormwood wine which he had drunk in the house of a popish patient, that lived near the tower, who had sent for him, of which he died. And, as he said to Lower, Millington, and some other physicians, he believed that he himself was poisoned for his having spoken
 610 so freely of the king's death^r. The king's body was indecently neglected. Some parts of his inwards, and some pieces of the fat, were left in the water in which they were washed: all which were

^q One physician told me this from Short himself. S.

^r (This account is confirmed by Sheffield duke of Buckinghamshire, in his Character of Charles II. where he observes, that the most knowing and most deserving of all his physi-

cians did not only believe him poisoned, but thought himself so too not long after, for having declared his opinion a little too boldly. Duke of Buckingham's Works, vol. II. p. 65. See also Welwood's Memoirs, p. 145.)

so carelessly looked after, that the water being 1685.
poured out at a scullery hole that went to a drain,
in the mouth of which a grate lay, these were seen
lying on the grate many days after. His funeral
was very mean. He did not lie in state: no mourn-
ings were given: and the expence of it was not
equal to what an ordinary nobleman's funeral will
rise to. Many upon this said, that he deserved bet-
ter from his brother, than to be thus ungratefully
treated in ceremonies that are public, and that make
an impression on those who see them, and who will
make severe observations and inferences upon such
omissions. But since I have mentioned the suspi-
cions of poison as the cause of his death, I must
add, that I never heard any lay those suspicions on
his brother. But his dying so critically, as it were
in the minute in which he seemed to begin a turn
of affairs, made it to be generally the more believed,
and that the papists had done it, either by the
means of some of lady Portsmouth's servants, or, as
some fancied, by poisoned snuff; for so many of the
small veins of the brain were burst, that the brain
was in great disorder, and no judgment could be
made concerning it. To this I shall add a very sur-
prising story^s, that I had in November 1709, from
Mr. Henly of Hampshire. He told me, that when
the duchess of Portsmouth came over to England in
the year 1699, he heard, that she had talked as if
king Charles had been poisoned; which he desiring
to have from her own mouth, she gave him this ac-
count of it. She was always pressing the king to
make both himself and his people easy, and to come

^s N. B. This is added to the original in a loose sheet. (Note
by the original editors.)

1685. to a full agreement with his parliament: and he was come to a final resolution of sending away his brother, and of calling a parliament; which was to be executed the next day after he fell into that fit of which he died. She was put upon the secret, and spoke of it to no person alive, but to her confessor: but the confessor, she believed, told it to some, who, seeing what was to follow, took that wicked course to prevent it. Having this from so worthy^t a per-

^t This worthy person was a professed atheist, a zealous republican, and a most obsequious follower of the earl of Sunderland in all his notions as well as vices. The character of the lady was well known, who might think it proper to publish something she thought would be agreeable in order to obtain the ends she came over for, which at that time was understood not to be much for the advantage of the nation: therefore was soon despatched (sent away) by the procurement of her old friend the earl of Sunderland. D. I wonder Mr. Henly never told me this story. S. Father of the present (1759) lord keeper; he was a person of considerable fashion and fortune, of great parts and genius, and lived much with the best men of that sort. He was deemed a man of honour, and very firm to his principles and party. Garth dedicated his famous poem called the Dispensary to him, and it was he who moved in the house of commons for the address to the queen to promote Hoadly (now bishop

of Winton) to some dignity in the church, on account of his writings in defence of liberty and the protestant religion. It was done at the time of the impeachment of Sacheverel. O. I have heard the late duke of Richmond say, that his grandmother the duchess of Portsmouth has said the same thing to him, but there seem (either *seems* or *seemed*) no foundation for it. H. (Earl of Hardwicke.) (Mr. Fox, in his History of the reign of James the Second, has the following passage: "His death was by many supposed to have been the effect of poison; but although there is reason to believe that this suspicion was harboured by persons very near to him, and among others by the duchess of Portsmouth, it appears upon the whole to rest upon very slender foundations." p. 67. where this note is subjoined by lord Holland his nephew; "Mr. Fox had this report from the family of his mother, great-granddaughter to the duchess of Portsmouth." That a suspicion therefore was actually ex-

son, as I have set it down without adding the least 1685.
 circumstance to it, I thought it too important not
 to be mentioned in this history. It discovers both
 the knavery of confessors, and the practices of pa-

pressed by this lady, is confirmed by the testimony of Mr. Fox, and now by the earl of Hardwicke, in his note on the bishop's work; and the contrary notion of her not having done so, is by no means established by the following extract from lord Lansdown's works, brought forward by Mr. Rose in the Appendix to his Observations on Mr. Fox's historical work, p. lviii. "His lordship
 " (bishop Burnet) had it from
 " Mr. Henley, who had it from
 " the duchess of Portsmouth,
 " that king Charles the second
 " was poisoned. It was my
 " fortune to be residing in
 " Paris when this history was
 " published. Such a parti-
 " cular was too remarkable
 " not to raise my curiosity:
 " the duchess was then at
 " Paris: I employed a person
 " who had the honour to be in-
 " timiate with her grace, to in-
 " quire from her own mouth
 " into the truth of this pas-
 " sage: her reply was this:
 " 'That she recollected no ac-
 " quaintance with Mr. Henley,
 " but she remembered well
 " doctor Burnet and his cha-
 " racter:'" viz. that the king
 and the duke, and the whole
 court, had no opinion of his
 veracity: where it is to be re-
 marked, that the duchess does
 not declare her own opinion on

the subject in her answer to
 the inquiry. Besides, as it is
 well observed by serjeant Hey-
 wood, in his Vindication of
 Mr. Fox, Appendix, p. 1. the
 temper of mind in which the
 duchess received this inquiry,
 naturally leads to a suspicion,
 that she was displeased at Mr.
 Henley for having betrayed her
 confidence, especially as it is
 probable, that she was satisfied
 in her own mind of the truth
 of the fact she had been repre-
 sented to have related. See
 also Harris's Life of Charles II.
 vol. II. p. 380. Mr. Ellis, in
 the fourth volume of his *Second
 Series of Original Letters*, has
 inserted a report, drawn up in
 Latin, of the king's last illness,
 which he introduces with this
 preface: "Of the illness which
 " immediately preceded the
 " death of Charles the second,
 " a very full and curious detail
 " in Latin is preserved in the
 " Library of the Society of
 " Antiquaries, together with
 " copies of the prescriptions
 " administered (two of them
 " signed by no fewer than four-
 " teen physicians,) and an ac-
 " count of the appearance of
 " his majesty's body when
 " opened; the whole com-
 " pletely removing the suspi-
 " cion, that the king was taken
 " off by poison." P. 74.)

1685. pists, so evidently, that there is no need of making any further reflections on it.

611 Thus lived and died king Charles the second. He was the greatest instance in history of the various revolutions of which any one man seemed capable. He was bred up, the first twelve years of his life, with the splendour that became the heir of so great a crown. After that he passed through eighteen years in great inequalities, unhappy in the war, in the loss of his father, and of the crown of England. Scotland did not only receive him, though upon terms hard of digestion, but made an attempt upon England for him, though a feeble one. He lost the battle of Worcester with too much indifference: and then he shewed more care of his person than became one who had so much at stake^u. He wandered about England for ten weeks after that, hiding from place to place. But, under all the apprehensions he had then upon him, he shewed a temper so careless, and so much turned to levity, that he was then diverting himself with little household sports, in as unconcerned a manner as if he had

His character.

^u (“ If he means too much care of his person in the action, the reflection is false, and if in the flight, stupid. The behaviour of the young king, on this occasion, was so distinguished, as to extort the praise of an enemy not over generous. He led on his foot in person, and made no small impression on Cromwell’s firmest battalions. On this occasion he had no less than two, if not three horses killed under him. *Higgon’s*

Remarks on this Hist. p. 285.) So generally known was the king’s courageous conduct at the battle of Worcester, that bishop Fell, in a tract published by him before the restoration, calls him “ a prince of eminent personal valour, which several of the army itself are witnesses of, especially at Worcester and Marston dike.” *The Interest of England stated*, reprinted among Masseres’s *Select Tracts*, page 688.)

made no loss, and had been in no danger at all^x. He got at last out of England. But he had been obliged to so many, who had been faithful to him, and careful of him, that he seemed afterwards to resolve to make an equal return to them all: and finding it not easy to reward them all as they deserved, he forgot them all alike. Most princes seem to have this pretty deep in them; and to think that they ought never to remember past services, but that their acceptance of them is a full reward. He, of all in our age, exerted this piece of prerogative in the amplest manner: for he never seemed to charge his memory, or to trouble his thoughts, with the sense of any of the services that had been done him. 1685.

While he was abroad at Paris, Colen, or Brussels, he never seemed to lay any thing to heart. He pursued all his diversions and irregular pleasures in a free career; and seemed to be as serene under the loss of a crown, as the greatest philosopher could

^x This might admit a more favourable turn. S. Where does this appear? O. How shewing more care of his person than became him, is to be reconciled to a thoughtless unconcernedness in the utmost danger, I am at a loss to find out; but there are so many contradictions and inconsistencies in this elaborate malicious character of king Charles the second, that whoever reads it, will soon find there is more of a disappointed churchman's revenge, than truth, in the whole composition. That the king had many faults and infirmities, is true; and who is without? But that he had many

great perfections and good qualities, is as true. D. (Compare a note of lord Dartmouth's above at p. 47, folio edit. mentioning the unconcern shewn by the king's father and brother on signal events in their lives. And see a good sketch of this king's personal character by Evelyn in his *Memoirs*, vol. I. p. 545. Sir Patrick Hume, one of the shrewdest and most determined of the Scottish malecontents, speaks of the king's "policy and cunning, wherein he exceeded all about him admitted to his service and counsels." *Narrative of the Earl of Argyle's Expedition*, p. 4.)

1685. have been. Nor did he willingly hearken to any of those projects, with which he often complained that his chancellor persecuted him. That in which he seemed most concerned was, to find money for supporting his expense. And it was often said, that, if Cromwell would have compounded the matter, and have given him a good round pension, that he might have been induced to resign his title to him. During his exile, he delivered himself so entirely to his pleasures, that he became incapable of application. He spent little of his time in reading or study, and yet less in thinking. And, in the state his affairs were then in, he accustomed himself to say to every
612 person, and upon all occasions, that which he thought would please most : so that words or promises went very easily from him. And he had so ill an opinion of mankind, that he thought the great art of living and governing was, to manage all things and all persons with a depth of craft and dissimulation. And in that few men in the world could put on the appearances of sincerity better than he could : under which so much artifice was usually hid, that in conclusion he could deceive none, for all were become mistrustful of him. He had great vices, but scarce any virtues to correct them : he had in him some vices that were less hurtful, which corrected his more hurtful ones. He was during the active part of life given up to sloth and lewdness to such a degree, that he hated business, and could not bear the engaging in any thing that gave him much trouble, or put him under any constraint. And, though he desired to become absolute, and to overturn both our religion and our laws, yet he would neither run the risk, nor give himself the trouble, which so great a

design required. He had an appearance of gentleness in his outward deportment: but he seemed to have no bowels nor tenderness in his nature: and in the end of his life he became cruel. He was apt to forgive all crimes, even blood itself: yet he never forgave any thing that was done against himself, after his first and general act of indemnity, which was to be reckoned as done rather upon maxims of state than inclinations of mercy. He delivered himself up to a most enormous course of vice, without any sort of restraint, even from the consideration of the nearest relations^y: the most studied extravagancies that way seemed, to the very last, to be much delighted in and pursued by him. He had the art of making all people grow fond of him at first, by a softness in his whole way of conversation, as he was certainly the best bred man of the age. But when it appeared how little could be built on his promise, they were cured of the fondness that he was apt to raise in them. When he saw young men of quality, who had something more than ordinary in them, he drew them about him, and set himself to corrupt them both in religion and morality; in which he proved so unhappily successful, that he left England much changed at his death from what he had found it at his restoration. He loved to talk over all the stories of his life to every new man that came about him. His stay in Scotland, and the share he had in the war of Paris, in carrying messages from the one side to the other, were his common topics. He went

1685.

^y Alluding to what was said of some gallantries, when he met his sister, the duchess of Orleans, at Dover, p. 301. O. (But see a note on that place.)

1685. over these in a very graceful manner ; but so often,

613 and so copiously, that all those who had been long
accustomed to them grew weary of them : and when
he entered on those stories they usually withdrew :
so that he often began them in a full audience, and
before he had done, there were not above four or five
left about him : which drew a severe jest from Wil-
mot, earl of Rochester. He said, he wondered to
see a man have so good a memory as to repeat the
same story without losing the least circumstance,
and yet not remember that he had told it to the
same persons the very day before. This made him
fond of strangers ; for they hearkened to all his often
repeated stories, and went away as in a rapture at
such an uncommon condescension in a king.

His person and temper, his vices as well as his
fortunes, resemble the character that we have given
us of Tiberius so much, that it were easy to draw
the parallel between them. Tiberius's banishment,
and his coming afterwards to reign, makes the com-
parison in that respect come pretty near. His hat-
ing of business, and his love of pleasures ; his raising
of favourites, and trusting them entirely ; and his
pulling them down, and hating them excessively ;
his art of covering deep designs, particularly of re-
venge, with an appearance of softness, brings them
so near a likeness, that I did not wonder much to
observe the resemblance of their face and person^z.
At Rome I saw one of the last statues made for
Tiberius, after he had lost his teeth. But, bating
the alteration which that made, it was so like king
Charles, that prince Borghese, and signior Dominico,

^z Malicious, and in many circumstances false. S.

to whom it belonged, did agree with me in thinking that it looked like a statue made for him^a. 1685.

Few things ever went near his heart. The duke of Gloucester's death seemed to touch him much. But those who knew him best thought it was, because he had lost him by whom only he could have balanced the surviving brother, whom he hated, and yet embroiled all his affairs to preserve the succession to him.

His ill conduct in the first Dutch war, and those terrible calamities of the plague and fire of London, with that loss and reproach which he suffered by the insult at Chatham, made all people conclude there was a curse upon his government. His throwing the public hatred at that time upon lord Clarendon was both unjust and ungrateful. And when his people had brought him out of all his difficulties upon his entering into the triple alliance, his selling that to France, and his entering on the second Dutch war with as little colour as he had for the first; his beginning it with the attempt on the Dutch Smyrna fleet; the shutting up the exchequer; 614 and his declaration for toleration, which was a step for the introduction of popery; make such a chain of black actions, flowing from blacker designs, that

^a (Sheffield duke of Bucks, who was brought up in his court, says of the king, that he was an illustrious exception to all the common rules of physiognomy; for with a most saturnine harsh sort of countenance, he was both of a merry and merciful disposition. Works, vol. II. p. 64. See also Welwood's Memoirs, p. 149. And although Mr. Fox thinks the

bishop perfectly justifiable in refusing to Charles the praise of clemency and forgiveness, yet he supposes, that the propriety of Burnet's comparison between him and Tiberius was never felt by any one but its author. History of the early Part of the Reign of James II. p. 68, 69. See also Hume, at the conclusion of the Reign of Charles II.)

1685. it amazed those who had known all this, to see with what impudent strains of flattery addresses were penned during his life, and yet more grossly after his death. His contributing so much to the raising the greatness of France, chiefly at sea, was such an error, that it could not flow from want of thought, or of true sense. Rouvigny told me, he desired that all the methods the French took in the increase and conduct of their naval force might be sent him. And, he said, he seemed to study them with concern and zeal. He shewed what errors they committed, and how they ought to be corrected, as if he had been a viceroy to France, rather than a king that ought to have watched over and prevented the progress they made, as the greatest of all the mischiefs that could happen to him or to his people. They that judged the most favourably of this, thought it was done out of revenge to the Dutch, that, with the assistance of so great a fleet as France could join to his own, he might be able to destroy them. But others put a worse construction on it; and thought, that seeing he could not quite master or deceive his subjects by his own strength and management, he was willing to help forward the greatness of the French at sea, that by their assistance he might more certainly subdue his own people; according to what was generally believed to have fallen from lord Clifford, that, if the king must be in a dependance, it was better to pay it to a great and generous king, than to five hundred of his own insolent subjects.

No part of his character looked wickeder, as well as meaner, than that he, all the while that he was professing to be of the church of England, express-

ing both zeal and affection to it, was yet secretly 1685.
reconciled to the church of Rome: thus, mocking
God and deceiving the world with so gross a preva-
rication. And his not having the honesty or cou-
rage to own it at the last: his not shewing any sign
of the least remorse for his ill led life, or any ten-
derness either for his subjects in general, or for the
queen and his servants: and his recommending only
his mistresses and their children to his brother's
care, would have been a strange conclusion to any
other's life, but was well enough suited to all the
other parts of his.

The two papers found in his strong box concern-
ing religion, and afterwards published by his bro-
ther, looked like study and reasoning. Tennison
told me, he saw the original in Pepys's hand, to
whom king James trusted them for some time^b.
They were interlined in several places. And the 615
interlinings seemed to be writ in a hand different
from that in which the papers were writ. But he
was not so well acquainted with the king's hand, as
to make any judgment in the matter, whether they
were writ by him or not. All that knew him, when
they read them, did without any sort of doubting
conclude, that he never composed them: for he
never read the Scriptures, nor laid things together,
further than to turn them to a jest, or for some
lively expression. These papers were probably writ
either by lord Bristol, or by lord Aubigny, who
knew the secret of his religion, and gave him those
papers, as abstracts of some discourses they had

^b ("When his majesty had " papers, attested at the bot-
" shewn Mr. Pepys these ori- " tom in four or five lines,
" ginals, he was pleased to lend " under his own hand." Eve-
" him the *copies* of those two lyn's *Memoirs*, vol. I. p. 575.)

1685. with him on those heads, to keep him fixed to them. And it is very probable that they, apprehending their danger if any such papers had been found about him writ in their hand, might prevail with him to copy them out himself, though his laziness that way made it certainly no easy thing to bring him to give himself so much trouble. He had talked over a great part of them to my self: so that, as soon as I saw them, I remembered his expressions, and perceived that he had made himself master of the argument, as far as those papers could carry him. But the publishing them shewed a want of judgment, or of regard to his memory, in those who did it: for the greatest kindness that could be shewn to his memory would have been, to let both his papers and himself be forgotten^c.

Which I should certainly have done, if I had not thought that the laying open of what I knew con-

^c ("The papers found by his brother in his strong box, and which that misguided prince published soon after, furnish no evidence of a change in his faith. They were not of his handwriting. They were known to have been delivered to him at the instance of some Roman catholics by a lord Blessington, who, as an object of ridicule, had access to his person from his being the author of a foolish play. He had produced the papers frequently to some of his courtiers, to excite laughter, by exposing with poignant satire and wit the absurd positions which they contained. The duke of York was no stranger to this cir-

cumstance, yet he conveyed to the world the papers, as containing the sentiments of the king upon the subject of religion. He had certainly expressed frequently to the duke his predilection for the Romish faith." *Macpherson in his Hist. of Great Britain*, vol. I. p. 422. citing MS. Anecdotes in his possession. The fact, that Charles had declared to his brother not long before his decease his preference of the Roman catholic religion, grounded on political reasons, is confirmed by Evelyn in his *Memoirs*, vol. I. p. 574. where however it appears, that the papers, blotted and interlined, were written in the king's own hand.)

cerning him and his affairs might be of some use to posterity. And therefore, how ungrateful soever this labour has proved to my self, and how unacceptable soever it may be to some, who are either obliged to remember him gratefully, or by the engagement of parties and interests are under other biasses, yet I have gone through all that I knew relating to his life and reign with that regard to truth, and what I think may be instructive to mankind, which became an impartial writer of history, and one who believes that he must give an account to God of what he writes, as well as of what he says and does ^d.

^d He was certainly a very bad prince, but not to the degree described in this character, which is poorly drawn, and mingled with malice very unworthy an historian, and the style abominable, as in the whole history, and the observations trite and vulgar. S.

END OF KING CHARLES THE SECOND'S REIGN.

A

TABLE OF THE CONTENTS

OF THE FOREGOING

VOLUME^a.

BOOK III.

*Of the rest of king Charles II's reign, from the year 1673
to the year 1685, in which he died.*

| | |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1673. | The duke laid down all his |
| GREAT jealousies of the | commissions 352 |
| king 344 | The duke treats for a second |
| Schomberg brought to com- | marriage ibid. |
| mand the army 345 | A treaty opened at Cologne 353 |
| The court was much divided 346 | Lord Sunderland's character |
| A session of parliament ibid. | 354 |
| The declaration was voted il- | The treaty broke off ibid. |
| legal ibid. | The affairs of Scotland ibid. |
| A bill for a new test 347 | Lauderdale's design 355 |
| The prudence of the dissenters | The king liked my memoirs 356 |
| ibid. | And shewed me great favour |
| Debates in the house of lords | ibid. |
| 348 | My conversation with the duke |
| The variety of opinions in the | 357 |
| king's council 349 | I carried Dr. Stillingfleet to |
| The French advise the king to | him 358 |
| yield to the parliament ibid. | The duke's marriage opposed |
| The king went into that sud- | by the commons 360 |
| denly ibid. | A parliament in Scotland 362 |
| Clifford disgraced 350 | A party formed against Lauder- |
| Osborn made lord treasurer | dale 363 |
| ibid. | He offers to redress grievances |
| A great supply was given 351 | in council 364 |

^a (The pages referred to are those of the folio edition, which are
inserted in the margin of the present.)

| | | |
|--|---|--|
| 1674. | The characters of some parliament men | 387 |
| A dispute raised about the lords of the articles | 364 | 1676. |
| The proceedings in the parliament of England | ibid. | A long interval between the sessions of parliament |
| Finch's character | 365 | An account of some passages of Lockhart's courage in France |
| A peace concluded with the States | 366 | Management in France |
| The king became the mediator of the peace | 367 | The character of some bishops |
| The duchess's character | 368 | 392 |
| Coleman's character | ibid. | The projects of the papists |
| The affairs of Scotland | 369 | Coleman's intrigues |
| The parliament was prorogued | ibid. | A conference between Coleman and some divines |
| Dalrimple's character | ibid. | I undertook to write the history of our reformation |
| The clergy was much provoked | ibid. | The earl of Essex's character |
| A great distraction in Scotland | 370 | ibid. |
| Lauderdale's proceedings there | 371 | His employment in Denmark |
| I was disgraced | ibid. | 397 |
| The ministers turn to the church party | 373 | And his government of Ireland |
| Correspondence with Holland discovered | 374 | ibid. |
| Jealousies of the prince of Orange | 375 | The affairs of Scotland |
| Drummond was ordered to prison | ibid. | 399 |
| The battle of Seneff | 376 | 1677. |
| Arlington went to Holland | 377 | A question raised in England about the legality of a prorogation |
| Temple sent ambassador to Holland | ibid. | 401 |
| 1675. | The lords that moved it sent to the tower | 402 |
| Affairs in England | 378 | Proceedings in parliament |
| I was examined by the house of commons | 379 | Affairs in Flanders |
| Sir Harbottle Grimstone's character | 380 | ibid. |
| Danby attacked, but in vain | 382 | The French king declined a battle when offered by the prince of Orange |
| Seimour's character | ibid. | 404 |
| Debates concerning a test | 383 | Cambray and St. Omer taken |
| A dispute about appeals and privileges | 385 | 406 |
| The session broke upon it | ibid. | The house of commons pressed the king to engage in the war |
| A session of parliament | 386 | ibid. |
| | | Danby declared against France |
| | | 407 |
| | | The prince of Orange came into England |
| | | 408 |
| | | He married the duke's daughter |
| | | 410 |
| | | 1678. |
| | | Supplies given towards the war |
| | | 412 |

| | | | |
|---|-------|--|-------|
| The French take Ghent | 412 | The trial of F. Ireland and some others | 443 |
| The affairs of Scotland | ibid. | Dugdale's evidence | 444 |
| Mitchell's trial | 413 | Prance discovers Godfrey's murder | 445 |
| And condemnation | 415 | Some condemned for it, who died denying it | 446 |
| The administration there grew very violent and illegal | 417 | Scroggs was then lord chief justice | 448 |
| An army of Highlanders sent to the west upon free quar- ter | 418 | Jennison's evidence | ibid. |
| Many of the nobility came up to complain to the king | 419 | Practices with the witnesses discovered | 449 |
| But the king would not see them | ibid. | Reflections upon the whole evi- dence | 451 |
| A convention of estates gives money, and justifies the ad- ministration | 421 | 1679. | |
| Affairs in England | ibid. | A new parliament | ibid. |
| The house of commons grew jealous of the court | ibid. | The duke sent beyond sea | 452 |
| Affairs abroad | 422 | Danby pardoned by the king, but prosecuted by the house of commons | 453 |
| The popish plot | 424 | A new council | 454 |
| Oates's character | ibid. | Debates concerning the exclu- sion | 455 |
| His discovery | 426 | Arguments used for and against the exclusion | 457 |
| Coleman and his papers seized | ibid. | Danby's prosecution | 460 |
| Coleman's letters confirm it | 427 | A great heat raised against the clergy | 461 |
| Godfrey is murdered | 428 | The occasions that fomented that heat | ibid. |
| His body was found | 429 | Arguments for and against the bishops voting in the pre- liminaries, in trials of trea- son | 462 |
| Oates made a new discovery | 430 | Stillingfleet wrote on this point | 463 |
| Bedlow's evidence | 431 | The trial of five Jesuits | 464 |
| Other proofs that seemed to support the discovery | 432 | Langhorn's trial | 465 |
| Carstairs's practices | 433 | And death | 466 |
| Staley's trial | ibid. | Wakeman's trial | 467 |
| The queen was charged as in the plot | 435 | He was acquitted | 468 |
| A law passed for the test to be taken by both houses | ibid. | Debates about dissolving the parliament | ibid. |
| With a proviso for the duke | 436 | The affairs of Scotland | 469 |
| Coleman's trial | ibid. | The archbishop of St. Andrew's is murdered | 470 |
| And execution | 437 | A rebellion in Scotland | 471 |
| The king's thoughts of this whole matter | ibid. | Monmouth sent down to sup- press it | 472 |
| Danby's letters to Mountague are brought out | 439 | | |
| And he was impeached of high treason | 441 | | |
| The parliament was prorogued | 442 | | |

| | | | |
|--|-------|---|-------|
| They were soon broken | 473 | parts of England | 500 |
| The king taken ill, and the duke comes to court | 474 | Fitzharris's trial | 501 |
| The many false stories spread to raise jealousy | ibid. | Plunket, an Irish bishop, condemned and executed | 502 |
| A pretended plot discovered, called the meal-tub plot | 475 | Practices on Fitzharris at his death | 504 |
| Great jealousies of the king | 476 | A protestant plot | ibid. |
| Monmouth's disgrace | 477 | Colledge condemned, and died upon it | 505 |
| Petitions for a parliament | ibid. | Shaftsbury sent to the tower | 506 |
| Great discontents on all sides | 478 | Practices upon witnesses | ibid. |
| Godolphin's character | ibid. | I was then offered preferment | 507 |
| 1680. | | Halifax carried me to the king | 508 |
| An alliance projected against France | 479 | Shaftsbury was acquitted by the grand jury | ibid. |
| The election of the sheriffs of London | ibid. | 1682. | |
| The bill of exclusion taken up again | 481 | Turbervill's death | 509 |
| Passed by the commons | 482 | The affairs of Scotland | 510 |
| But rejected by the lords | ibid. | A parliament in Scotland | 512 |
| The house of commons proceeded against some with severity | 484 | Several accusations of perjury stifled by the duke | 514 |
| An association proposed | 485 | A test enacted in parliament | 515 |
| Expedients offered in the house of lords | 486 | Objections made to the test | 518 |
| Duchess of Portsmouth's conduct in this matter little understood | ibid. | Many turned out for not taking it | 519 |
| Stafford's trial | 488 | Argile's explanation | ibid. |
| He was condemned | 492 | He was committed upon it | 520 |
| He sent for me, and employed me to do him service | ibid. | Argile is tried and condemned | 521 |
| His execution | 494 | He made his escape | 522 |
| 1681. | | The duke comes to court | 523 |
| Motions in favour of the non-conformists | ibid. | A new ministry in Scotland | ibid. |
| The parliament was dissolved | 495 | They proceeded with great severity | 524 |
| A new expedient of a prince regent | 496 | Affairs in England | 527 |
| Fitzharris was taken | 497 | All charters of towns were surrendered to the king | ibid. |
| The parliament of Oxford was soon dissolved | 498 | The dispute concerning the sheriffs of London | 528 |
| A great change in affairs | 499 | Carried by the court | 530 |
| The king's declaration | 500 | Changes in the ministry, and quarrels among them | 531 |
| Addresses to the king from all | | The arguments for and against the charter of London | 533 |

| | |
|---------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Judgment given in the matter | Suspicious of Essex's being |
| 535 | murdered 569 |
| Some other severe judgments | Sidney's trial 570 |
| ibid. | His execution and last paper 573 |
| 1683. | Monmouth came in, and was |
| All people possessed with great | pardoned ibid. |
| fears 536 | But soon after disgraced 575 |
| Monmouth and Russel at Shep- | Hambden's trial 576 |
| herd's 537 | Halloway's execution ibid. |
| Monmouth and some others | Armstrong's death 577 |
| meet often together 538 | Great severity in Scotland 580 |
| They treat with some of the | A breach in the ministry there |
| Scottish nation 539 | 581 |
| Other conspirators meet at the | The duke governed all affairs |
| same time on designs of as- | 582 |
| sassinating the king 542 | The cruelty of the duke, and of |
| A plot is discovered 544 | his ministers, in torturing 583 |
| A forged story laid by Rumsey | Proceedings against Baillie 585 |
| and West ibid. | And his execution 587 |
| Russel and some others were | Leightoun's death 588 |
| put in prison upon it 547 | The promotion of some bishops |
| Monmouth and others escaped | 589 |
| 549 | Danby and the popish lords |
| Howard's confession 551 | bailed 591 |
| The earl of Essex was sent to | Some removes made at court |
| the tower 552 | 592 |
| The lord Russel's trial 553 | The bombarding of Genoa ibid. |
| He was condemned 556 | Tangier abandoned 593 |
| His preparation for death 557 | Affairs beyond sea 594 |
| The trial and execution of Wal- | The hardships the author met |
| cot and others 558 | with 595 |
| Russel's execution 560 | Trials for treason of Roswell |
| Russel's last speech 561 | and Haies 597 |
| Prince George of Denmark | Strange practices, and very un- |
| married the princess Anne | becoming a king 600 |
| 562 | Papists employed in Ireland |
| The siege of Vienna 563 | 601 |
| The author went to the court | Suspicious of the king's de- |
| of France 564 | claring himself a papist 603 |
| Characters of some he knew | 1685. |
| there ibid. | A new scheme of government |
| Affairs in England 567 | 604 |
| Jefferies and other judges pre- | The king's sickness 606 |
| ferred ibid. | He received the sacraments |
| 1684. | from a popish priest 607 |
| The calling a parliament pro- | His death 609 |
| posed, but rejected 568 | His character 611 |

